

# 雪鹰领主

书著

我吃西红柿

我吃  
西红柿



# Lord Xue Ying

## 1. [Lord Xue Ying](#)

1. [Book 3: Chapter 1 – Blood Rain of Dark Ice Spear Technique](#)
2. [Book 3: Chapter 2 – His background?](#)
3. [Book 3: Chapter 3 – Within the Bloodshed Tavern](#)
4. [Book 3: Chapter 4 – Assassins](#)
5. [Book 3: Chapter 5 – The threat](#)
6. [Book 3: Chapter 6 – Break up](#)
7. [Book 3: Chapter 7 – Sneaking In](#)
8. [Book 3: Chapter 8 –Arrival](#)
9. [Book 3: Chapter 9 – A Battle Between Experts](#)
10. [Book 3: Chapter 10 – Stupefied](#)
11. [Book 3: Chapter 11 – The Unforeseen Opportunity](#)
12. [Book 3: Chapter 12 – The Chase](#)
13. [Book 3: Chapter 13 – Battle on the Black-Wind Cliff](#)
14. [Book 3: Chapter 14 – Big Contribution](#)
15. [Book 3: Chapter 15 – The Longing of a Transcendent Being](#)
16. [Book 3: Chapter 16 – Falling into the abyss](#)
17. [Book 4: Chapter 1 – Landing](#)
18. [Book 4: Chapter 2 – A Night Later](#)
19. [Book 4: Chapter 3 – Scars of Battle](#)
20. [Book 4: Chapter 4 – Refiner Organism](#)
21. [Book 4: Chapter 5 – Caught](#)
22. [Book 4: Chapter 6 – Transcendent Expert, Chi Qiu Bai](#)
23. [Book 4: Chapter 7 – Father, Mother](#)
24. [Book 4: Chapter 8 – Please Forgive Me Senior](#)
25. [Book 4: Chapter 9 – Lei Zhan, the Elder of the Sea Deity Palace](#)
26. [Book 4: Chapter 10 – The Only Way Out](#)
27. [Book 4: Chapter 11 – Six Years...](#)
28. [Book 4: Chapter 12 – Water of Myriad Existences](#)
29. [Book 4: Chapter 13 – Transcendent Being](#)
30. [Book 4: Chapter 14 – I’m home](#)

31. [Book 4: Chapter 15 – Reunion](#)
32. [Book 4: Chapter 16 – Passing on the Message](#)
33. [Book 4: Chapter 17 – Meeting between Mother and Son](#)
34. [Book 4: Chapter 18 – Who Exactly is He?](#)
35. [Book 4: Chapter 18 – Fear and Horror!](#)
36. [Book 4: Chapter 20 – The Reign of Terror](#)
37. [Book 4: Chapter 21 – Saint and Demigods](#)
38. [Book 4: Chapter 22 – The Six Great Transcendent Organisations The Saint Experts](#)
39. [Book 4: Chapter 24 – They have come!](#)
40. [Book 4: Chapter 25 – Joining](#)
41. [Book 4: Chapter 26 – Turmoil in Azure River County](#)
42. [Book 4: Chapter 27 – Little Brother’s Decision](#)
43. [Book 4: Chapter 28 – Departure](#)
44. [Book 5: Chapter 1 – Entering the Water Daoist Faction](#)
45. [Book 5: Chapter 2 – Vice Head](#)
46. [Book 5: Chapter 3 – Weapons](#)
47. [Book 5: Chapter 4 – Magic Dragon Force](#)
48. [Book 5: Chapter 5 – Capital of Xia](#)
49. [Book 5: Chapter 6 – Gathering](#)
50. [Book 5: Chapter 7 – Preparing](#)
51. [Book 5: Chapter 8 – Magic Dragon Divine Seal](#)
52. [Book 5: Chapter 9 – Cultivating in secret for half a year](#)
53. [Book 5: Chapter 10 – Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack](#)
54. [Book 5: Chapter 11 – The Hall of Life and Death](#)
55. [Book 5: Chapter 12 – Begin](#)
56. [Book 5: Chapter 13 – Revealing His Techniques!](#)
57. [Book 5: Chapter 14 – Native Transcendent](#)
58. [Book 5: Chapter 15 – A Familiar Opponent.](#)
59. [Book 5: Chapter 16 – Severing Wind: Fifteen Swords!](#)
60. [Book 5: Chapter 17 – A Powerful Opponent](#)
61. [Book 5: Chapter 18 – The Sixth Match of the Battle of Life and Death](#)
62. [Book 5: Chapter 19 – Evaluation](#)
63. [Book 5: Chapter 20 – It Was Merely a Small Surprise](#)

64. [Book 5: Chapter 21 – A Big Surprise Instead!](#)
65. [Book 5: Chapter 22 – Magic Golden Peacock](#)
66. [Book 5: Chapter 23 – True Meaning of Water and Fire?](#)
67. [Book 5: Chapter 24 – A Living Abyss Demon?](#)
68. [Book 5: Chapter 25 – Battle with the Demon](#)
69. [Book 5: Chapter 26 -Boiling](#)
70. [Book 5: Chapter 27 – The Tenth Match](#)
71. [Book 5: Chapter 28 – Everything Has Come to an End](#)
72. [Book 5: Chapter 29 – Decision from the Elder’s Gathering](#)
73. [Book 5: Chapter 30 -The Hundred-Battle Chamber](#)
74. [Book 5: Chapter 31 – Scarlet Cloud Hill](#)
75. [Book 6: Chapter 1 – Disciple Brothers and Sisters](#)
76. [Book 6: Chapter 2 – Ten Years](#)
77. [Book 6: Chapter 3 – Soaring Cloud Peak](#)
78. [Book 6: Chapter 4 – Pointers](#)
79. [Book 6: Chapter 5 – Fury](#)
80. [Book 6: Chapter 6 – Bitterness and Fury](#)
81. [Book 6: Chapter 7 – Take Care of Yourself](#)
82. [Book 6: Chapter 8 – The Voluminous Amounts of Books](#)
83. [Book 6: Chapter 9 – Time](#)
84. [Book 6: Chapter 10 – Dong Bo Xue Ying and Yu Jing Qiu](#)
85. [Book 6: Chapter 11 – True Meaning of Light and Darkness](#)
86. [Book 6: Chapter 12 – Absolutely Different Indeed](#)
87. [Book 6: Chapter 13 – A Clan Protection Deity Weapon](#)

# Book 3: Chapter 1 – Blood Rain of Dark Ice Spear Technique

---

Snowrock Castle, martial fields.

“Whoosh...”

The moment the Flying Snow God Spear was displayed, snow flakes began fluttering everywhere.

Within the surroundings of fluttering snowflakes, a single thread like flash could be vaguely seen! A black-robed Xue Ying was fully concentrating on his spear techniques. At that moment, the spear technique he was utilising was completely different from that of the Drifting Snow of Dark Ice Spear Technique. Drifting Snow would instead have spear-flowers blooming when utilised! Xue Ying’s extent of withdrawal for every movement he executed was relatively small.

The rotational force though was immense! Furthermore, there were large amounts of the energy from the world aggregating at the spearhead.

With a powerful rotational force and a great amount of borrowed world energy, the moment the long spear withdrew a little, a second spear attack would immediately burst out explosively! Within the shadow of the two attacks in a single motion, a thin thread could faintly be seen by the naked eye.

Countless spear shadows, countless threads.

It was as if they were formed by continuously pouring rain.

This was precisely the second stage of the 《Dark Ice Spear Technique》 – Blood Rain!

“With this single move, I’m able to utilise almost the entirety of the energy of the world and reach an incredible realm. Borrowing the strength from nature, I can speed up my spear techniques even more.” Xue Ying was startled. The person who created this technique, ancestor ‘Gu Yuan Han’ had indeed reached

an otherworldly stage with his pursuit of speed incorporated into his arts of the spear. Even though Xue Ying himself had already comprehended One with the World, merely learning this technique still took six days.

If he attempted to create such a technique himself, one that fully utilises a body's full strength to create a rotational force when using a spear and the energy from the world, it would be entirely impossible.

Of course, that Frost Knight, Gu Yuan Han, decided to pass down this spear technique only after he stood at the highest point of all Transcendents.

"After comprehending the Blood Rain of the Dark Ice Spear Technique, I feel that my spear techniques are even faster now. If I were to meet with that Demonic God Emissary, killing him would be so much easier." Xue Ying grinned. With such fast spear techniques, the enemy would have a hard time defending, which increased the chances of them revealing a flaw which Xue Ying could fully utilise to kill!

"Xue Ying." A person came into the martial field – Zong Ling. Zong Ling sighed, "Your spear techniques have already reached the realm of perfection, and yet you still practice it relentless every single day. You are making me feel ashamed of myself, thus I've come to ,at the very least, train my strength."

"The more I train in the arts of spear, the smaller I feel in this big world outside." Xue Ying looked up at the sky, "The great natural world has so many mysteries! We are all merely mortals. Sometimes, after training my spear arts for a while, I feel how tiny I am. Even if my spear technique is profound... compared to the nature of the world, there's a world of difference and it's something which can not be compared at all."

"Haha, that's enough. That nature of the world you are talking about is something that we cannot even feel. Isn't that more pitiful?" Zong Long teased at him.

Xue Ying laughed.

He only began feeling this way after comprehending One with the World. Knowing that his spirit could fly with the winds, ascend with the flames, understand the massive world and the earth, and flow together with the river... It was precisely because of how clear these feelings were that he felt how

mysterious nature was, and how his heart began feeling reverence towards it.

For instance, there was his spear technique. The moment he utilised it, he could feel the wonders of how water flowed as part of nature. But when his spirit melded with water fully, he began feeling how natural the water flowed... and how simple and crude his spear technique was! It was like a small child trying to draw out the wonders of nature.

Of course, only when one enters the realm of 'One with the World' could they feel such a distinct and strong feeling.

"Uncle Zong," Xue Ying asked curiously, "Why did I not see Qing Shi today? Did he even come back in the afternoon?"

"From what I heard, Qing Shi and his little girlfriend brought several soldiers down the mountain early to Water Rites Town to play." Zong Ling began displaying his sword arts as a warm up with the six scimitars wielded by his six arms. "Being young sure is good!"

"Oh?" Xue Ying nodded. Qing Shi and his little girlfriend had an extremely good relationship. Going to the Water Rites Town to play together actually happened quite frequently – once every few days, thus he did not feel surprised.

\*\*\*\*\*

Sunset.

There was a team of soldiers waiting by side of the road. Beside the road were a couple of teenagers, leisurely strolling while appreciating the beautiful flowers and scenery.

This couple of teenagers in a relationship were Qing Shi and Ji Rong.

"This little flower is really beautiful. Here, it's only summer that we get to see grass and flowers. Other than that, the other three seasons are extremely cold, even to the point of snow covering the entire place." Ji Rong picked down a small yellow flower, inserting it into her hair. Turning around, she laughed, smiling beautifully at Qing Shi, "Am I beautiful?"

"Beautiful! Within this entire Water Rites Town, there's no one else as beautiful as you." Qing Shi laughed.

Even though they had an argument a few days ago, Ji Rong did not mention anything about that matter since, thus allowing their relationship to recover gradually. This time when they went out to play in Water Rites Town, their relationship was certainly good.

“You are so sweet!” Ji Rong said, “I didn’t even know you were this sweet in the past! Though speaking about beautiful girls, there’s only sister You Yue who is more beautiful than me. Oh yeah, speaking of that, I realised that sister You Yue has not been in the castle grounds these past few days? What happened? Did she fall out with your brother?”

“Mn.” Qing Shi nodded, “I noticed that too. I’ve asked my brother before, but he told me not to ask anymore. He said that sister You Yue will never set foot again into the castle, and even asked me to keep some distance away from her.”

“It seems they broke up.” Ji Rong commented.

“Maybe,” Qing Shi laughed, “Actually, my brother hadn’t even started dating sister You Yue before.”

Ji Rong laughed.

She was feeling proud and joyful after hearing that. Amongst the disciples under Bai Yuan Zhi, even though she was full of confidence in regards to her looks and temperament, with You Yue around, she could not even reveal her beauty! Actually, if one were to judge based on appearance, You Yue was quite beautiful. Her eyes were captivating. It was just that Ji Rong’s stature was quite small, but still, her figure was relatively good for a petite girl. Kong You Yue was slimmer and taller than Ji Rong. Adding on You Yue’s good relation with everyone, many disciples actually liked her a lot. Coupled with the relationship she had with Dong Bo Xue Ying, it was obvious she had become famous among the disciples.

*Da da da!* Sounds of horse hooves were heard hitting heavily on the road beside them.

A crimson-armoured knight was advancing.

At the head of the riders, there was a triangled-eyed [1](#) youngster wearing luxuriant clothes. Looking around, he seemed to be spirited.



“Brother Zhao, this Water Rites town is really a remote and small place. Compared to our County City, this place is lacking. Though the two beauties sent by the mayor are actually quite satisfying.” The white-robed triangle-eyed teenager laughed. Beside him was a cold-looking grey-robed rider, “Young master, you have played enough. When we enter the army, you must remember to follow the rules obediently. If it was elsewhere, the Lord could leverage upon his power to give you protection! Though you could not mess around in the army.”

“Do not worry. The moment I enter the army, I’d definitely not mess around.” The white-robed triangle-eyed teenager said.

Suddenly, his eyes lit up. Looking at the distant Dong Bo Qing Shi with Ji Rong, he began salivating, “Brother Zhao, look at that! A beautiful lady in front of us, full of flavour.”

Ji Rong was only 16 this year, yet her figure was quite well-developed. Being a female mage, her temperament could not be compared with an ordinary female. With that small yellow flower on her head... it made this white-robed triangle-eyed teenager’s heart itch even more. Even though female mages were rare, beautiful female mages were even harder to find. It was precisely this combination of rarity that resulted in wealthy aristocrats going crazy over after them.

“Hey, this lady over here.” The white-robed triangle-eyed teenager shouted out, the Snowstrider horse beneath him immediately went out of the road, heading towards the couple. He grinned, “This brother will bring you around to play, alright? That silly brat beside you is too young, and still does not know how to relish in a beautiful girl’s taste. Let this brother show you.”

“Humph.”

Qing Shi and Ji Rong’s expression turned soured slightly. The soldiers beside them were even more furious after hearing that, with most of them taking out their Star Breaking Crossbow.

“Who are you?” Qing Shi coldly answered. At least within the Water Rites Town, nobody dared to provoke him.

“Young master.” That grey-robed rider recognised the marking on the armours

worn by these soldiers. He came closer to the white-robed rider, saying softly, "This is Water Rites Town Snow Eagle Territory's soldier. Snow Eagle Territory's Lord is Dong Bo Xue Ying. At 15, he killed a Silver Moon Wolf King in the Mountain Range of Desolation. Right now, he should be a Silver Moon Knight! We are quite close to the legion currently, so let's not invite trouble alright?"

"Snow Eagle Territory, Dong Bo Xue Ying?" The white-robed triangle-eyed teenager frowned. If he was within the Azure River County, why would he care about this Dong Bo Xue Ying? His clan in the county had immense power and the news of how Si Clan had the most power was heard everywhere! They were obviously still quite a big and powerful clan, that could look down upon such a remote clan within this remote small town.

However, he only had a team of escorts with him currently, with the head of the escort team being a Meteor Knight. Facing Lord Xue Ying was still quite a difficult task for him.

Even though his heart already backed down, that white-robed triangled eyed teenager still arrogantly said out, "Who am I? Humph, humph, you people belonging to a lowly clan in this small remote town do not have the qualifications to know me!"

"You listen to this carefully." Ji Rong, who was standing beside Qing Shi, furiously exclaimed, "He is Snow Eagle Territory's Dong Bo Qing Shi! His brother is the lord of Snow Eagle Territory's Lord Dong Bo Xue Ying! You dare to have your liberties with me... Qing Shi, why are you not reacting to what he said, letting him have his liberties with me?"

"Apologise to her." In front of his girlfriend, Qing Shi did not dare to lose face, instantly thundered out, "If not, you don't have to think about escaping this Water Rites Town!"

"You... Outrageous," Initially, that white-robed triangle-eyed teenager wanted to back down, yet because of his habit of being arrogant, became furious immediately. He had a cold glint in his eyes, "Merely a clan of this remote land, yet you dare to be arrogant in front of me? Totally unknowing of your own status! Go, kill all the men while leaving that beauty for me to take away."

Making his decision, after killing them, he would immediately join up with the

army before Dong Bo Xue Ying finds out about this matter.

“As you command.” Those soldiers with him were already used to his command of slaughter.

“You dare!” Qing Shi was startled. Recognising a person wrongly would mean slaughter?

“Go.”

The grey-robed rider frowned at that, even though he still listened to the orders, jumping down from his horse, before displaying a green-coloured protective Qi. With a lightning speed, he came killing towards them. Looking at such a scene, the soldiers of Snow Eagle Territory were all shocked. A Meteor Knight? The soldiers from Snow Eagle’s Territory were all panicking even though their Star Breaking Crossbow could kill a Meteor knight.

However, only when over a hundred Star Breaking Crossbow simultaneously surround a Silver Moon Knight could he be taken down. Otherwise, with his speed, it was extremely hard to aim at him.

“Quick, dodge! Everyone aim at that white-robed teenager.” The soldiers were experienced, immediately separating out to avoid being slaughtered easily by their enemy.

“Kill.”

The crimson-armoured soldiers came charging towards them.

Yet the distant white-robed triangled teenager actually took out a shield in front of him. Even with a shield, he still went hiding at a far distance away. He was obviously not afraid of the Star Breaking Crossbow, coldly stating, “This brat, you dare to act arrogant in front of me? You are definitely seeking death.”

“Ah.” The Meteor Knight was having an easy time slaughtering these ordinary soldiers. Within a moment, a soldier from Snow Eagle’s territory who vainly tried to dodge his attack was killed in one blade.

Even more crimson-armoured soldiers came pouring in, charging towards Dong Bo Qing Shi.

Qing Shi had never encountered such a situation before, and thus, began

panicking immediately. The spell matrix in his mages equipment could obviously not hold up against so many people, especially in the presence of a Meteor Knight.

With a flip of his hand, a spell scroll appeared in his hand. This was precisely what Xue Ying gave him amongst the many spell scrolls. It was a grade five spell scroll.

---

|

1. Someone with eyes shaped in a triangle instead of oval. ([Upturned protruding hooded monolid](#)) ↩

## Book 3: Chapter 2 – His background?

---

“Not good!” The grey-robed Meteor Knight trembled upon seeing the teenager take out a spell scroll.

The teenager focused on him. Clearly, this young man targeted the Meteor Knight with whatever powerful magic the scroll contained.

*Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!*

Several huge green thunderbolts flashed down from the clear sky, striking the ground and creating a virtual forest of electrified green flashes! Among these densely packed thunderbolts... eight of them, twisting, struck the Meteor Knight. The knight had no time to dodge. With a *hong*, his entire body was atomized into ashes.

Normally, without a spell scroll, even a Silver Moon mage would require significant casting time before being able to cast such a powerful grade-five thunder spell; however, the power such a magic would produce would be unimaginable.

“No!” The white-robed triangle-eyed man cried, hiding far away behind his shield. He gaped in terror at the scene of his knight’s destruction, and exclaimed with his eyes wide-open, “I—”

*Hong!*

His body was also disintegrated into fragments! He was simply too weak and had no hope of withstanding the powerful thunderbolt attack.

A total of 99 mighty green thunderbolts rained down from the sky, resembling a grove of large tree trunks. Such was the grade-five spell – Thunderbolt Forest!

Qing Shi was barely strong enough to focus the falling thunderbolts on that Meteor Knight. He did not have the mental strength to guide the other thunderbolts, falling like a great green forest, to any other directed target. As Qing Shi could only do his utmost to ensure the thunderbolts struck in the general direction of their enemies, it was to their fortune that a single powerful

thunderbolt actually struck that triangle-eyed teenager.

“Ah Ah Ah Ah.” Some of the crimson-armoured riders were struck by the spell and also immediately perished.

Because Snow Eagle Territory’s soldiers had already been spread apart in a fairly wide-spread pattern and their numbers quite few, as Qing Shi guided the ‘Thunderbolt Forest’s barrage towards the direction of the enemies, none of his soldiers were struck.

“Escape.”

“Quick, escape.”

Those 20 crimson riders who were fortunate enough to escape from the Thunderbolt Forest area of effect, immediately leaped onto their horse and rapidly retreated from the place. “Xiu.” “Xiu.” “Xiu.”

The soldiers of Snow Eagle Territory though, realizing the opportunity, shot their Star Breaking Crossbows at the retreating foes.

“It’s alright now,” Qing Shi pulled on his girlfriend’s hand.

“I... I...” Ji Rong was still terrified, “We almost... almost died. It’s really fortunate that you, Qing Shi, had that powerful spell scroll with you.”

“My brother gave me it to me to use as a protective treasure,” Qing Shi never continued on after that, because Xue Ying had actually ordered him keep quiet about the information regarding the existence of his spell scrolls. He only exposed them because of today’s near-death incident..

Soon, the Snow Eagle Territory’s soldiers returned from chasing after the escaping crimson riders..

“Young master Qing Shi, most of the enemy soldiers actually escaped. Because using the Star Breaking Crossbow is so difficult, 16 of them actually escaped from us,” The head of the escort team said.

“Clean up this place. We will head back to Snowrock Castle now.” Qing Shi, who felt uneasy, commanded.

.....

Evening.

After getting the message from his servants about his brother's deadly encounter, Xue Ying along with Zong Ling and Tong San waited at the castle gate for Qing Shi's return. As the drop-bridge slowly lowered and the castle gates opened.

Outside the castle, Qing Shi and his entourage carried with them several of the crimson rider corpses.

"I'll return to the Great Mage's Building first," Ji Rong said in a low voice,

"Mn," Qing Shi nodded.

The door was open.

Qing Shi walked towards Xue Ying, head lowered, "Brother."

"Go back and rest first. We'll talk more tonight," Xue Ying did not blame his brother for his actions. After all, he could see how flustered Qing Shi was after dealing with a life and death situation for the first time. Qing Shi lightly nodded and disappeared into the castle.

"You, follow me," Xue Ying commanded.

The captain of the escort team immediately respectfully followed.

The two of them strode through the castle.

"What happened?" Xue Ying asked. Zong Ling and Tong San also with him, listening to the explanation given.

"My Lord, today, as usual, we were escorting both the young master and Miss Ji Rong to Water Rites Town," That captain described, in detail, what exactly had happened to them. After finishing his report, he sighed, "It is really fortunate that young master Qing Shi used that spell of his. Otherwise, it wouldn't have been just the two of our brothers-in-arms dying today."

That grey-robed Knight had been too fast. Before being struck by the Thunderbolt Forest spell, he had already killed two Snow Eagle Territory soldiers.

Xue Ying nodded, "Double the pensions given to those who died! As for their families, we will continue supporting them. To the other soldiers who went with

you, give each of them 10 pieces of silver.”

“Thank you my Lord,” Captain Wu said gratefully.

“Do you know who that white-robed young master is?” Xue Ying asked.

“No, I don’t. But by his spoken accent, it seems that he isn’t part of our Water Rites Town,” Captain Wu replied.

Xue Ying frowned.

Trouble was brewing.

Without a doubt, Xue Ying’s little brother had killed of a child of some nobility. Whether this matter would be blown up, only time would tell! According to the laws of the empire, Qing Shi acted entirely in self-defense! If the young master who died was part of an ordinary clan, then this matter would probably be considered closed. However, if white-robed young man originated from a big clan, then this matter would not be so easily solved. Trouble would definitely come knocking on their door.

“Xue Ying, since the young-master Qing She killed is not part of Water Rites Town, then investigating his identity would be hard. The entire Azure River County is too big, having so many clans of nobility. Who knows which clan he is from?” Zong Ling’s head throbbed just imagining searching for this youngster’s identity among the myriads of noble houses in the county.

“Did you bring the young man’s body with you?” Xue Ying asked.

“Yes, we carried what we could back with us. However, the white-robed young master was actually totally disintegrated by the thunderbolt that struck him and nothing was left behind. However, the Meteor Knight’s body is still around with us. But because of being struck by several of the thunderbolts, it’s going to be hard for us to identify him.” Captain Wu said.

“Are there any hostages?”

“At the time, our brothers were all so furious that we did not give any mercy to the enemies. Every time we shot them with our Star Breaking Crossbow, it was a fatal wound. We even killed those too heavily injured to fight back,” Captain Wu said, “No hostages were kept.”



After hearing all this, Xue Ying a baleful aura began leaking from his body.

Identifying one's enemies should not be this difficult.

*'Damn it!'*

If anyone dared accost him and accused him using the law, Xue Ying would argue that his brother was victim and had acted in self-defense! On the other hand, if someone tried to illegally get revenge, regardless of whether they were the strongest person in Azure River County – Si Liang Hong or the terrifying Xiang Pang Yun... Xue Ying did not fear. Xue Ying wondered if he was worrying too much over this matter. Whichever noble clan this dead young master was from should not be so powerful.

"Investigate," Xue Ying commanded, "Use their belongings to see if you can find any clues as to who they are."

"I'll go arrange it," Zong Ling said. He was meticulous and thorough in his work as well as his thoughts, "Three hours is enough."

"If you still can't find out where they are from, I guess I'll have to ask Dragon Mountain Manor for help," Xue Ying concluded.

\*\*\*\*\*

The Third Division stationed within Azure River County was actually located somewhere near the Mountain Range of Desolation.

Usually, those guards stationed within the various towns of Azure River County were from the Si Clan. As for those stationed at the Mountain Range of Desolation, they were actually the Empire's soldiers! Being the army of the empire, they were even more powerful and more mysterious. The Si Clan could only borrow on some relations they had with the empire to influence those empire soldiers stationed within their territory. However, it was impossible to have total control over these soldiers.

As for the backing behind the empire's army, it was a powerful force. Whenever a huge troop of army entered the Mountain Range of Desolation, a Transcendent would be behind the scenes to command the troops!

The Third Division, within a spacious house.

“Second elder.”

“Young master has passed away.”

A few soldiers awkwardly stood there.

Sitting in front of them was a one-eyed officer. The one-eyed officer's expression turned so gloomy that tears could be seen forming in his single eye. “Young master actually died? All you useless trash, trash! My big brother will definitely become crazy, definitely! Tell me, who was the one who did this. And why did he die?”

“Yes,” The soldiers all hurriedly described the whole incident.

The more the one-eyed officer heard, the more his facial expression twitch.

The fact that he could become the commander of the Third Divisions logistics department was all due to his brother who spent a huge sum of gold and utilised his connections for this to happen. His brother was actually insane. In the entire Azure River County, everyone called him the loyal dog of the Si Clan! But why did they use the word ‘dog’ as an expression? It was precisely because his big brother was so batty, that he would frequently do very crazy things like a mad dog.

As for that young master ‘Cui Hu’ who died? He was his brother's only son!

“Snow Eagle territory, Dong Bo Xue Ying's little brother? Dong Bo Qing Shi?” The one-eyed officer gritted his teeth, “How dare he kill someone from our Cui Clan! Dong Bo Qing Shi must die! His brother must die too! The entire Snow Eagle Territory must compensate for his death!”

Initially, during the encounter, these soldiers did not know who the other young master was. All they knew was that he was just from the Snow Eagle Territory's controlling clan. But due to Ji Rong exclaiming his name, they now knew he was actually Dong Bo Qing Shi – Xue Ying's little brother. As a result, they understood who the enemy was.

“Better send a message as fast as possible to my big brother,” One-eyed officer did not hesitate at all. Utilising the Empire's army network, he sent a message in order to inform his brother at Azure River County! After all, being the commander of the logistics department, sending such a simple message to his

home was a small matter easily accomplished.

.....

On the high mountain 16 km away from where the Third Division was located.

A coyote with a snow white body and pitch-black legs stood, watching the Third Division from a place far away. A faintly dark qi surrounded the coyote. While this canine looked to be only a few months old with some tenderness still in its body, its eyes expressed a desolate sadness and an endless hatred.

He had just been birthed to this world not long ago, yet his mother was already killed by people.

Moments ago...

Soldiers had also killed the coyote's father before bringing his father's corpse into their camp. Using his natural born instincts, the young coyote was able to follow the soldiers all the way to this location, yet it did not enter their camp precisely because it was afraid.

"Child," A gentle voice was heard beside the coyote amongst the dark qi congregating beside it. That dark qi eventually form into a black-robed, white-haired old man. With an expression full of love, he asked, "Do you hate humankind?"

The coyote eyed this old man, before angrily growling despite his natural inclination toward gentleness.

Hate.

Definitely hated them very much!

"Your parents were just some ordinary creatures, yet you have in your hands, an extraordinary power. However, this power must be fully controlled before you could have the opportunity to take your revenge against humankind," That black-robed, white-haired old man stretched out his hand, displaying a strange bone scepter in it, "I shall grant you this opportunity."

Omm—

A surge of a blood-coloured stream of energy gushed out of the bone scepter, enveloping the coyote's body. The coyote began transforming under the blood-

red magical stream, slowly, it became more and more upright, with its fur disappearing from the naked eyes and its four legs turning into human limbs. That canine-head slowly transformed, with human facial features gradually appearing.

In just a moment, a naked child of five-six years old stood right where the coyote was.

“This is your human body – a true human body. No one will be able to discover any flaws indicating you aren’t a human,” The black-robed, white-haired old man said, “Only when you are able to fully assimilate into the humankind world could you have a better opportunity to take your revenge. Let’s go. But before you enter the world of humans, it’s better if you follow me for 10 years. For now, call me... father!”

“Yes. Fa... ther?” The child stuttered. Although he stammered out his words, what came out was still coherent.

“Really extraordinary. Turning into a human just moments ago and yet, he can already speak,” The black-robed, white-haired old man smiled, “Let’s go.”

A sea of black qi enveloped both of them...

And followed the two as they disappeared into the background.

## Book 3: Chapter 3 – Within the Bloodshed Tavern

---

Night, within an extravagant mansion in the Azure River County.

Many soldiers were seen patrolling around in teams, demonstrating the extremely heavy security present in this mansion! This was because the owner, Cui Jin Peng, was a big boss within the underworld. Cui Jin Peng controlled all of the dark and dirty matters that occurred. Being a loyal dog of the Si Clan was the primary factor in how he had acquired his station and power!

As other underworld leaders coveted his position, Cui Jin Peng had to constantly fight to maintain his status and standing within the underworld community.

“Hu.”

“Hu.”

Cui Ji Peng’s servants, drenched in cold sweat, attempted to control their breathing. Only when they finally able to get their breath under control were they able to gently breathe in a mouthful of cool, sweet air.

The servants had been breathing hard because tonight, their master had actually already killed 20 of them!

“Damn.”

“Damn, damn, damn,” Within the extravagant mansion, the gold-robed Cui Jin Peng was pacing over in fury.

Everyone who had previously been within the hall had retreated outside, waiting for orders.

“Hu’er, oh my Hu’er,” Cui Jin Peng’s heart quivered.

He was a savage and mad person.

Born in the slums, Cui Jin Peng never knew his father, and his mother was a whore! She had not cared whether her son lived or die. From a young age, he grew up like a wild dog, step by step, trampling over the bodies of many others in

order to reach where he was today. He now stood at the top of the underworld, with the appreciation of the uncrowned emperor of Azure River County, Si Liang Hong.

Having lived in the darker side of the world for so many years, there was no heinous task he would deign to undertake! Yet in his life, the one thing Cui Jin Peng cared for most was his only son. He spoiled his son and would prepare whatever his son desired according to his whims and fancies. If his son wanted beautiful women, he would get them for him. But because of this excessive doting, his son had become more and more domineering.

Once his son became uncontrollable, he decided to send him to the army to temper his character! But who would have thought...

His son had actually died?

“Hu’er, oh my Hu’er, how am I going to continue living after your death?” Cui Jin Peng’s tears were streaming down his face. This mad underworld king sobbed in great grief right at this moment.

“I want all of them to die.”

“I want all of them to die with you. The whole Snow Eagle Territory’s Dong Bo clan! That damned Dong Bo Qing Shi and his brother, Dong Bo Xue Ying. And everyone within the castle, I want all of them to die with you!” Cui Jin Peng’s eyes gleamed with extreme madness, “All of them!”

“Big brother.”

Someone from outside came running in. This person bristled with hair – his entire face, his entire body, all parts of him exuded hair. His glowing green eyes indicated the race he belonged to – the Werewolf Clan. This person was second-in-charge under Cui Jin Peng and a powerful Silver Moon Knight.

His big brother had the moniker of ‘Mad Dog’, while for him, he was called ‘Wild Wolf’.

“Big brother, all you have to do is to give me the command and I’ll rush over to exterminate their clan,” This wolf-man growled ferociously.

“Do you think we have the certainty in killing them without any plans? No!” Cui

Jin Peng's expression turned hideous, "Did you not listen to the information of how Hu'er and Fifth brother old Zhao died from a single spell scroll! Even Meteor knights do not have the capability of holding themselves against this spell, instantly dying to it. That's precisely a grade five spell's power. From what I see, that Dong Bo Xue Ying should be a Silver Moon Knight. With him hiding in his castle, do you think our strength of just 3 Silver Moon Knights have the certainty in exterminating them? Especially so when it's in their own domain!"

"So what should we do?" Wolf-man became anxious.

"Put out a bounty!" Cui Jin Peng said with a cold face, "Bloodshed Tavern!"

"Bloodshed Tavern?" Wolf-man became shocked.

Bloodshed Tavern has been around for so long; as far as history was recorded, it was a fact that Bloodshed Tavern was always present.

As for the price required to pay for setting up a mission, it was determined entirely by the bounty given by the Bloodshed Tavern! What's more, the Bloodshed tavern would be getting 80% of the bounty given, leaving just 20% for the hired assassin. Thus, the prices of their services were generally exorbitant.

"That price would be very high, extremely high." Wolf-man could not help but exclaimed.

"I want all of them to die. The entire Dong Bo clan must die! For that sake, I do not care whatever price is stipulated," Cui Jin Peng gritted his teeth, "This information was sent out by second brother, using the empire's army. I must make use of this opportunity, strike while the iron is hot before that Dong Bo Xue Ying finds out about my son."

"Mn," Wolf-man nodded.

Having been in the underworld for so long, they understood the importance of striking while the iron was hot, and that the advantage would be given to the one who strikes first.

"Pass on the message, the news of my son's death must be kept a secret. Those who know of this, lock them up," Cui Jin Peng coldly commanded, "Only when the entire Dong Bo Clan is dead do we release them! I'll be heading out now for the Bloodshed Tavern!"

Since he was going to exterminate the other party, there was no way he would be willing to give the other party the opportunity to return the favour!

.....

Night, Bloodshed Tavern.

This tavern was extremely busy and crowded. Many adventurers and blood-loving people were mixing around in this location. Even the rich nobles dare not act wantonly in this particular tavern, due to the fact that the people within did not care about what titles and background the other party had. After killing, the hired hands would instantly escape, making it hard to really know the actual identity of the assassin.

“Up the stairs.”

The tavern had a specific door only for those who wanted to accept a mission or to give out a mission.

Cui Jin Peng took out the Bloodshed Order from his black robe as a form of identification. One must know that before one could accept or give out a mission, he must either have the Bloodshed Order, or the very least, the Black Iron order from the Dragon Mountain Manor!

Second floor of the Bloodshed Tavern.

It was very quiet. Even though the place was filled with quite a few people, they were all either hiding their identity or wearing some face mask. Clearly, most of those who were willing to work as an assassin were not willing to disclose their identities. Within the entire Azure River County, only a few people, like the powerful Xiang Pang Yun were willing to publicise their identity after killing. Xiang Pang Yun had the strength to match his arrogance, and should he want to establish a clan, even the Azure River County's Si Clan would be shaken by it.

“I want to offer a bounty,” Cui Jin Peng sat down after entering the second level, facing towards a purple-robed female.

“Please continue,” She smiled.

“I want to offer a bounty for someone to exterminate the entire Water Rites



Town, Snow Eagle Territory's Dong Bo Clan. I want everyone within the Snowrock Castle to die! Specifically, the brothers Dong Bo Qing Shi and Dong Bo Xue Ying must die," Cui Ji Peng's voice dripped with an intense killing intent.

"Alright. Please wait a moment while we calculate the bounty."

Kill?

Even if the mission was tasked to kill a Transcendent, the Bloodshed Tavern would still accept it.

As long as you were able to fulfil the required price!

"Humph humph," Cui Jin Peng forced himself to be patient as he waited with an eyes full of malice. He really could not endure any longer in eradicating the roots of the entire Dong Bo Clan as revenge for his son.

At this moment, the purple-robed female gazed at the crystal ball in her hands. Some numbers appeared on it.

She nodded, before stating, "If you want to request for the eradication of the entire Dong Bo clan, the price required is three million gold pieces!"

"Three million???" Cui Jin Peng instantly stood up, "Why is it so high? T... This is crazy. That Dong Bo Xue Ying is just a Silver Moon Knight and yet, exterminating his clan required three million gold pieces? Even if your Bloodshed Tavern accepted 80% of the bounty, the remaining 20%, 600,000 gold pieces would given to the assassin who accepts this mission, isn't that still too much? What kind of assassin would require such a price?"

Bloodshed Tavern had a very strict regulation for its contract's price.

Even though Dragon Mountain Manor's information of Dong Bo Xue Ying was kept a secret, Bloodshed Tavern still had news of how Xue Ying actually killed a Silver Moon Wolf King and the Shadow Leopard at 15! Even though killing the Shadow Leopard was kept a secret, and selling off its precious parts were done in the dark, Bloodshed Tavern and Dragon Mountain Manor still had the capabilities of investigating such happenings. And it was precisely this that made Bloodshed Tavern recognise Dong Bo Xue Ying being a Silver Moon Knight when he was 15!

As for how he could spend more than 500,000 gold pieces casually these days, without having more than a few million gold, logically speaking, nobody would be so daring as to splurge like that!

Thus, all of these pieces of information allowed Bloodshed Tavern to conclude... Dong Bo Xue Ying had a probability of 30% that he was already a Legend ranker!

Thus, it was with this that allowed them to demand such a price. If the information affirmed Xue Ying being a Legend ranker, then the price would be more than doubled!

“T... This...” Cui Jin Peng did not dare believe. The price set was too high. A Legend ranker clan’s property could at most be worth two to three million or so! That is to say, for ordinary Legend rankers, they could not even afford such a price even when they sell off everything they owned. Even though Cui Jin Peng himself was the underworld boss, above him was still the Si Clan. Even after amassing for so many years, he only had a million gold pieces at most.

“In our Bloodshed Tavern, prices are non-negotiable. If you could not afford it, please see yourself out,” Purple-robed female lightly stated.

## Book 3: Chapter 4 – Assassins

---

Cui Jin Peng scowled, showing an ugly expression.

Nobody could act arrogant in front of the Bloodshed Tavern, no matter who they were! Even if they were the incredible emperor who united the world and established Dragon Mountain Empire or a deity, they would still have to uphold the status of both the Bloodshed Tavern and Temple of the Earth God.

But three million gold pieces was something he could not part with!

What if he could not have his revenge?

He would rather die!

“I, I want to change the mission details!” Cui Jin Peng gritted his teeth, “As long as the murderer, Dong Bo Qing Shi, dies, I could care less about the rest!”

“Murderer?” The purple-robed female frowned as she scrutinized Cui Jin Peng. Still, according to the regulations of Bloodshed Tavern, she would not follow up with the investigations nor leak out information about it.

“Yes, murderer,” Cui Jin Peng trusted the credibility of Bloodshed Tavern, he sharply said, “I want this damnable murderer to die! He’s called Dong Bo Qing Shi. Tell me, how much does it cost to kill this mage? Oh right, time is of the essence. I’m afraid that Dong Bo Xue Ying will discover what actually happened during that day. By then, I’m afraid this mission would not be so simple any longer.”

“Please trust in the efficiency of our Bloodshed Tavern,” Purple-robed female smiled, “Please wait for a moment. The price for killing murderer Dong Bo Qing Shi would be out in just a moment.”

She stared at the crystal ball placed in front of her on the table.

“Killing the murderer Dong Bo Qing Shi within a day, requires one million gold!” She stated.

“One million gold? He is merely an ordinary mage, not even reaching that of an Earth Mage!” Cui Jin Peng’s eyes widened, “You only need to send a single

powerful assassin to assassinate him in the dark. A very simple task.”

“By now, the entire Snowrock Castle would certainly be heavily guarded. I believe that Dong Bo Qing Shi will not leave the castle for even a short period of time,” The purple-robed female said, “If you are willing to increase the period of time for undertaking the mission, the price will be 100,000 gold instead! But since you required this to be done under a day, and the fact that we need to pass on the mission to the assassin accepting it, and that the assassin will need to rush over to that location, it is simply too short a duration... and what’s worse, he would have to face up against any obstacles within the castle.”

The purple-robed female gently smiled at him.

Cui Jin Peng could only grit his teeth.

The prices in Bloodshed Tavern were non-negotiable. Either you provided the amount, or you left.

“I accept!” Cui Jin Peng pursed his lips in a frown, “Act quickly and resolve this as fast as possible.”

“Please pay up,” She demanded of him.

Even though Cui Jin Peng felt pain in his heart at this, the bereavement caused by the death of his son had already made him crazy. He could care less about everything else.

With a turn of his hand, he brought up a large sum of gold notes. This pile of gold notes was exactly one million. In the past, he would always take out this sum of money to count, bringing him large bouts of pleasure! This was after all, the amount he saved after years of struggles within the underworld.

“A pleasure doing business with you,” She smiled gently, “We’ll immediately contact and send out an appropriate assassin!”

“Mn.”

Cui Jin Peng nodded. His eyes radiated of hatred.

It was as if he could already see the death of that Dong Bo Qing Shi. He fully trusted the strength of the Bloodshed Tavern! The missions accepted by the Bloodshed Tavern had a high degree of completion rate. Unless some

unforeseen circumstances happened, like for instance, if the mission stated the target being a Legend ranker, and yet after acting, he was actually a Transcendent! Bloodshed Tavern would temporarily revoke the mission before asking for an increase in price! And this was not refundable!

If one could not accept such a regulation of Bloodshed Tavern, then one should not come here.

In reality, Bloodshed Tavern's reputation was already impeccable.

.....

That same night.

Within Bloodshed Tavern's own secret channels, a message was sent at that instant to three frightening assassins within Azure River County. As the mission had a very tight time duration, only an hour was given for the reply! If they did not wish to accept... Bloodshed Tavern would immediately send the request to another bunch of top-ranked assassins.

This mission had a danger – Dong bo Xue Ying was possibly a Legend ranker.

Thus, those who received the request for the mission were all of the very least, Legend-ranked in combat power!

Because of the fact that the mission did not require Dong Bo Xue Ying to die, it was only priced at one million gold. If there was a need to kill Dong Bo Xue Ying, then within the entire Azure River County, only one assassin fit the criteria – Xiang Pang Yun! Within the entire Azure River County, he was the strongest, most absolute power with the capability of killing any ordinary Legend ranker with just one move.

His formidability made others, even among the Legend rank, tremor.

Even that very person who had lived for hundreds of years, and had transformed his own body into a demonic one, Si Liang Hong, was ranked behind Xiang Pang Yun on the Dragon Mountain Book! And the rankings within the Dragon Mountain Book were extremely accurate.

Very quickly, the various assassins were notified of their mission.

And the person who accepted it was a formidable assassin, codenamed Wind

Devil.

.....

Within an ordinary-looking, albeit spacious inner courtyard of the county, five people gathered together under the brightly-lit area to speak with one another.

“Big brother, it’s fine if I just bring third brother over,” The person bore silvery-grey armour with a strange-looking bronze heart-protective gear on his chest. His body was lean, and half of his face was covered with a silvery-grey facemask. He continued, “This kind of small assassination task is too simple. Even though the intelligence gathered described of the possibility that Dong Bo Xue Ying as possibly being a Legend ranker, Haha, he is just 22 years old. A 22 years old Legend ranker? How is it believable?”

“Even if he really is one, he would not be my match in power!” The lean male laughed haughtily, “Big brother, there’s no need for you to be present.”

He was in fact the assassin Wind Devil!

An assassin with Legend-ranked combat power!

“That’s right big brother, there’s also the assistance from the three of us here,” A white-haired mage added on. Being a Silver Moon mage was something he was proud of. But in front of his big brother, nobody dared to boast.

Sitting at the head of the table was a man wearing a loose dark-red robe. His loosely-worn robe exposed part of his chest. He was about 1.9 meters tall. Even though he was considered muscular... compared to the Demonic God Emissary met by Xue Ying, this person was not nearly as large. After all, that Demonic God Emissary had a monstrous fleshy-body. But if one were to compare the pressure emitted, this strong man had a pressure much stronger even than that of the Demonic God Emissary.

That Demonic God Emissary was like a small kitten in front of this peerless fierce beast.

His ferocious Qi was even heavier.

This ferocious Qi of his was formed after killing numerous victims! Usually, assassins would hide their identity, yet he did not care about showing who he

was. This was because those whom he slaughtered were all targets given by the Bloodshed Tavern, and nobody else could find fault with him for that!

Wind Devil could be considered as a very powerful expert, yet in front of his big brother, he did not even dare breathe loudly. Likewise, he was extremely obedient.

“Si Liang Hong that that old witch has been hiding for so long, that even when I want to ask her about a simple matter, she refuses to answer. It has been a while since I’ve last moved my bones. I’m now itching for some action. This time, I’ll go with you to take a look. If the mission is simple, you guys can complete it. If that Dong Bo Xue Ying is really a Legend ranker, then he’ll be my plaything,” That strong man laughed. His eyes were blood-red as a result of the cultivation method he trained in.

He was actually the number one expert of Azure River County, and the most frightening murderer. He was Xiang Pang Yun!

“Alright. Since big brother wants to go, then let’s go. The mission this time seems quite simple, and I doubt big brother would need to even act,” Wind Devil smiled teasingly.

“Since we’ve accepted the mission, we’ll leave tomorrow at dawn towards Water Rites Town, Snowrock Castle,” Xiang Pang Yun stood up, motioning to his commands to do likewise.

“Yes.”

Wind Devil and the other three replied.

## Book 3: Chapter 5 – The threat

---

Second day, dawn.

Flying at a fast speed, a 30 meters long refined black ship shot through the skies amongst the cloud towards Water Rites Town.

Xiang Pan Yung along with five other experts stood atop the flying-ship. Two servants directed the ship as it sped along the skies.

Xiang Pang Yun sat idly on the deck of the flying-ship, looking at the floating clouds around him and at times, gazing at the vast land beneath him.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying, 22 years?” Xiang Pang Yun lightly smiled, “If you really are a Legend ranker, then such a young Legend ranker would be a rare plaything for me.”

.....

Snowrock Castle.

At the peak of Snowrock Mountain, outside the castle near a cliff, a teenager wearing a black outfit with black hair stood by himself, overlooking the mountain. Just by standing, any ordinary soldiers passing by could feel a mild pressure on them. Usually, Xue Ying would deliberately keep his killing intent to himself. Currently, he was not in a good mood. Thus, naturally, he subconsciously released an oppressive trace of breath, creating a palpable pressure that even any ordinary man could feel.

Da! Da! Da!

The horses quickly galloped, and three riders approached him.

“You’ve come,” Xue Ying turned his head in their direction.

The three riders noticed their lord waiting for them outside the castle. The leading commander amongst the riders immediately dismounted from his horse, passing its reins to his partner, before rushing towards Xue Ying.

“My Lord,” The rider said respectfully.



“Manor Lord Si An has news?” Xue Ying asked.

“Manor Lord Si An said, there is no news regarding the death of that young master amongst the nobles in the entire Water Rites Town. He has passed on the message up the chain towards the Dragon Mountain Manor of Azure River County, and I believe within three days, there would be results,” The rider replied.

Xue Ying frowned.

He had expected as much. The Manor Lord Si An was, after all, only in charge of everything within Water Rites Town. Xue Ying had sent his men out last night to immediately relate the request in the fastest manner possible with an appeal for investigations to be done as quickly as feasible. They had been waiting for a response from the Manor Lord from that time until now! Yet... the Manor Lord Si An’s investigation did not have any conclusive result. Si An still needed to request information from sources up the chain from his!

“Three days,” Xue Ying said to himself, “Let’s hope that there won’t be too many twists and turns. Humph. Regardless of who it is, I will not let them hurt Qing Shi.”

He had been caring for Qing Shi ever since his brother had been a baby.

Their brotherly relationship between them was so deep that it penetrated through their marrows already! For his little brother, Xue Ying would not hesitate to enter the Mountain Range of Desolation.

He had sometimes wondered why some people would sacrifice themselves for others! But having brought up his brother, having cared for him, and recalling when his brother would shout ‘Big Brother’ ‘Big Brother’ on his back, remembering when his little brother would hug his leg while shouting ‘Brother hug’, recollecting when his little brother would obediently lower his head to listen to his reprimand...

Xue Ying now finally understood that once a relationship was deep enough, it could transcend both life and death!

And this was exactly the relationship he had with his little brother.

“My Lord, this was given by the Manor Lord Si An for you,” The rider

respectfully took out a scroll from his robe.

Xue Ying went back into the castle after receiving it.

At the entrance, many soldiers saluted respectfully.

“Send down the orders, for the next three days, Qing Shi is not allowed to step out of the castle!” Xue Ying commanded.

“Yes, my Lord.”

All the soldiers respectfully acknowledged.

As for whether Xue Ying would let his little brother out after three days passed, he would have to see if he found a solution to this matter.

.....

Walking inside the castle, Xue Ying examined the scroll in his hands.

“En?” Xue Ying frowned, “This scroll is regarding little brother’s girlfriend Ji Rong?”

Before this, Xue Ying had sent a request asking Dragon Mountain Manor to investigate everything regarding Ji Rong. While the identity of that young master was as of yet unknown, the Manor Lord Si An still sent Xue Ying information regarding Ji Rong.

“Oh...”

Xue Ying closely scrutinised the information contained in the scroll.

Ji Rong’s father, Ji Wu Hai, struggled hard for his family when he was young. Having worked for 20 years, he successfully built the family’s business. After building a successful business, Ji Wu Hai married and had a daughter named Ji Rong! When she was young, Ji Rong had led a wealthy life. Later on, her uncle, who was in charge of the family business, had a falling out with Ji Rong’s family, taking their wealth and kicking them out the door.

With nowhere else to go, Ji Rong’s parents could only stay with her mother’s Clan, the Yan Clan. The financial fall and subsequent need to stay with the Yan Clan caused Ji Rong and her parents significant embarrassment.

The Yan Clan members were not kind to Ji Rong and her family and

discriminated against them. As a result, Ji Rong led a poor and miserable childhood. Her father often drank to escape the misery.

When Ji Rong was nine...

Her father, Ji Wu Hai, awoke from his stupor and started another business. He achieved success within a year! After returning to Water Rites Town, her family once again grew in status. Her uncle's lost all control of the Ji Clan's family business and he became completely broke.

"En?" Xue Ying continued reading.

The information contained on the scroll went into detail describing the events of Ji Rong's life along with all related matters she was involved with.

"After thorough investigations."

"Several clues lead to the suspicion that Ji Wu Hai is a believer of a Demon! His wife and daughter are likely fellow believers as well!"

"Further investigations are still required."

Seeing this, Xue Ying's pupil contracted.

A believer of a Demon?

Dragon Mountain Manor had spent much effort in chasing after matters regarding the Demonic God, and if certain matters were affirmed to be true, they would immediately act on those matters! Actually, prior to Xue Ying's information request, Dragon Mountain Manor had not known about Ji Wu Hai being a suspected Demon follower. It was only after Xue Ying's request to investigate the background behind his brother's little girlfriend that Dragon Mountain Manor decided to use its best investigative agents in discovering the background behind Ji Wu Hai's entire family!

This kind of investigation was extremely detailed and was performed using various methodologies covering all aspects. Only after this thorough background check did Dragon Mountain Manor discover this 'problem' with the Rong family's background.

However, to date, the information regarding the family's Demon worshipping was just a suspicion with a need for more evidence.

“En?” Xue Ying continued to carefully read the scroll.

On the back side of the scroll, the researchers had inscribed many additional facts. These facts all supported the speculations by providing supplementary evidences gathered by Dragon Mountain Manor.

“Even if he is not a believer of Demon, this Ji Wu Hai belongs to an extremely savage generation,” Xue Ying was secretly surprised. That year, not only had Ji Wu Hai suffered by his big brother kicking his family out on the streets, but his wife’s clan had also sneered at him. After regaining his wealth and standing, Ji Wu Hai had inflicted excessively savage revenge on those who had caused his suffering. Because he had covered up his vengeful actions quite well, the Dragon Mountain Manor investigators were unable to uncover much — even after thorough research. They still could not get much information on the topic. It was only after several attempts at deep investigation did they find out anything at all about such happenings.

“A small beggar child was killed under Ji Rong’s orders for the offense of bumping into her?”

All these investigated results implied something insidious.

Proving that... it was not just Ji Wu Hai who was brutal. Even both his wife and daughter had a vicious side to them. They just happened to be able to hide their ferocious natures well. Yet Dragon Mountain Manor investigators were able to even uncover the death of a beggar child by intense research and detailed scrutiny.

“This cannot go on.”

“I’ll not allow Qing Shi to be with this kind of woman,” Xue Ying immediately made his decision.

A scheming woman, adept at lying, was rather savage at her core... compared to her, his little brother was too innocent and naive. Even when the someone schemed with the intention of killing Qing Shi, his innocent younger brother would still not dare to act.

.....

That afternoon.

Xue Ying sat on the roof of the castle. His spirit and the nature were being united as one, allowing him to feel the profoundness of nature.

“En?” Xue Ying suddenly opened his eyes, looking upon the gates at the outer section of the castle.

“It’s Miss Ji Rong?”

“Please come in.”

The soldiers moved aside, allowing Ji Rong to enter the castle.

Ji Rong smiled sweetly as she entered, though she felt a rising uneasiness in her heart. Usually, Qing Shi would come and find her during the day, yet today, he did not come and look for her at all? Was it because of the matter regarding the clash with that noble young master? Ji Rong decided to come and find out what exactly had happened in order to let Qing Shi know she cared for him.

“Ji Rong,” At one of the corridors, a black-robed Xue Ying stood.

Ji Rong was startled, though she recovered quickly, “Big brother Xue Ying.”

“Do you still remember the beggar who died tragically six years ago?” Xue Ying coldly said.

Ji Rong’s heart trembled.

How did he know? Only a very few knew about this matter.

“Big brother Xue Ying,” Ji Rong looked up at Xue Ying., The cold-piercing eyes of his made her fluster nervously.

One with the World gave the user a powerful spiritual strength. Being stared at by him was akin to an ant being stared at by a gigantic dragon.

This was an instinctive level terror.

Ji Rong became even more alarmed.

“I will not care about your matters, but regarding my brother, you best leave his side,” Xue Ying said, “I’ll give you three days to do this. With your scheming ability, I believe this could be done easily, ending this affair of yours with my brother on a good note.

“You better listen to my words, otherwise, I’ll do something that is much

worse than whatever you can imagine.” Xue Ying coldly stated.

Under the spiritual power’s pressure.

Under the threat of Xue Ying who now knew of some of the hidden matters behind her past, she felt an immense terror.

If Qing Shi was an innocent little brat, then his brother was someone too frightening. If she did not accept, he would kill her! One must know she now stood in the presence of a Spear Arts fanatic who had actually exterminated the entire Bent Blade Union with a long spear when he was a year younger than Qing Shi – at 15.

## Book 3: Chapter 6 – Break up

---

Although she was afraid, Ji Rong still hastily explained, “Brother Xue Ying, you’ve misunderstood. It was my family’s servant who killed that little beggar. I didn’t learn about this deed until after it was done.”

“You don’t have to explain this to me,” Xue Ying coldly said, “I want you to leave my brother’s side. This is an order!”

He only looked at the facts.

No need to listen to empty words. The Dragon Mountain Manor report was evidence enough to show that this Ji Wu Hai and Ji Rong, in fact their entire family, were very adept at deception.

“I... “ Ji Rong paused, there were tears in her eyes.

“You have three days’ time.” Xue Ying turned away, “If you have not broken up after three days, I can help you! But my method... will be more direct!”

Xue Ying started practicing frantically with his spear when he was eight. During this period of practice, he was hurt and had cried numerous time, yet he persevered. Such intense training also tempered his will. What incredible unwavering will did he now possess after enduring such training? How could just a few words from Ji Rong fool him? Even with Kong You Yue, he just felt angry because she betrayed his trust for her. After that he quickly and resolutely cut off any ties with her, discarding any feelings he had previously had for her.

Xue Ying’s approach was always very simple when handling any matter – strict with himself and stricter with his enemy!

“I understand.” Ji Rong could only agree while looking at Xue Ying’s back.

Step by step, Ji Rong approached Qing Shi’s residence.

She was wondering, what should she do?

“Dong Bo Xue Ying really cherishes his brother. I have to try to make Qing Shi stand on my side, to make Dong Bo Xue Ying feel some fear?” Ji Rong pondered, “No! This Dong Bo Xue Ying is very determined. He will not be easily persuaded

by my little trick. I'm afraid that he might easily deceive his little brother and secretly destroy my Ji Clan!"

"What should I do?"

"I've still not found out how much inheritance their parents left behind! I've still haven't achieved anything!"

Depend on Qing Shi?

But surely the bond between Qing Shi and his brother was extremely closer. Even if Qing Shi currently stood at her side, he would eventually still stand with his brother in the future.

"Damn, damn...!" No matter what, Ji Rong couldn't think of a way to continue to stay beside Qing Shi.

Because Xue Ying was the kind of person who directly used power to subdue others.

Who would dare to disobey him?

Xue Ying would immediately kill them! Every noble clan within Water Rites town was previously afraid of the Bent Blade Union, but Xue Ying? He exterminated them when he was just 15 years old. His power now was definitely even more frightening than before.

"I can only give up."

Ji Rong quickly decided.

.....

"Ji Rong, I'm really happy you've come to see me. Did you know? When we went out yesterday and provoked a disaster, my brother grounded me for three days. That's why during these three days, I couldn't see you." Qing Shi went out from the castle's main building and walk side by side with Ji Rong on the pavement inside the castle's area. "I can't blame my brother. That dead nobleman looks like he is from some big family. That time, I didn't mean to kill him, but the area of effect and power of my spell were too powerful. I didn't have any way to control it. Who knows that young master was so unlucky to directly be struck by the lightning."



“It’s not your fault.” assured Ji Rong, “At that time, you would’ve been killed if we hadn’t fought back. I also couldn’t imagine how tragic my life would’ve become if they had managed to ravish me...”

“No one can hurt you.” Qing Shi firmly held Ji Rong’s hand, “I promise.”

Ji Rong just smiled without speaking.

“What’s wrong? Are you in a bad mood?” Qing Shi could feel his girlfriend’s mood, “Is it because I killed that nobleman? Rest assured, my brother can deal with it. With him taking care of it, everything will be fine.”

“It’s not about that,” Said Ji Rong.

“What’s the problem?” Asked Qing Shi, “Tell me. If you tell me, maybe I can help you with it.”

“Qing Shi, let’s break up,” Ji Rong suddenly said.

Qing Shi was dumbfounded.

It was like a bucket of cold water poured over his head, completely drenching him.

“You’re joking.” Qing Shi smiled, “This kind of joke isn’t funny at all.”

“No, it’s real. Let’s break up.” Ji Rong looked at Qing Shi.

Qing Shi looked at Ji Rong’s eyes. He saw she was serious... she really wants to break up!

“Why?” Qing Shi couldn’t accept it, “Yesterday we were so happy, and everything was fine. Although there was a conflict with that nobleman, it wasn’t related to our relationship. Why do you want to break up so suddenly?”

“I love someone else. Is this reason good enough?” Said Ji Rong.

“What is the real reason? Say it, tell me...” Qing Shi anxiously looked at Ji Rong.

Ji Rong lowered her head.

Silence.

“Say it.” Qing Shi was very apprehensive He felt like he would go crazy.

“Your brother is your most important family member, right?” uttered Ji Rong

Qing Shi frowned.

He suddenly had a premonition...

“Your brother had my past investigated,” explained Ji Rong, “He thinks that I’m not a good girl and do not deserve to be together with you. He already gave me an ultimatum to leave you.”

Qing Shi froze.

“With your brother opposing our relationship. Could you defy him?” Ji Rong looked at Qing Shi.

“I, I...” Qing Shi gritted his teeth, “ Whom I like, my brother can’t meddle with.”

“Don’t lie. Do you think I know what kind of relationship you and your brother have? Who you like, you still have to get your brother approval and blessings.”

Qing Shi panicked.

If his brother was really completely against their relationship, what he could do?

“There must be some misunderstanding, why would he want to separate us? You said that he investigated you. Does he think that you are not a good girl? How come?” Qing Shi asked, “There must be some misunderstanding.”

Ji Rong sneered, “When I was ten, I played with my servants in Water Rites Town. We bumped into a little beggar. The incident soiled my clothes. Of course I was angry and upset that my clothes were dirty so I despondently went home. After I left the location where the beggar was, one of my servants returned there and beat the little beggar until they died. I only learned of this later on. Of course, I was very upset about what my servant had done, but the deed was already accomplished.”

“But your brother thinks that I ordered the servant to beat the beggar. He thinks that the ten year old me was very cruel and not a good person.” There were tears in Ji Rong’s eyes. “What could I do? I came to Snowrock Mountain to become Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi’s apprentice when I was eleven. For so many years, I’ve been living in Snowrock Mountain. Do you still not know what kind of

person I am?

“But your brother thinks I’m not a good girl, and he ordered me to leave you,” whispered Ji Rong, “When he was young, your brother had already become the number one expert within Water Rites Town. He’s now even more untouchable. I do not dare to oppose your brother, and neither does my Ji Clan. So... we can only break up.”

Qing Shi was extremely distressed and said, “How... how can my brother be like this?”

If Xue Ying opposed, the Ji Clan would definitely back down.

“You stay here, I will look for my brother!” said Qing Shi, “You wait for me, I will definitely persuade my brother.”

“It’s futile.” Ji Rong shook her head.

“You wait for me here.”

Qing Shi turned around and left. He immediately ran to the martial grounds.

.....

Inside the martial grounds.

Qing Shi directly entered the martial ground. Xue Ying, dressed in black, was practicing his spear technique inside the martial ground. The fluttering snowflakes around the the spears looked ethereal. There was no excessive violent force, and the spear even seems to become one with the heavens.

“Brother!” Qing Shi couldn’t wait and immediately shouted.

*Shua.*

Xue Ying stopped his practice. The spear’s shadow disappeared when he retracted his spear. He turned around and smiled when he saw his brother, “Oh, Qing Shi, what’s wrong?”

In front of his brother, Qing Shi was somewhat restrained. He hesitated for a moment then gritted his teeth, “Did you order Ji Rong to separate from me?”

Xue Ying was surprised.

Looks like this Ji Rong still did not want to give up. Xue Ying had given her three

days of time to break up, yet he hadn't expected her to do it so soon.

"Yes, it was me." Xue Ying nodded.

"Why, why are you doing this?" Qing Shi was suppressing his anger, he wanted to hear his brother's explanation.

"She's not suitable for you," replied Xue Ying.

"Not suitable? Just because she involved with the death of a beggar child when she was a little girl?" retorted Qing Shi.

Xue Ying frowned, "Just because a minor bump, she ordered her servant to secretly torture a little beggar to death. At that time, how old was she? With this kind of temperament, how could she suitable for you?"

"Haha, ridiculous. Brother, at that time, she was only ten years old. That was six years ago. Brother, are you sure what was written in the report is the truth?" snapped Qing Shi, "The one who killed the beggar was her servant. Moreover, you also said 'secretly tortured a little beggar'! How could you be sure that it was done under Ji Rong's order and not the servant's initiative?"

"Of course there were other evidences." Xue Ying frowned and then flipped his hand. A dossier appear on his palm. He skimmed through it before pulling out a piece of paper from the dossier.

This piece of paper contained the conclusion based on all the evidence uncovered.

On this sheet was written that Dragon Mountain Manor suspected that the Ji Clan was believer of Demon God. This kind of evidence couldn't be revealed to his brother now. Qing Shi right now was too hot headed. If he leaked it to Ji Rong, then the Ji Clan would be alerted!

"You see, this is Dragon Mountain Manor investigation report about Ji Clan. You read it, and then you decide by yourself whether she suitable to become your wife." Xue Ying gave the dossier to his brother.

Qing Shi suppressed his anger and took the dossier.

He carefully read the report.

Some of the content was like Ji Rong had previously said. It stated how her

uncle had kicked her family out of their home and how they had to temporarily reside at her mother's family house. It also stated how she was bullied and looked down when she was a child and so on. But some of the content was new to Qing Shi, like how Ji Rong's father Ji Wu Hai was behind the destruction of her uncle's family and her mother's Yan Clan. All the many deaths in her uncle's family and Yan Clan were directly related to Ji Wu Hai!

Reading the report, Qing Shi also felt disgust towards Ji Wu Hai.

"I've finished read it." Qing Shi closed the dossier.

"And?" asked Xue Ying.

"There was nothing," snapped Qing Shi, "The report was very detailed, but can you trust this report completely? And if it is real, the person in the wrong was Ji Rong's father, Ji Wu Hai! What does this have anything to do with Ji Rong? She always being bullied when she stayed at Yan Clan."

"Moreover... "

"Ji Rong was really pitiable. Before she ten years old, her life had become miserable. After her father acquired wealth, she only had less than a year to live as a young noble lady before she came to master's door," raged Qing Shi, "She only had less than a year lived in luxury, while all the other times, she was always being bullied. When she studied under master's tutelage, she lived pitifully as well. Such a pitiable person, how could you accuse her as a vicious person?"

Xue Ying looked grim.

Based on Dragon Mountain Manor analysis...

It isn't that easy for one to become wealthy. The Dragon Mountain Manor believed that Ji Wu Hai became a Demon God believer when he was scorned by Yan Clan. Their family was so miserable so they became believers of a Demon God. Furthermore, there was some possibility that they were fanatics. After receiving some sort of high-level trust from the holy ground of the Demon God, coupled with Ji Wu Hai's trading capability, he started to utilize the Demon God influence in accumulating enough wealth to make a comeback.

But this was analysed only based on the clues discovered by the Dragon Mountain Manor Intelligence experts.

There wasn't enough evidence!

"She's always together with me at Great Mage's building. I know what kind of person she is. Even if her father is a wicked person, what significance does he have? Don't say that our Dong Bo Clan is afraid of this one merchant?" Qing Shi continued, "Brother, I do not know her father, but Ji Rong is innocent! She is the first girl I like, and maybe also the last one. Can't you be more lenient?"

Xue Ying's expression slightly changed.

'Maybe also the last one', this Ji Rong really made his brother fall for her madly.

Xue Ying solemnly said, "Qing Shi, the Dragon Mountain Manor report's has high credibility. They have sufficient evidence so they dare to write it down."

"She has lived in the Grand Mage's building since she was young. Do you think I don't know what kind of person she is?" roared Qing Shi.

"Every mage is intelligent. Even though they might be a youngster, you cannot underestimate them," reasoned Xue Ying. He knew this as he was just recently tricked by Kong You Yue.

"I believe her," replied Qing Shi.

"Fine!" Said Xue Ying coldly, "Both of you have to break up, but I will only give you three years time. During these three years, you must break up with her. I can ask Grand Mage Bai Yuan Zhi to send this Ji Rong back to her home. Three years, see clearly Ji Clan's disposition. If she really is a good girl, I will not forbid you to be together with her. But if she exposes her true colors, at that time you will understand why I'm doing this."

Knowing Dragon Mountain Manor capability, Xue Ying was also suspicious of Ji Wu Hai. Three years time was enough to find out the truth.

He gave them three years because he didn't want his brother to oppose him too much.

Looking at how much affection his brother had towards Ji Rong, Xue Ying was afraid if he completely cut his brother's hope, Qing Shi would go crazy.

"Three years?" Qing Shi glared, "Three years is too long. You also want to drive

her out? Brother... You, how could you be so cruel? To be like this to her? This is between Ji Rong and me. You say break up then we must break?"

"Definitely have to break up!" Xue Ying didn't expect that Qing Shi couldn't endure for three years. He became angered; he was absolutely unable to tolerate his brother being together with a Demon God believer. If she was really a Demon God believer, it would be like pushing his brother to an abyss. Who knows what a Demon God believer dared to do to his brother? If it really happens, then it will be too late for regrets.

"Both of you must break up." Xue Ying coldly said.

"No!" raged Qing Shi

"No one can oppose it. You know, with just one sentence from me, Bai Yuan Zhi can expel Ji Rong. I also could throw The Ji Clan out of Water Rites Town," Xue Ying said coldly, "Even if you do not want to listen, you still have to obey. This matter, is not for you to decide."

"You, you..."

Qing Shi felt his blood rising to his head, his eyes were red and his heart was pounding.

His elder brother really had such capabilities to destroy the relationship between him and Ji Rong and he was powerless to resist it.

Qing Shi looked at Xue Ying, his eyes made Xue Ying's heart quiver. Qing Shi's voice trembled and he hoarsely shouted, "Brother, you are my brother! I grew up with a proud feeling towards you! Although I couldn't remember our parents, but I always felt you were the best brother! But I was wrong. I never imagined you could be like this. You let me down. You really, really make me disappointed. I never imagined my brother was this kind of person."

"You're arrogant!"

"You let me down!"

When it came to the lives of his family, he was willing to use his life to protect them. This philosophy was his words.

Xue Ying felt his heart clenched.

His brother was disappointed in him?

“I never expected you were this kind of person! My brother is actually a man like this!” From the beginning, tears were streaming down his face. Qing Shi turned his body and ran out from the ground. Zong Ling was standing outside the gate. He apparently came because he heard the two brothers quarrel.

With a face full of tears, Qing Shi ran past Zong Ling.

.....

Xue Ying's heart was in pain. His usually steady hand were trembling slightly as they twitched in torment.

His heart really ached.

Really...

“I grew up feeling so proud of you!”

“But I was wrong!”

“I never expected you were this kind of person! My brother is actually a man like this!”

His brother's voice echoed in his ears.

Xue Ying's breath was chaotic. At this time, Zong Ling approached and asked, “Xue Ying?”

“Help me watch Qing Shi. Remember, for these next three days, he can't leave the castle. If you are unable to stop him and he insists to go out, just report it to me. I will stop him!” Said Xue Ying.

Zong Ling looked at Xue Ying.

Before, when he stood up, Xue Ying gave the impression he was like a tall mountain, steady as a spear. Such steadiness inspiring fear. Xue Ying exuded a strong and grandiose aura.

But this Xue Ying, his back seemed bent, his unshakeable grandeur all but gone. When did he become so fragile?

“Xue Ying?” Zong Ling examined Xue Ying's face.



Xue Ying's face seemed pale, his eyes... were there tears?

"Just now, I heard the conversation. Don't be sad, Qing Shi, this child, never experienced any setback. Wait until he grows up, he will understand your heart." Zong Ling consoled him, "You treasured him since he was a child. For him to get a good teacher, you disregarded your life and entered the Mountain Range of Desolation. He will later understand how good you are to him. It is fine, don't be sad."

"I'm okay, look after Qing Shi."

Xue Ying turned around and left.

.....

On the castle's roof.

Xue Ying sat alone, drinking wine and watching the vast surrounding.

His brother was very sad. Since his childhood, this was the first time his brother had ever been so sad.

Qing Shi's piercing words earlier really hurt his feelings, But now, he was worried about his brother.

"After this is over, everything will be fine," Xue Ying faintly said. He felt the moisture in his eyes when he rubbed them, "Ha Ha... After so many years, I never expected to be able to still cry."

He drank the wine.

A mountain breeze blew.

Xue Ying didn't know what was in his mind. He just sat there and drank the wine.

The sky gradually became dark, the night was falling.

When it was time, Xue Ying went to eat dinner. He hoped he might see his brother at dinner, but... his brother didn't attend dinner. After eating, he went to the study alone to read books.

.....

At nightfall, the moonlight hung high, pouring its light over the earth.

Among the clouds high in the sky.

“Hu.”

A black refiner flying ship already arrived in the sky above Snowrock Castle.

---

|

## Book 3: Chapter 7 – Sneaking In

---

Aboard the flying refiner ship, one of the crew members respectfully said, “Master, we have arrived at Snowrock Castle.”

Xiang Pang Yun, who sat meditatively, opened his eyes. Wind Devil and the three others who were sitting beside him stood up.

“Big Brother, we’ll go down,” cheered Wind Devil

“En.” Xiang Pang Yun faintly nodded.

Wind Devil and the three others quickly exited the cabin to the deck. One of them, a white haired mage with a purple staff, started casting some spells.

A burst of light shot from the staff and landed on the bodies of Wind Devil and the other two.

After several blessing spells.

The air around Wind Devil and others suddenly became completely isolated. An invisible barrier encircled them, and the light around them seemed distorted. Back when Xue Ying and company had snuck in into the Lu Clan’s castle, they were too quick to be discovered by that castle’s guard. Relatively speaking, this flock of assassins were much more proficient, because this was their bread and butter.

“Let’s go,” stated Wind Devil.

*Swish, swish, swish, swish.*

Four people jumped down from the flying ship in unison.

Their mage’s magic power encircled them and significantly slowed their falling speed. The descent of several hundred meters took a while, and the group quietly landed in a vacant lot next to the castle’s main building. These assassins knew that they would easily be found out if they directly landed at the main building. It was because the main building was usually heavily guarded and even had several spells and magic arrays guarding it.

As for the vacant lot, with just a glance, anyone could see that it was empty.

“Third brother, you stay here while three of us will sneak inside,” ordered Wind Devil. “Be careful! Immediately retreat if either of you encounter an alarm array. I will finish the mission.”

“Rest assured, second brother.” The two male and female Silver Moon knights nodded. Both of them were already accustomed to this kind of mission.

*Swish, swish, swish.*

The three of them quickly moved closer to the main building, their bodies surrounded with magic. Even if someone stood beside these three people, it would be hard for an ordinary person to see these assassins on this kind of dark night. As for day time, ordinary people could only see their blurry image.

.....

Inside the study.

Xue Ying was trying to read a book, but his heart was unsettled. He just flipped through the book.

“Eh?” Xue Ying suddenly frowned.

An expert who already achieve One with the World state...

Normally, their spiritual energy was linked with the world, and they could detect every slight movement within a certain distance. If they intentionally focused their spiritual energy to assimilate with the world, they could sense the vast area around them. Maybe such an expert could even detect that refiner flying ship high in the sky. But ordinary people couldn't always assimilate their spiritual energy with the world.

Because they needed to focused their spiritual energy to completely unite with the world.

“Indeed, there are people coming. That noble clan's revenge is coming so fast!” There was a glint of coldness in Xue Ying's eyes. Since his parents had been taken away when he was a child, many years had passed before any outsider dared to invade Snowrock Castle. The mysterious young master had just died not that long ago, and now some people were already invading his castle. Xue Ying

didn't believe these intruders had no connection with that noble young master.

*Squeak.*

Xue Ying open the door and exited the library.

.....

Wind Devil quietly snuck through the castle's main building corridor.

Suddenly.

*Peng!*

The castle and several hundred meters surrounding it were enveloped by a terrifying force. Whether the Silver Moon Mage who was waiting at the vacant lot or the other two knights, and even Wind Devil, all of them were surrounded and completely suppressed by the World Energy. This kind of complete suppression made everyone's face frightened.

Once he was suppressed, the Silver Moon Mage was unable to move the world energy. He basically was trampled upon and unable to cast any powerful spell.

"To hell with it! That Dong Bo Xue Ying is only 22 years old and is already a Legend rank who is able to enter the realm of One with the World?" The other two male and female Silver Moon knights were also so frightened that their legs became soft. There was a huge difference in strength difference between them and a Legend ranker. Moreover they also suppressed by the World Energy. As long as Xue Ying want to deal with them, it was possible they would die with just with a blink of his eye.

Both of them panicked and felt their legs weaken.

"Flee, flee."

"Hope he didn't intend to deal with us and instead went to deal with Wind Devil. Wind Devil is strong enough to hold him for a moment until big brother comes. When big brother arrives, we can preserve our lives." The two male and female Silver Moon knights rapidly withdrew.

The three of them panicked.

As for the Wind Devil, although he didn't fear, he was surprised.

One with the World? It had been many years before a single 22 years old Legend ranker had ever appeared from Tranquil Sun Province. This kind of abnormal thing really did happen.” Suppressed by the World Energy, Wind Devil was completely stunned. Having stepped into Legend rank at 22 years old, not to mention being from Tranquil Sun Province, even when you looked the entire Dragon Mountain Empire, this accomplishment was still something extremely abnormal.

Actually, the Bloodshed Tavern only had their suspicion. Dragon Mountain Manor had more information, but they didn’t directly see the battle. They also wondered if perhaps there was another cause for those scars left by fighting inside the Lu clan’s castle. So they only estimated that there was 50% probability for Xue Ying to be a Legend Ranker. Even if Xue Ying really had Legend rank combat ability, it was more likely that he had some powerful refiner armor or something similar.

They didn’t dare to believe that a remote place like this Water Rites Town could produce a 22 years old Legend rank. Depending on one owns ability to reached Legend rank? It was too hard!

One with the World? It was so hard to achieve!

Awakened Primordial bloodline? It was also so hard to awaken!

Even for the Dragon Mountain Empire, even if one were to be trained by a supreme level peak Transcendent, it was really, really hard to cultivate to the Legend rank at the age of 22 years.

“I already practiced so many years and still couldn’t reach One with the World! After my body went through a transformation and I was bestowed a refiner treasure by big brother, then I could posses a combat ability comparable to a Legend rank.” Wind Devil was shocked, “But this Dong Bo Xue Ying actually relied on his own strength to reach One with the World?

There were several people who relied on external strength and were barely able to reach Legend rank.

Like Xue Ying’s foe, Mo Yang Cheng Bai or this Wind Devil who used this kind of method.

But Wind Devil was strict with himself. After his body was transformed by a Grand Master Refiner and he got refiner treasure, he also tempered himself with many life and death situations over a long period of time, so his strength was more powerful than Mo Yang Cheng Bai's. So when fighting, there's hardly any difference between him and a real Legend ranker.

"Hu hu..."

Oppressed by the World Energy, the air became twisted. Illuminated by a fire crystal lamp, a black clothed youth figure appear in the corridor.

Wind Devil looked at the person in front of him.

The air was twisted so the other person's appearance was blurred. But looking at the other person's rough figure and age, Wind Devil knew that he precisely was Dong Bo Xue Ying!

"Who ordered you to come?" the black clothed youngster asked them.

"Flee."

Wind Devil didn't want to fight.

This was because he didn't have any chance of killing a true Legend ranker! He just needed to buy enough time until his big brother came.

"Oh?" The black clothed youngster coldly said when he saw that the opponent wanted to escape.

"Not saying? Then just die."

*Swa!*

Out of nowhere, a spear appeared in the black clothed youngster's hand. The whole spear turned into an arc. When one saw the curved spear, one could see how powerful his strength was.

"So fast!" Wind Devil was startled. He turned around and swung his bent blade to resist. He couldn't completely block the spear, and could only depend on his instinct to cross his bent blade to block.

*Clang!*

The spear's tip with frightening strength and rotating force made both of Wind

Devil's hand feel numb. He couldn't help but fall back, and it made him display a frightened expression.

Yes, that was right.

Although it was only a short time after Xue Ying reached One with the World, but during this short period of time he was always absorbing World Energy to strengthen his body. His qi had already reached Silver Moon rank and his physical strength and speed had increased by 50%. Having One with the World to suppress his opponents and also perfecting the second stage of the Dark Ice Spear Technique, 'Blood Rain', even under normal conditions, his combat ability was more powerful than the last time when he activated his primordial bloodline and battled with the Demon God Emissary.

With this kind of power, even the Demon God Emissary would have been killed, even if he had used his forbidden technique.

How could this Wind Devil stop it?

"Too strong, how could it be like this..." His two blades hurriedly tried to blocked the second spear attack.

He could block the first spear attack, but the attack forced him to fall back.

Through sheer luck, Wind Devil could block the second attack. However, it made both of his hands go completely numb and his bent blade movement became disordered.

The third spear attack...

*"Pu!"*

Fast like lightning, the spear passed through the bent blade that was too slow in defending. In a flash, the spear, was thrust into and then withdrawn from Wind Devil's throat. The motion seemed like a light kiss given to him.

"I... I..." Wind Devil covered his throat with both hands in an attempt to stop the flowing blood, hoping to keep his life.

He never expected, that he would die so fast when he encountered a Legend ranker!

Xue Ying looked at the masked assassin who clutched his neck, "Still barely



able to block two spear attacks. Looks like he had Legend rank power.”

“Three ants left.” Xue Ying spread out the World Energy. Every movement of the other three assassins was under his observation. He could kill them any time he wanted.

## Book 3: Chapter 8 –

### Arrival

“Tell me! Who was it that sent you?” Xue Ying’s voice sounded beside the ears of the three murderers.

“Don’t know, we don’t know.”

“We’ve accepted the mission through Bloodshed Tavern, thus we do not know who it was that issued the order.” The three murderers experienced the utmost terror.

Xue Ying frowned.

Bloodshed Tavern’s mission? That noble young master’s clan actually set down a reward for this mission? Since it’s like that, then the chances of investigating the one who set down the mission would be almost impossible.

*Pu! Pu! Pu!*

Three cold rays flashed.

Under the shroud of One with the World’s and the cover of darkness, a tiny hole appeared above the brows of the three murderers’ wide-opened eyes.

“Since you found your way to my home, and are so useless, why would you still hope to escape with your life?” Xue Ying glanced at the three fallen bodies. Before this, he actually threw out three spindle-shaped darts that were purchased alongside the higher-quality short spears during his county visit! These darts were bought with consideration to their convenience of use when dealing with those weaker than him. Using short spears would totally not be worth the value. Xue Ying had paid for a whole box of these darts and then placed them in his storage treasure ring.

.....

On the refiner flying-ship in the night sky, Xiang Pang Yun currently overlooked

everything beneath him with a cold gaze.

*Om~~~*

Within that castle, pressure from One with the World could be felt. With the amazing eyesight of his, Xiang Pang Yun could clearly see, within the distorted air, a black-robed youth walked towards Wind Devil. As he followed closely, that youth's hand suddenly produced a long spear!

Within three moves of this youth's lightning fast strikes, Wind Devil had actually died!

"En?" Xiang Pang Yun's pupil contracted along with a twist of his lips. His blood-red eyes glowed unimaginably bright, "One with the World? At 22 years attaining the realm of One with the World? Killing Wind Devil in a single clash? Good, this is really too good. I'd never guessed that at this time I'd be so lucky in meeting such a rare plaything!

"At 22 years he has entered the realm of One with the World and possesses such strong combat capabilities! He has plenty of time for him to search for his own path, with an eighty to ninety percent chance of becoming a Transcendent.

"If the Dragon Mountain Manor was to confirm Dong Bo Xue Ying's true strength, I'm afraid that those groups of Transcendents would come invite such a monster.

"Or is it that he has already entered some Transcendent group?"

Xiang Pang Yun silently pondered.

Having lived for so long, naturally he would know of all these secrets.

In this world... existed Transcendents! Having an army of mortals was pointless to Transcendents. Instead, it could be said that the true rulers of the world were Transcendents!

As for the big six Transcendents' groups, they were precisely formed by Transcendents.

The empire? It had began decaying long ago!

The big six Transcendents' groups were really the true rulers of this entire world, especially so with their long lifespans! The Temple of the Earth God and

Bloodshed Tavern were two of the more special groups belonging to the big six.

“A future Transcendent, yet such a pity that you do not have that chance any longer!” Xiang Pang Yun’s eyes expressed extreme excitement.

“Wait for me here!” Xiang Pang Yun ordered.

“Yes, master.” The servants controlling the flying ship obeyed.

*Hu.*

Xiang Pang Yun landed with a single leap.

Even though it seemed a long time had passed, in actual fact, only a moment passed between Xiang Pang Yun’s self pondering and Wind Devil’s demise.

.....

On the inner grounds of the castle.

Having killed Wind Devil, Xue Ying looked uncertain at the corpse’s chest. On that chest was a strange-looking bronze heart-protective gear. On the heart-protective gear, there were lines that gave Xue Ying a strange feeling, “This bronze heart-protective gear seems to be one of the best refiner treasures I’ve ever seen.”

“En?” Xue Ying’s expression changed as he gazed into the sky.

High above, in the sky.

A crimson-robed brawny man with a face that looked like a knife had carved his features sped down at terminal velocity. His robe was fluttering, and he fell alongside a wave of blood-red Qi that could be seen with the naked eyes, centering around him.

Like a demon falling, Xue Ying immediately recognised the expert coming at him. The face of this expert had long ago been etched into his mind.

“Xiang Pang Yun?”

“Humph!” Xue Ying made up his mind immediately. He manipulated the world energy to directly clash against that blood-red wave of Qi, meeting in mid-air a hundred meters away. Peng~~~ The two surging forces rammed at each other. Because Xue Ying’s spirit strength was currently One with the World, right at the

moment when the two forces rammed, he could immediately feel the endless killing intent contained in that wave of blood-red Qi.

Kill! Kill! Kill!

Countless voices shouting for him to kill reverberated in his heart. Though Xue Ying was aghast at this method his opponent used, he could easily recover against this surge of killing intent with his stable mind. Furthermore, after achieving One with the World, his spirit strength had become even stronger after receiving the essence from nature. This killing intent was something he could ignore. However, any rankers of Silver Moon and below would generally fall down onto the ground after receiving such a substantial assault of killing intent.

“He actually united his killing intent and One with the World, into a single force? That blood-red wave Qi of his, not only does it contain forces of the heaven and earth, it also contains an attack that can actually kill.” Xue Ying felt surprised in his heart, “It’s known that this Xiang Pang Yun was a mad-man and a frightening killer. Solely judging on this killing intent of his, it is already so incredible!

“Xue Ying, what happened?”

“What is happening?” Many people within the castle were alarmed.

After all, when Xue Ying utilised the world energy, even the surrounding air was distorted. Even though these kinds of unseen forces did not injure his own people, it still alarmed them.

Also, during the exchange with Wind Devil, every time his long spear and the bent blade met, a loud collision sound resounded!

The harmless but still-felt forces and the loud sounds all alarmed the people in the castle.

Needless to say... Xue Ying’s utilisation of the world energy meeting with the blood-red wave Qi was even more frightful to those present. In this clash between two rankers, the control of the natural forces created thunder-like sound.

“Uncle Zong.” Xue Ying opened his mouth, being a Meteor knight, Zong Ling was the fastest to reach the side of Xue Ying.

“The bronze heart-protective gear on this person’s body is an extremely special refiner treasure,” Xue Ying said, “Uncle Zong, please take and examine it. You should be able to use something like this.”

The stronger a Legend ranker was, the less help any refiner treasure would be to them.

Zong Ling nodded, extending his hand in that split second to accept the bronze heart-protective gear. He then continued taking the other treasures, weapon, armour, *etc.* Yet suddenly —

*“Hong!!!”*

Xiang Pang Yun who had come down from several hundred meters above landed directly on the battlement of the inner castle. That blood-red wave Qi of his surged outwards, pressuring several soldiers beside the wall onto the ground, causing such terror that they even screamed out in horror. Those weaker soldiers were affected so much that their entire faces were pale like ghosts, and blood even oozed from their orifices.

Actually, world energy already had a suppressive power against Silver Moon knights and Meteor knights. Against all these mortal soldiers, their lives would even be threatened by it.

“In front of I, Xiang Pang Yun, you still dare to resist?” Xiang Pang Yun looked down upon his opponent, Xue Ying, “Dong Bo Xue Ying, you sure are daring.”

*“Hong hong hong~~~~~”*

Xue Ying manipulated the world energy as if it were an immense unseen cover, shrouding against the surrounding and clashing countless times against Xiang Pang Yun’s blood-red wave Qi.

“Xiang Pang Yun?” Zong Ling’s face immediately paled. That scary big demon? That Legend ranker who dominated the entire Azure River County for close to a hundred years?

“Uncle Zong, help me take care of Qing Shi.” Xue Ying said resolutely. With his control of the world energy, he could clearly view the confused-looking Qing Shi walking out of his residence.

“Yes.” Zong Ling did not carry on pillaging the bodies any longer. This could wait until after this situation was settled. Quickly, he leaped towards the third floor of the castle, landing beside Qing Shi.

“What happened?”

“This, what exactly happened?”

Qing Shi was even feeling hoodwinked.

He had previously been hugging his quilt, sleeping unhappily on his bed. For so many years, his brother had not ever treated him so fiercely. He hugged his quilt and had cried before eventually falling asleep.

The surging world energy, the loud noises in the clash of weapons, and that collision between two legend ranker’s world energy, as well as several horrible shrieks outside had woken Qing Shi, causing him to come out immediately from his room.

The moment he came out...

He saw his brother Xue Ying standing below with a body beside him and three other bodies some distance away.

At the same time, his surroundings seemed so strange.

The air around was distorted.

Standing on his brother’s side, a huge region of air was being covered by an unseen force. On the other side, standing on the battlement of the wall was a crimson-robed demon-looking man emitting out a wave of blood-red Qi. That blood-red wave Qi was clashing against the huge unseen cover.

As for that blood-red wave Qi, just by looking at it with his naked eyes, he could feel a building terror! Qing Shi’s experiences of tempering himself was not enough to keep him from turning pale at this sight..

“Uncle Zong, what happened?” Qing Shi was somewhat panic, turning to the closest person he could trust – Uncle Zong.

“It’s Xiang Pang Yun!” Zong Ling said solemnly, “It’s the scariest killer in the entire Azure River County. He’s even scarier than the Si Clan’s ancestor, Si Liang Hong! Even if it was a Legend ranker fighting against him, most of them could

not even last for more than move!

“What?” Qing Shi was aghast.

Legend ranker, how strong was that?

In front of Xiang Pang Yun, dying from a single move? One must know that the reason why the Si Clan could control the entire Azure River County was because of that ancestor of theirs! Yet Xiang Pang Yun was even stronger than the ancestor of Si Clan?

“Dong Bo Xue Ying, I came today because of a mission given by the Bloodshed Tavern. It was a mission to take away your brother, Dong Bo Qing Shi’s life.” Xiang Pang Yun had a strange look on his face as he stood on top of the wall battlement. His voice resounded in the air, “I do not care about killing you at all. Obediently step aside for me to kill your little brother and I’ll turn away after I complete it. After all, the Bloodshed Tavern did not give me any bounty for killing you.”

Xiang Pang Yun did this deliberately.

This time, the mission was actually accepted by Wind Devil. Even when he, Xiang Pang Yun killed Qing Shi, he would also not have the chance to acquire the bounty!

The reason why he would say this was purely to disrupt Xue Ying’s mood. If this could cause him to waver in his decision, then all the better it would be. Being an openly-publicised killer, he killed not because of any bounty! Killing was actually a pleasure for this madman.

“Kill me? Bloodshed Tavern’s mission?” Qing Shi stood in amazement. This scary situation was all because someone was sent to kill him?

.....

“Kill my little brother?” Xue Ying glared at Xiang Pang Yun, before he coldly said, “Unless I, Dong Bo Xue Ying die, nobody else will be permitted to harm my little brother! Even you, Xiang Pang Yun!”

“Big brother!”

Standing by the railing on the castle’s main building, Qing Shi felt sour after



seeing all of this. Looking down at the blurrish shadow figure of his brother behind that distorted air, it was as if he saw the same shadow that had been with him all the time since he was young. That immovable mountain that would always protect him.

“For your little brother, you are even willing to sacrifice your life. That’s so touching. Since that’s the case... then you can just die!”

Xiang Pang Yun suddenly looked grim, before shouting out.

*Hu.*

A blood-coloured shadow suddenly rushed out from the wall battlement of the castle. A biting cold light of sword flew across the sky. Those around felt terror simply by seeing this snow-white blade of light flying across countless meters in the sky.

“Big brother.” Beside Zong Ling, Qing Shi was so nervous that he began trembling.

## Book 3: Chapter 9 – A Battle Between Experts

---

The snow-white blade of light that cut across the air came at Xue Ying in a split second. Xiang Pang Yun's expression was ferocious.

"Just this?" Xue Ying's long spear fiercely jabbed out, *Hu*, the spearhead was akin to a rising dragon, arousing a fury as it chopped right at the snow-white blade light.

*Peng!*

The two strong attacks clashed, creating a resounding boom that formed waves of after-effects in all directions discernible by the naked eye. The world's energy worked against these waves and attenuated them, eventually causing them to disappear over the distance.

The force of this clash caused Xue Ying's legs to be hammered into the ground until the surface was level with his knees. By simply forcing out strength in his legs, the mud and gravel covering his legs flew apart. As for Xiang Pang Yun, he borrowed this rebounding force and landed on the earth.

"You have some strength!" Xiang Pang Yun grinned. With amazing speed, he suddenly produced a blood-coloured dart in his left hand.

*Xiu!*

The dart shot out of his hand, leaving a contrail in its wake, directly aimed at the nervous-looking Qing Shi on top of the castle's main building.

*Chi chi chi chi~~~* The dart was originally as fast as lightning, yet under the world energy which Xue Ying shrouded his little brother, Uncle Zong and Uncle Tong, it slowed down. Not all Legend rankers had the same level of power. Some were stronger and some were weaker. Yet the world energy used by Xue Ying and Xiang Pang Yun were exactly on the same level and thus, neither could gain an advantage over the other.

If one armored his heart in an iron-clad protection, the opponent would never have a chance of overcoming it.

*Chi chi chi~~~* the world energy hampered the dart that streamed toward Qing Shi, drastically reducing its speed. Coupled with the additional ‘push force’, the dart was sent off-target. Xue Ying clearly felt the entire arc the dart traveled.

*Peng!*

The dart shot onto the distant wall on the main building of the castle, missing Qing Shi and his uncles by more than three meters.

“It is already well-known that the top expert of Azure River County is you, Xiang Pang Yun, yet you still use my little brother to distract me.” Xue Ying laughed, “Totally despicable.”

“Tsk tsk tsk, even till now, you are so insolent. I’ll be sure to convince you now.” Xiang Pang Yun brandished his sword once again, with lightning speed.

The sword was fast.

Yet Xue Ying’s spear techniques were equally as fast!

*Dang dang dang.*

The two of them turned into shadows as they exchanged moves. The pace was constantly changing, and Xiang Pang Yun relentlessly attacked attacked, and attacked! He constantly moved forward, reducing the distance between himself and Xue Ying.

*‘Retreat, retreat, retreat!’* Xue Ying’s one thought was to retreat!

As the saying goes, every inch longer would represent every inch stronger. Because the spear was, in fact, a long weapon... it precisely required a certain distance between opponents. Only then could Xue Ying display the superiority of a spear. If he were to stick closely with his opponent, then obviously, the one using the sword, Xiang Pang Yun, would have a huge advantage. Xiang Pang Yun relentlessly attacked, pressing forward, attempting to get closer to Xue Ying. Xue Ying constantly retreated to keep his distance.

*Sou Sou Sou!!!*

How fast exactly was their speed?

One was constantly advancing while the other was constantly retreating.

Just a few simple exchanges were completed at different locations – on the walls of the castle and even outside the castle.

“Fast, fast, fast! Let’s hurry over to see what will happen.” Qing Shi was anxious and nervous.

“No, we stay.” Tong San who was beside him hurriedly replied.

“Qing Shi, let’s just stay here and watch,” Zong Ling added, “The terrain here is quite high, allowing us to have some a good view of the battle. Also, if things were to go wrong, we could always escape using the underground tunnel beneath the main building! If we are too close to the battle, with the battle reaching such a level between your big brother and Xiang Pang Yun... I’m afraid just a small mistake and simply any Silver Moon rankers would die.”

“En.” Qing Shi’s fists were clenched so tight that even his knuckles turned white. At this moment, he hated himself for not cultivating rigorously in the past. Now, he could not even help at all!

In the past, his big brother had told him about how he should quietly cultivate so that in the future, they could save their parents! Even though he had tried his best to cultivate by gritting his teeth and attempting to persevere, his attempts only lasted for a short period of time. To tell the truth... parents symbolised something special, and not being able to remember his own parents, he did not know of their importance. Without having any impression of them, he could not persevere in cultivating, giving in to a lackadaisical lifestyle soon after.

Yet at this moment—

He felt the anxiety of the situation in front of him, precisely because the person in danger was his big brother!

“My big brother is very formidable, and I believe he will win. He must win.” Qing Shi stood by the railings, looking at the distant battle outside the walls of the castle between two extremely fast shadows. He could not fundamentally see their battle; he could only see a continuous string of blurs.

.....

*Peng! Peng! Peng!*

*Dang! Dang! Dang!*

Sometimes, low-rumbling sounds of ponderous colliding strikes could be heard, Other times, the clean and crisp clanging sounds could be heard. Both sides were utilising different strengths, attacking and defending at various times, causing distinctive resounding clashing sounds. At the same time, both sides also manipulated the world energy, one of them colorless, the other a blood-red wave Qi. The energies collided over and over again.

Xue Ying furiously retreated a few steps, his expression solemn.

“Yi, we’re already outside your clan’s castle?” The corners of Xiang Pang Yun’s mouth twisted in mockery as he looked over this area approximately 1.6 kilometers outside the Snowrock castle, “Tut tut tut, you sure are formidable, retreating all the way while exchanging moves with me... and actually leading me out of the castle. Are you afraid of our battle harming those you love? Your dear friends?”

“Don’t you feel even sadness or anger when your men die?” Xue Ying suddenly asked.

He could not sense any agony or fury from Xiang Pang Yun after the deaths of Wind Devil and the other three assassins.

“Angry? What is there to be angry about? When one decides to become a killer, one must be prepared to die. Furthermore, is there any relation between their deaths and me?” Xiang Pang Yun spoke casually, “Even if I had not come with them on this mission, those four would have still died, right? But since I’ve come with them, I could at least avenge them. Those four should be grateful to me as their big brother, Haha...”

“Take revenge? You are quite confident.” Xue Ying sneered. The short exchange before allowed Xue Ying to conclude that Xiang Pang Yun had a slight upper hand in his combat power! Even if this Xiang Pang Yun had some other hidden powerful methods which he did not use yet, Xue Ying himself still had his Primordial Bloodline.

Also, according to the Dragon Mountain Book’s description by some experts...

Xue Ying felt that he himself could enter the top two to three thousand rankers

within the book even before achieving One with the World. Now, after having comprehended One with the World, his fleshy body had become even stronger, having received world energy. This absorption of world energy caused his overall combat power to significantly rise. Furthermore, after mastering the 'Blood Rain' technique... he should now be within the top thousand rankers! Compared to Si Liang Hong or Xiang Pang Yun, the differences between him and them would be quite small.

Winning the battle might be hard. Yet if the opponent wants to kill him? The chances of them actually winning would be low.

Of course, all of this were estimations based on an analysis of the information and statistics available. Whether a person lived or died would ultimately be determined by the actual results of a real fight.

"Your confidence in front of me is quite extraordinary," Xiang Pang Yun scoffed, "But of course, you have comprehended One with the World at 22 years old and even became a Great Spear Master with Power Perfectly as One! Tut tut tut, achieving power perfectly as one so quickly. Which of the two came first?"

"What do you think?" Xue Ying asked back.

The realm of Great Master with Power Perfectly as One was not easily attained.

Like that Demonic God Emissary, he had long comprehend One with the World, yet his strength had not reach the realm of Power Perfectly as One yet.

One with the World... was all about tempering one's spirit!

Power Perfectly as One... was more about reaching the peak of one's skill!

Many Legend rankers usually comprehended One with the World first, before using that strengthened spirit strength to understand one's fleshy body more clearly and eventually, attain power perfectly as one!

But it was different for Xue Ying. Xue Ying's path was not a path of tempering through life and death situations, instead, his path was about having a firm foundation, endlessly perfecting oneself with a frighteningly stable foundation, and a shocking comprehensive ability... all these allowed him to reach power perfectly as one forcefully. Even his spear techniques had reached some form of

extremity.

Having superb skills did not determine that one would have enough experiences in actual battles! That was why during Xue Ying's first attempt at entering the Mountain Range of Desolation, he was quite stiff in his movement during battle. But eventually, he became less panicky, allowing his true skills to be displayed.

.....

### The Dao of Techniques!

Reaching even higher than one's personal peak, that was how one achieves greater strength and a higher skill level. Reaching that stage, one's spear technique, sword technique, or any other technique would be even more extraordinary. Usually, only Transcendents were able to reach such a stage.

"If you were able to have your power perfectly as one before comprehending One with the World... then you will be more of a genius." Xiang Pang Yun's blood-red eyes flashed coldly, "But even if you become more of a genius, all your efforts will be useless since tonight, you must die!"

*Hu.*

Having said that, Xiang Pang Yun charged forward with his blood-red wave Qi.

Xue Ying reacted with his long spear springing out like a poisonous snake coming out of its hole, rapidly manifesting three attacks precisely at Xiang Pang Yun's face, heart and throat.

And at this juncture —

A large crowd of people came out from the Great Mage's Building on the peak of Snowrock Mountain — including the Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi and Kong You Yue. Actually, the vibrations caused within the Snowrock Castle had already alarmed those within the Great Mage's Building. However, as Xue Ying and Xiang Pang Yun battled outside the castle, the tremors felt in the surrounding area became greater, causing everyone from the Great Mage's Building to come out and take a look.

## Book 3: Chapter 10 – Stupefied

---

Kong You Yue was filled with apprehension as she walked out of the Great Mage's Building. A bunch of people had already crowded outside it.

"It's a fight between Legend rankers!"

"Two Legend rankers!"

This group of young mages was extremely excited.

Kong You Yue looked towards the distant place. Under the glow from the moonlight, there were constant clashes between the gigantic blood-red wave Qi and another distorted colorless hood! Even those sceneries from afar were being distorted by the collision between the energy from the world, encompassing an area of two to three hundred meters. '*Hong Hong Hong*' could be heard, as if it were the rumble of thunder. This monstrous power actually made Kong You Yue's heart tremble, after all, as a mage, she knew a lot.

From a simple observation, she could see that this was a Legend rank expert using the energy from the world!

"Legend rank?" Kong You Yue did not dare believe what she was currently seeing between the figures fighting from two sides, "To think that it was actually two Legend rankers. Such existences were said to be capable of standing at the peak of the entire Azure River County, yet why would they come fight at the peak of Snowrock mountain? Unless, they were just passing through?"

Even though the two frightening experts were extremely fast, there were still certain occasions when they would pause, such as when one side was forced to retreat temporarily, thus allowing You Yue to briskly discern the figures who fought.

Xiang Pang Yun – she did not recognise!

Yet on the other side, it was actually a young man robed in black and carried a silvery-grey long spear. There were even snowflakes floating around him.



This person was actually someone she was very familiar with!

“Dong Bo Xue Ying!” You Yue’s eyes widened, “H... he, he is actually a Legend expert? This, this... how could this be possible? He is just 22 this year!”

When she was young, her father Kong Hai, a shrewd businessman, had asked her to think of a way to marry Dong Bo Xue Ying! In reality though, ever since she was young, she felt wronged by her father’s undue expectations. After all, her father did not attach much importance to his daughter’s life, seeing that she would eventually marry out of the family! This could be seen previously in her life when her father was not willing to find a good mage to be her teacher. However, what eventually changed things for her was the possibility of her marrying Dong Bo Xue Ying. For the sake of getting a closer relationship with him, her father finally allowed You Yue to learn under the Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi.

After becoming a mage, Kong You Yue was even more disciplined, enabling her to broaden her horizons and general knowledge of the world.

The more she knew, the more she understood how big the world was!

Within this remotely small town, Water Rites Town, what kind of character could Dong Bo Xue Ying ever be when compared to the huge world outside? Even if he was the ruler of this town? But before an opportunity presented itself in front of her, she tolerated all her father asked since she knew that marrying Dong Bo Xue Ying could be a good fallback plan.

Finally —

The favoured heir, Si Chen, came. Si Clan was actually a heaven-seizing clan with a status renowned even in the entire Tranquil Sun Province! If she could enter such a clan, she would certainly have the opportunity to reach an even higher status in the future...

In her opinion, Dong Bo Xue Ying was not even worth mentioning in the same breath as someone from the Si Clan!

Si Chen was the ladder for her to climb upwards in reaching higher heights in the world. By then, even if Dong Bo Xue Ying found out her true motives, she could care less.

A martial arts fanatic in such a small place could not be considered world-

breaking.

“This, this...”

Kong You Yue looked upon the distant mythical-like battle between the two figure. At times, rocks would crumble, falling down the mountain with a loud rumbling sound. And one of those two figures was precisely someone very familiar to her.

“Every single one of you, quickly hide!” Even Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi’s beard was trembling. He roared out, “Quick, that person who is using the sword is Xiang Pang Yun! Yes, Xiang Pang Yun! Why are you all still dilly-dallying around here?, Do you want to die? Should the fight accidentally involve anyone of you here, you will lose your life within the blink of an eye.”

“Xiang Pang Yun?”

“The number one expert of Azure River County, Xiang Pang Yun?”

“The one stronger than the ancestor of the Si Clan, Xiang Pang Yun?” These disciples were all shocked. Their teacher had taught them long ago about the few powerful characters within Azure River County. He even emphasised both Xiang Pang Yun and Si Liang Hong, that these the two experts represented the ultimate powers of the entire Azure River County! Anyone of them could easily kill off ordinary Legend rankers, showing how unimaginable their strength was.

“Quickly go back into the building!” Bai Yuan Zhi roared.

Only then did all the disciples go back into the Great Mage’s Building.

.....

With a wave of his hand, *Bang*~~~ an enormous black sculpture suddenly began moving from beside the Great Mage’s Building. This sculpture looked very similar to that of a centipede-type refiner organism, with some flexibility on the edge of its flat winding body.

“Brother Si Chen, it seems that the current situation is extremely dangerous, with no guarantee of your safety here at the Great Mage’s Building. I think it would be better if we ride on top of this ‘Black-Moon Centipede’ up the sky! At the very least, we won’t have to be afraid of getting involved when we are in the

sky.” Bai Yuan Zhi said.

“Thank you, brother Bai.” Si Chen’s looks were relatively handsome. At the same time, he added, “If it’s possible, bring along You Yue as well.”

“En.”

Bai Yuan Zhi glanced over at Kong You Yue, and Ji Rong who was stood along another side, before ordering, “You Yue, Ji Rong, you two come over. We’ll be going over to Snowrock Castle later on to fetch Qing Shi as well!”

The Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi had his own considerations.

Observing the earthshaking fight between Xiang Pang Yun and Dong Bo Xue Ying, he was entirely intimidated by it. Heavens, Dong Bo Xue Ying could unexpectedly fight against the famous savage, Xiang Pang Yun? Even though he felt that the chances of Xue Ying winning this battle were slim, he still had a chance of winning it. Either that or Xue Ying could still somehow survive the aftermath of the battle.

Without a doubt, he must definitely maintain a good relation with such an expert!

From what he saw, You Yue and Xue Ying were quite close with each other! Ji Rong and Qing Shi were even more intimate! It would be good if these two women were brought along with him.

“Yes, teacher.” You Yue and Ji Rong respectively acknowledged the order.

As for Bai Yuan Zhi’s other personal disciple, he had long since finished his apprenticeship.

“Hu!”

Under the control of Bai Yuan Zhi, the Black-Moon Centipede immediately wound its way up to the sky. Riding on top of it were Bai Yuan Zhi, Si Chen, Kong You Yue, and Ji Rong. Simultaneously, the Black-Moon Centipede flew up to a few hundred meters and headed towards Snowrock Castle.

“Xiang Pang Yun actually appeared in this place!” Si Chen overlooked the battle between the two experts. He trembled, “That Dong Bo Xue Ying could, in fact, fight against Xiang Pang Yun without losing out! How is this possible, this Xiang

Pang Yun and my clan's ancestor were comparable characters. From what I know, the murderer Xiang Pang Yun had killed several Legend rankers with a single move, yet why would this fight last for so long!"

"Brother Si Chen, you've experienced too little," Bai Yuan Zhi commented, "Looking at the surrounding activities between the two experts battling, did you notice the rocks around them bursting apart? From my calculations, the might of Qi energy generated between their exchange and have affected the surroundings had long transcended any ordinary Legend rankers."

"En." Si Chen could only lightly nod his head.

"Having dominated the entire Azure River County for so long, Xiang Pang Yun must definitely have some powerful methods at hand," Bai Yuan Zhi added, "In this battle, Xue Ying is still in danger! But of course, having the capability to fight against Xiang Pang Yun for this length of time already shows how amazing he is. He is just 22 this year. That is simply incredible and unimaginable! If we give him another five to six years, I'm afraid to say that his combat power will long surpass Xiang Pang Yun's and Si Liang Hong's, becoming the number one expert in our Azure River County!"

Si Chen did not want to believe it, but the truth was right in front of his eyes.

"Really amazing," Si Chen sighed in appreciation, "So amazing. Twenty-two years and yet, he's so strong already. This is really a rare occurrence in the entire Dragon Mountain Empire. Who knows, he might even become a Transcendent."

The two of them marveled.

However, beside them, Kong You Yue and Ji Rong were both shocked.

Ji Rong's facial expression turned white.

She knew that her thinking was totally wrong! In this Snowrock Castle, whatever riches they had was a petty matter. The most frightening thing however, was the strongest and most powerful person – Dong Bo Xue Ying.

Kong You Yue was similarly shocked.

"The one exchanging moves with Dong Bo Xue Ying was actually Xiang Pang Yun?" You Yue felt dizzy.

Xiang Pang Yun?

The number one expert within Azure River County?

Dong Bo Xue Ying could already fight against him to such a degree? He was just 22 years old with the hope of entering the fabled Transcendent rank in the future!

You Yue felt empty in her heart, anxious and powerless.

The opportunity of that one step, allowing her to ascend to heaven, was presented in front of her and yet, she missed it!

Why did she not bear a little longer? Just a little longer and she would have seen this big battle. Why had she decided to abandon Xue Ying, telling her little brother all those horrible things about Xue Ying? Today, she finally understood why Xue Ying had learned what she had said in that conversation with her brother. A Legend ranker could become one with the world, so whatever she did behind his back, how would it ever be possible to hide such actions?

*“Hu.”* You Yue slowly let out a breath of regret – that regret of loss.

If she set her heart in following Xue Ying, she would have had the chance to walk onto the very peak of the entire Dragon Mountain Empire. Such a place she could never have imagined herself ever reaching.

She was suddenly enlightened.

That most important opportunity in her entire life was something she had missed, and for that life-time opportunity to come once again would be almost impossible.

“Not good, Xiang Pang Yun is going to explode!” Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi suddenly exclaimed.

*“Peng, peng, peng.”*

The intensity of the battle below suddenly rose a level.

Regardless of whether they were the people on top of the Black-Moon Centipede high up in the skies, or those within the Snowrock Castle, all of them felt their heart lurching upwards. Everyone could see the battle suddenly become more intense.

Xue Ying was bombarded till he flew back, knocking against the mountain rocks. Cracks could be seen forming on the mountain, and Xue Ying was dodging in a frenzy.

Biting cold rays of sword light descended from the skies.

*Peng.*

Xue Ying was so shaken by that, he immediately and relentlessly retreated backwards.

“Hahaha... Dong Bo Xue Ying, oh Dong Bo Xue Ying. Before, I was just playing with you. A plaything like you would be something that I would never expect to meet twice in my entire life. But now, I’ve had enough. It’s time for me to send you to your death!” Xiang Pang Yun’s laughter echoed in the sky. His strength and speed all rose a huge level, entirely suppressing Xue Ying.

Xue Ying was doing his utmost in using his spear technique to defend, yet he was still beaten. *Rumble*, an enormous piece of the cliff broke off, causing it to fall down the mountain.

“Battling with such an expert is very beneficial for me. Initially, I wanted to exchange more moves with you for a little while longer! Such a pity you do not want to play on any longer.” Xue Ying awkwardly rolled over, before leaping up onto a piece of big rock. In his expression, there was not even a single thread of panic. Instead, there were traces of fanatical excitement, “That said, let’s fight till the death then.”

A faint blood-red steam appeared on Xue Ying’s body, causing his breath of life to rise explosively.

Primordial Bloodline, open!

“My turn!”

*Hong—*

A frightening shadow of the spear which brought a world-sweeping power, swept down a distance of a hundred meters, and crashed down against Xiang Pang Yun. He ferociously returned with a slash of fury, chopping against it with a roar. However, what happened made his eyes bulge out of their sockets in shock

as he immediately moved backwards six steps, with each step causing entire surface of the mountain peak to tremble. At the last step, his back hit against a big tree, *boom*, that big tree instantly burst apart.

Xiang Pang Yun did not dare to believe he was at a disadvantage!

“What!” Above the night skies, on top of the Black-Moon Centipede, everyone including Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi did not dare believe what they saw.

“Good!” On top of Snowrock Castle, those watching nervously, Qing Shi, Zong Ling, and Tong San, became excited at this turn of events.

\*\*

---

|

## Book 3: Chapter 11 – The Unforeseen Opportunity

---

*Hu!*

That imposing world-sweeping momentum brought about by the spear clashed against the battle sword of Xiang Pang Yun. The next second, Xue Ying exerted force in his arms, causing the shaft of the spear to twist... producing a shocking curvature that resembled a Flood Dragon springing out from the water, charging right at Xiang Pang Yun.

*Dang.* Xiang Pang Yun did not dare to face it head-on. Wielding the battle sword, he reduced the force through concurrently defending whilst retreating!

“How did his strength explosively increase by so much? This, this strength increase is really too much!” Xiang Pang Yun dared not believe, “Usually, there exists powerful Qi methods based on implementing desperate measures, allowing one’s Qi to explosively increase within moments and cause one’s might to become much greater! But that type of increase isn’t as excessive as this.”

The extent of doubling of one’s power was indeed too shocking.

This was just like comparing two ordinary soldiers with varying strengths.

One soldier would be able to wield 50 kg of force; another soldier would be able to wield 100 kg of force. Obviously, the one wielding 100 kg of force would easily beat the other who could only wield 50 kg of force!

Now if one’s strength was even greater and reached 25,000 kg of force, when compared to one with 50,000 kg of force, the disparity of strength during battle would be even more obvious. After all, one side had 25,000 kg of force more than the other! If the two sides had comparable techniques, then within two to three moves, the weaker side would easily lose his life.

“Die for me!”

Xue Ying rapidly charged forward, his spear struck like a dragon, as he continuously attacked.

*Pu.*



In a flash, the spear strokes tore through the resistance from the surroundings, stabbing right at Xiang Pang Yun's face. In a sudden panic, Xiang Pang Yun dodged the lightning fast attacks, his battle sword parrying the strikes.

*"Dang!"* One stab instantaneously turned into an explosive forward strike, the spear's head drove directly at Xiang Pang Yun, causing him to fly backwards towards the mountainous rock by the side. The rocks burst apart, transforming into countless small stones.

"Die, die, die." Xue Ying's spear became faster and faster, with each thrust aimed to kill. After obtaining an advantage in terms of strength, Xue Ying's attack with his spear brought forward an overly oppressive atmosphere that caused the recipient to sense a life-threatening danger each passing moment.

.....

On the other side.

The Black-Moon Centipede descended rapidly on top of Snowrock Castle. Bai Yuan Zhi said, "Brother Zong Ling, brother Tong, and Qing Shi, you guys come with me quickly! We'll be flying up to a high altitude... giving the lord of this castle peace of mind as he battles against Xiang Pang Yun. If you all were to stay here, who knows whether or not Xiang Pang Yun might take any of you hostage to threaten the young lord when he finds himself on the losing end."

"Thank you Great Mage," Zong Ling spoke, "Tong San, Qing Shi, let's hurry up."

The Black-Moon Centipede was a relatively big refiner organism. Its body was long, allowing seven people to easily fit on it. If riders were to squeeze together, even ten people could ride it.

Zong Ling, Tong San, and Qing Shi rapidly mounted the centipede.

*Hu.*

The Black-Moon Centipede began meandering its way up into the clear air above the castle.

"Qing Shi," Ji Rong said diminutively.

On top of the Centipede, Qing Shi gazed at Ji Rong. His heart had changed, and

he no longer felt the same way toward her as he had earlier that morning.

Having lived a carefree life for such a long time, just because of the issue with his girlfriend, Qing Shi had thought his brother had been too despicable and had hurled some hateful words towards Xue Ying. But right now, when he looked towards that battle... especially at the current dangerous situation where his brother might lose his life at anytime because of him, that bitter attitude he had towards his brother had long disappeared.

Qing Shi now only felt nervousness and worry.

At the same time, now he was no longer being angry with his brother, naturally, Qing Shi could put himself into his brother's shoes and consider the morning's discussion regarding Ji Rong from a more objective viewpoint.

"Initially, I thought my brother's side of story was full of subjective conjectures on his part. But in reality... what Ji Rong said was totally from her viewpoint as well! Though relatively speaking, brother did find the Dragon Mountain Manor intelligence to be reliable. With their extensive, supervised network, the Dragon Mountain Manor would definitely be a source of trustworthy intelligence." Qing Shi thought silently to himself. Teenagers falling in love would usually be hot-headed, especially when this was the first love at such a young age of 16.

Now that his brother was in a life and death situation, Qing Shi eventually calmed down. Although he was naive, his intelligence was not to be belittled.

*'What if Dragon Mountain Manor's report was entirely accurate?'*

*'Ji Rong's father and mother are extremely hypocritical and malicious people, with Ji Rong inheriting those characteristics in her bones. This kind of family... must be like-minded as well?'* Qing Shi shuddered.

"Not good!"

Before Qing Shi had a chance to speak, Ji Rong, Bai Yuan Zhi's facial expression changed.

Qing Shi, Zong Ling, and Tong San were all watching what was happening below.

The situation had indeed worsened.

The crimson-robed Xiang Pang had previously been covered in a scarlet sheet of energy, making his entire person look as if it were a blood incarnate! That blood-coloured encasement was precisely his protective Qi! Yet now, that layer of protective Qi had entirely vanished. Simultaneously, the breath of Qi around him had evidently risen. They could even feel that breath of Qi high up in the skies, striking terror in their hearts!

“It has been 30 years since I last utilised my full strength. Even that old fogey Si Liang Hong does not dare to have a true battle with me. Dong Bo Xue Ying, now that you’ve forced me to use my full strength, even in death, you should be satisfied!” Xiang Pang Yun’s fierce and monstrous Qi filled the surrounding area. The colour of his previously mild blood-coloured eyes intensified to a deeper, blood-red colour.

Xiang Pang’s body began to immediately and explosively consume much more of his Qi...

Even the protective Qi surrounding his body retreated back in for the sake of maintaining this higher consumption rate.

An explosive increase in consumption limits! Naturally, his strength would increase explosively as well!

Those top-ranked Qi methods usually had its own desperate measures. What Xue Ying was currently using could only be considered as a very weak, middle-grade Qi method, the Three Stage Flame Technique. This Qi method did not have such a desperate measure within it. Actually, even if he had that desperate measure, he could also not fully utilise it, since he only had an equivalence of a Silver-moon ranker’s Qi. Xue Ying’s fleshy body had long surpassed the Qi within it.

*“Hong.”*

The two combatants clashed.

Xue Ying was bombarded continuously, retreating and dodging the attacks nonstop.

“Not good.” Xue Ying’s expression changed, “This is Xiang Pang Yun’s true strength? My current strength is still lacking in comparison to the top 500

rankers on the Dragon Mountain Book.”

He had long since fully utilised his entire strength when his Primordial Bloodline was activated!

*“Hua!”*

A white-coloured light flashed momentarily.

Xue Ying evaded the attacks, quick as lightning, with his full strength. His spear’s head clashed with that white-coloured light, re-directing the light by a small angle and causing it to sweep across the surroundings.

All the rocks and trees hit by the light were cleanly sliced through.

“Such a fast blade.” Xue Ying did his utmost in evading.

Xiang Pang Yun had long reached the stage of Power Perfectly as One. His weapon was also of similar quality to Xue Ying’s weapon, and his cultivation blade technique was a high grade one as well – not losing out to Xue Ying’s Dark Ice Spear Technique! Furthermore, he had more experience than Xue Ying. Being overwhelmed in every single factor, Xue Ying immediately felt a dangerous pressure with every attack he parried as his energy was quickly sapped away.

.....

High up in the skies, those on top of the Black-Moon Centipede – Qing Shi, Zong Ling, Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi all began to feel nervous. Kong You Yue and Ji Rong were both having complex thoughts and were nervously watching the battle.

“Is he going to die?” Although Ji Rong was nervous, she had some expectations.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying.” You Yue’s feelings were ambiguous. If Xue Ying died, then her previous action of giving up on him was a wise decision! However, on the other hand, she did not have that much hatred towards Xue Ying. Having been with him for so long, she was already accustomed to such a person, and thus, should he die, her heart would still feel unbearable pain to a certain extent.

“Brother!” Qing Shi was utterly nervous. Even both Zong Ling and Tong San were having similar worries.

The three of them were truly the most nervous within the group.

Dong Bo Xue Ying was one of their most beloved people. Zong Ling and Tong San had watched Xue Ying grew up, just as if he were their own child. Why else would they feel so nervous and worried?

Yet they could not do anything other than watch the battle unfold.

.....

*Sou Sou Sou.*

Xue Ying's agility was like lightning. After activating his Primordial Bloodline, his speed was shocking to the extent that his spear brought forth after-images in parrying the attacks. He was fully squeezing out every single strength his body contained.

Yet Xiang Pang Yun became faster and faster, his blade technique became fiercer and fiercer.

Everything around the peak of Snowrock Mountain was a mess – the big trees and rocks were are in pieces.

“This cannot go on any further.” Xue Ying's forehead were full of sweat, “This is too strength-consuming. If this fight goes on any longer, I might just lose my life.”

“Escape.”

Even while battling, Xue Ying was still observing his little brother. The moment Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi brought up his little brother, Uncle Zong, and Uncle Tong onto the Black-Moon Centipede up high in the skies, Xue Ying let go of his worries. Right now, the most important thing to do was... to survive!

*Sou!*

Xue Ying borrowed the strength from one of the clashes between their weapons, flying two to three hundred meters away before sprinting off.

He escaped!

“Escape? Do you think you could escape?” Xiang Pang Yun grinned. In a flash, he flew towards Xue Ying; his speed was faster by quite a bit.

---



## Book 3: Chapter 12 – The Chase

---

Xue Ying madly darted away, hoping to escape with his life and left behind a blurred trail. He used the surrounding World Energy to defend against that blood-red coloured Qi wave attacking from behind! Xiang Pang Yun ferociously gave chase, causing the distance between them to greatly reduce.

Even though Xue Ying could not literally see what was happening behind, the World Energy allowed him to sense the narrowing distance between him and Xiang Pang Yun.

“His speed is faster than mine.”

Xue Ying’s speed was extremely fast. Just a few moments and he was able to reach a cliff at the edge of Snowrock mountain.

*Sou!*

Xue Ying kicked against the ground, exerting his powerful leg strength!

Xue Ying leaped up from the edge of the cliff, soaring across the skies before landing upon another great mountain opposite Snowrock.

“Humph.” Xiang Pang Yun similarly rushed forwards, abruptly leaped towards Xue Ying.

With their current level and aid from the World Energy, the height from which they jumped did not matter anymore! World Energy could provide them with a constant lifting force of 500 kg. Should their body weight not exceed this force, these experts could fly.

But this type of flight was too slow.

With a flap of its wings, a Meteor rank flying beast would exert more than 5,000 kg of force. That force coupled with an aerodynamic body structure allowed this type of beast to be able to race at sonic-speed! For Legend rankers like Xue Ying, just borrowing the World Energy... would not enhance their flying speed to sonic-speed. Regardless of whether it was a flying-ship or some bird-type refiner artifact, any flying beasts could easily surpass such devices. Even

ordinary birds might fly faster than these flying artifacts.

After all, it was not an easy task borrowing strength in mid-air.

Power comes from the root, and for humans, their legs represented their root! For instance, the power was generated from one's legs for stabbing with a spear or slashing with a blade. As for mid-air use, human legs could not exert any power at all. And when the utmost force that could come from the World Energy was limited to 500 kg, what would a Legend ranker be afraid of? Just solely from an exertion of power from both his legs, the World Energy could never obstruct him. Thus, when battling in mid-air, their true strength would never be revealed.

As a result, there were very few Legend rankers who would battle in mid-air.

*"Peng!"*

Using the World Energy, Xue Ying leaped a distance of 300 meters, landing directly with a 'boom' on the halfway point of the great mountain nearby. Tremors could be felt on the surface after Xue Ying landed, though he did not hesitate to run away at top speed soon afterwards.

*Peng*, Xiang Pang Yun landed at the same area and continued to madly chase after his quarry.

Escape, escape, escape!

The speed of these two experts rocketed to their limits.

Mountains and rivers were treated as flat ground. When Xue Ying used his long spear to create obstacles and sweep huge rocks directly towards Xiang Pang Yun, Xiang Pang Yun would simply utilise the rocks as stepping stones in continuing the chase. He would not be so frivolous as to slash apart these huge rocks. That would waste too much of his time.

The distance between the two continued to narrow..

Within just a few breaths, they had already passed three great mountains. As soon as the two of them leaped to a fourth mountain, Xiang Pang Yun finally reached Xue Ying. They started yet another battle right, but they fought in mid-air this time.

*"Chi chi"*



Xue Ying turned to face Xiang Pang Yun.

Even in mid-air, Xiang Pang Yun brought forward a charging momentum. With the motion of his battle sword turning into a white streak, Xiang Pang directly countered Xue Ying's long spear. Xiang Pang Yun rotated his blade to prevent any chance of letting Xue Ying block it head-on.

The two of them were combat-intelligent.

They knew that should the two weapons clash head-on, Xiang Pang Yun would suffer from a huge mitigation force which would greatly reduce his forward movement! And as for Xue Ying, if he were to directly block one of Xiang Pang Yun's strikes, he could borrow the force from this counter-strike to gain additional distance in his escape!

"You want to kill me without resorting to direct clashes?" Xue Ying sneered. The long spear in his hand formed an arc, with its spearhead akin to a whirlpool, continuously rotating about... and at times, striking out at the speed of lightning! Snowflakes formed around the spear, keeping Xiang Pang Yun from succeeding in his continuous attempt to slay Xue Ying.

Forgoing the use of overwhelming power, but relying on his speed to break through Xue Ying's spear defense instead? That would be too difficult. After all, the difference between the two of them was not so exaggerated.

In mid-air, the two combatants exchanged a dozen moves.

*Dong.*

Xue Ying landed about halfway up the mountain. Without hesitation, he immediately withdrew with Xiang Pang Yun chasing closely behind him.

"Damn, if I don't use my full strength in oppressing him, killing him is really too hard." Xiang Pang Yun secretly nodded, "I should just use my full strength in overwhelming him! Even if he is to borrow this force in escaping, the chances of killing him every time we exchange moves would be present."

Having changed his tactics, the situation was now suddenly drastically different.

*"Hong."*

A rocky beach bordered the rapidly running Azure River which spanned over a dozen meters in width.

Once again, Xue Ying and Xiang Pang Yun exchanged weapon blows.

Whenever directly encountering Xiang Pang Yun, Xue Ying did not dare to leave his back unguarded. He had to halt his escape attempt and turn to face against his opponent.

The two of them exchanged more than a dozen moves in a blink of an eye.

Xue Ying constantly sought for an opportunity to use a head-on weapon-to-weapon collision and borrow the force to escape. After all, not all such attacks would be successful, like when the opponent decided to slash downwards! Unless he wanted to borrow force in burrowing downwards? Xiang Pang Yun was trying his utmost in not giving Xue Ying that chance of escaping, even when he as he faced Xue Xing head-on. The more moves they exchanged, the more likely such an opportunity would eventually arise. Ultimately, in a life or death battle, most moves were determined by instinct and not with extensive forethought.

“Escape.” Xue Ying once again found an opportunity that he fully utilised, rebounding against a head-on strike to gain another two to three hundred meters of distance, before directly stepping on the surging waters of the Azure River and using it to aid in his escape.

“Damn, he escaped again.” Xiang Pang Yun’s blood-red eyes expressed his full fury, “But every time we fight, you are on the brink of life and death. I shall see how long you can last!”

The two of them moved on the surging waters of the Azure River as if it were stable land. One was ahead of the other as they continued the chase.

.....

In the evening skies.

The Black-Moon Centipede was flying at its fastest speed. It was shrouded with a mist on top, and within the mist were Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi, Qing Shi, Zong Ling, Tong San, Kong You Yue, Si Chen, and Ji Rong – seven people. They all nervously looked at the frightening chase happening below, watching the two

figures running on top of the Azure River as if it were a flat surface.

During the chase, those two experts brought forth a combat power that shocked everybody.

Xiang Pang Yun was forced to display the secret technique of his Dou Qi method. Xue Ying had long ago activated his Primordial Bloodline!

According to logical reasoning, under such exertion of power, Xiang Pang Yun and Xue Ying's consumption rate would be tremendous. It was fortunate they had both comprehend One with the World, allowing them to replenish their World Energy, sustaining each for the entire battle! If they had not exerted their true power, the battle between them could have even lasted for several days and nights without being totally tiring them out.

"Too fast. Their speed is really too fast."

Bai Yuan Zhi, Si Chen and the rest were all shocked.

"They are even battling while chasing," Si Chen sighed, "Their path even includes the mountains, the rivers, and the woods on the mountain! As for us, we've been running after them in the skies in a straight line, and yet, it feels so taxing just to catch up with them even using the half sonic speed of this Black-Moon Centipede."

"Close to half as there were more people than usual on it this time round. Usually, its speed could reach more than half." Bai Yuan Zhi nodded.

Traveling at half sonic speed and chasing them in a straight line was already very taxing. One could imagine how terrifying the speed of those two below was.

"Is this his power?" You Yue observed the two shadows with one chasing after the other. She could only hold her breath at such a scene. In the past, she always thought that Xue Ying was merely a martial fanatic. But now, she finally realised her folly. With such a strength, he could make all mortals fall into despair, even if it was a an army of 100,000 or a massive one of a million soldiers. In front of such power, any army would be a joke!

"Even if the two of them have not yet reached the Transcendent level, their combat power has already reached a half-step into it," Bai Yuan Zhi said, "I've heard that those who top ranked on the Dragon Mountain Book could even kill

some weaker Transcendents! Xiang Pang Yun ranks in the top 500, and he already had a combat power half-step into Transcendent level.”

“Half-step into the Transcendent level?”

The others were appalled as they looked onto the chase happening below.

“Brother.” Qing Shi’s fists were tightly clenched as he overlooked the chase. At the same time, he felt proud that he had such a brother. He also felt nervous and worried for Xue Ying along with much regret over his recent actions. This battle started all because of Qing Shi’s recent conflict. Though Xue Ying did not blame him for that and even felt that it was absolutely normal for his brother to kill in self-defence.

Yet Qing Shi was still unable to control his guilty feelings, especially so when he had just argued with his brother earlier this morning.

“Brother, you must survive. You must.” Qing Shi had never had such feelings of nervousness and worry since he could remember, even as a child. If his brother truly died, he would not know what to do. That kind of conclusion was something he did not even dare to think about.

.....

Xue Ying madly attempted to escape.

*Hu hu hu*, the wind whistled past his ears and everything around him was moved backwards at a very fast speed. The only exception was Xiang Pang Yun – coming closer and closer to him.

In a blink of an eye, they had already clashed nine times during this chase and battle, reaching a distance of 160 kilometers from the castle.

“I’m going to reach it soon.” Xue Ying looked ahead at the towering mountain in front of him, a mountain that reached above the clouds, “The only way to survive for I, Dong Bo Xue Ying’s, is located right here!”

## Book 3: Chapter 13 – Battle on the Black-Wind Cliff

---

Having reached the foot of the mountain, Xue Ying started rushing upwards. *Sou sou sou*, his body turned into a blur as he reached an altitude of two to three hundred meters in a blink of an eye. Xiang Pang Yun did not hesitate to chase after him. With one chasing after the other, they began traversing closer to the peak of this towering mountain... which Xue Ying and Xiang Pang Yun treated as if it was a flat surface.

“Rushing up another mountain?” Xiang Pang Yun had gone over quite a few mountains in this hunt. Initially as he started moving upwards, nothing felt wrong. It was only after a while of travelling did the surrounding wind start to get brutal, causing his expression to change. “This is... the Black-Wind Cliff?”

“This Dong Bo Xue Ying actually chose to head towards Black-Wind Cliff?” Xiang Pang Yun understood what his opponent was planning.

The Black-Wind Cliff itself did not contain much danger.

Instead, it was the abyss beside Black-Wind Cliff... that was given the famous name as the place of despair, ‘Black-Wind Abyss’.

One must know that the Mountain Range of Desolation was actually the location known for having the most beasts gathered. The peak-Transcendent rankers of humankind had been fighting with beasts in this particular location for over countless ages! Across generations, even when famous characters like the Dragon Mountain Emperor were alive, they could not exterminate the entire clan of beasts! Beasts tried to eat humans, while humans tried to kill the beasts.

Mortal armies had tried to clear the beasts time after time while Transcendent combatants from both sides – human and beasts – occasionally fought.

Thus, even within the Mountain Range of Desolation, certain special zones were classified in the aftermath of the terrifying battles that had happened in the past. These zones could even threaten the lives of Transcendents. These zones... were all located in the deeper recesses within the Mountain Range of Desolation! As for those outside of the Mountain Range of Desolation, there

were approximately ten or more such areas, with 'Black-Wind Abyss' being classified as one these areas about 50 kilometers away from the Mountain Range of Desolation.

Ever since a very, very long time ago... the appearance of Black-Wind Abyss was already such a well-known special zone. This zone was called a place of despair!

"You want to go Black-Wind Cliff?" Xiang Pang Yun had a ferocious visage as he chased after Xue Ying.

"It is exactly Black-Wind Cliff that I want to go. Why? Are you scared?" Xue Ying bolted in front of him.

"Damn!"

Xiang Pang Yun yet again madly chased after his quarry.

At the midway mark of this great mountain – upwards of 2,000 meters in altitude, the two began exchanging blows once again! During this confrontation, Xiang Pang Yun greatly desired to kill off Xue Ying. Even though he had the advantage over Xue Ying, the disparity of their combat power did not reach the point of hopelessness. Furthermore, whenever Xue Ying saw an opportunity, he would burst forth with his fighting spirit, desperately fending off the attacks of his opponent.

Having rebounded once again by borrowing the head-on force of a weapon-on-weapon clash, Xue Ying continued rushing upwards.

*Hu hu hu*, the surrounding wind started becoming stronger and stronger. Currently, the wind was greyish in colour. Yet the further up they went, the darker it became.

"I'm almost there." This was Xue Ying's first time here. He only knew that this place was very terrifying.

"I can't reach him." Xiang Pang Yun wanted to have another bout of battle before Xue Ying reached the Black-Wind Cliff, yet judging by the distance between them, it seemed that he was too far behind for to accomplish what he desired.

*Sou!*

Xue Ying continued his dash before finally reaching the peak of this great mountain. In front of him was a bare patch of land about two to three hundred square meters; there was just the flurry of air caused by the black ferocious wind.

“Black-Wind Cliff.” Xue Ying stood right at the peak of the mountain. Right where he was – this piece of bare land – was actually known as the Black-Wind Cliff!

Beside the cliff, there was an enormous swirl caused by the ferocious black wind. It spanned over an area of a few thousand square meters and gave off the feeling that it was sweeping away the world. Such a scene was truly shocking. A Legend ranker standing in front of it could not help but feel weak and minuscule.

The black swirl actually entered the deepest part of the abyss.

“Such a strong wind.” Just by standing on the Black-Wind Cliff, Xue Ying could feel a few thousand kilograms of force pushing on his body. And this force, exerted by the fierce wind, exceeded 5,000 kg of pressure the closer one stood towards the edge of the cliff. Only when reaching the ranks of Legend could one stand firmly on this cliff. As for a Silver Moon knight, even if they had a physical strength of more than 5,000 kg, their body would not be able to abide steadily under the condition of such fierce winds, and they might even be swept directly into the Black-Wind Abyss as a result.

“Haha, Xiang Pang Yun, do you dare to have a life and death battle here at the Black-Wind Cliff?” Xue Ying held onto his Flying Snow God Spear, staring at the incoming Xiang Pang Yun.

Xiang Pang Yun observed the surroundings with a distasteful expression.

Currently, they were standing firmly on the Black-Wind Cliff. But should a life and death fight break out, with the high velocity they would be moving at, especially with the rebounding force wrought by the weapons clashing... one careless move and they would be pushed out of Black-Wind Cliff. The moment they left ground, with the puny 500 kg of force exerted by the World Energy, it would be entirely impossible for them to go against the fierce wind whirling into Black-Wind Abyss. Inevitably, they would be swept in with the gale.

“You should know how formidable the Black-Wind Abyss is. That is a place of despair with a few hundred thousand years of history. The moment you get trapped within, even Transcendents might not be able to come out alive. But right beneath Transcendent rank is actually Legend rank! Even though in the past hundred thousand years or so, countless Legend rankers went down for exploration, none have ever come out alive.” Xue Ying said.

Anyone below Transcendent who dared to enter would only have one conclusion – death!

Of course, there might be possibilities of people surviving this encounter, but at least according to what was published in the intelligence reports, none had ever come out alive – showing precisely how dangerous and terrifying this place was.

“Transcendents said before this – at the Black-Wind Abyss, the black wind’s swirling force is endless. Should you get swept by it, you would fall faster and faster, reaching a velocity that even Legend rankers might get smashed to death!” Xue Ying continued painting the terrifying danger of this place in order to generate some fear in Xiang Pang Yun.

Precisely.

Under normal conditions, Legend rankers would never get splattered to death by falling down from high altitudes! Yet in the Black-Wind abyss, the moment you get swept, the fierce wind would only become stronger and stronger, causing you to fall at an even faster speed – a speed that exceeded mach one. With the tiny force brought by the World Energy, any Legend rankers would not have the capability to reduce their speed against the black wind swirls. And the moment he reached the rock-bottom of the abyss, the Legend expert would get splattered and instantly die!

Thus, when even the first round of the encounter was so dangerous, those who came here for exploration would usually go down gingerly by the cliff. Excluding those who decided to retreat before they reached the abyss, everyone who went down died, showing precisely that there existed some other dangers on top of the fierce wind.

“You... very good.” Xiang Pang Yun’s blood-coloured eyes were full of killing



intent, “Very good. I, Xiang Pang Yun have not been forced to such a state for a very, very long time. The last time I encountered such danger was when I was young, and that time my combat power was much weaker.”

“But I’ve already lived for over a hundred years, so what if I die? Haha...”

“Furthermore, as a murderer, I’m never afraid of death! Today, I’ll fight with you, Dong Bo Xue Ying, on top of this Black-Wind Cliff. Let’s see whether it’s you or me, who will die!” Xiang Pang Yun walked towards Xue Ying. Initially, his pace was slow, but gradually he began picking up speed. This was him trying to acclimatise to the effects of such fierce wind.

The World Energy from both sides were already clashing with each other.

But these energies felt so small, so weak, when being utilised beside the fierce wind.

“So courageous.” Xue Ying’s eyes were also, filled with fighting spirit, “Let’s see who will survive this ordeal then!”

This was one of the few places where he knew he had a chance of surviving.

This was because even when he tried escaping, he would not be able to escape very far with Xiang Pang Yun constantly chasing after him. At the very most, he could only reach places at about 100 km away. Run towards ‘Water Rites Town’? To Xiang Pang Yun and Xue Ying, Water Rites Town did not even contain a tiny bit of threat to them. Entering the Mountain Range of Desolation was a choice but it had a distance of more than 500 km away. With such a far distance, even his Primordial Bloodline could not be held on for such a long period!

Black-Wind Cliff was the only location which he could think of that was close. This place was really dangerous.

If Xiang Pang Yun retreated because of knowing the associated danger and the risks, it would be all the better for Xue Ying.

If Xiang Pang Yun continued in his attack, there might be a small chance of him getting careless and getting swept into the Black-Wind Abyss!

The greater the influence of such factors, the better Xue Ying’s chances of surviving!

“Kill!” Xiang Pang Yun made his move, slashing out the battle sword horizontally at Xue Ying’s legs.

*“Dang.”*

The long spear immediately parried the attack, and Xue Ying had to step back in order to neutralise the force.

With such a powerful clash between weapons, coupled with the sweeping force of the fierce wind around him, Xue Ying had to back away in order to stabilise himself. Should both his legs accidentally leave the ground, without a surface for him to rely on, he would inevitably get swept into the Black-Wind Abyss. Thus, Xue Ying unhesitantly used the long spear in his hand, *Peng!* The spear stabbed right into the ground, and this aided him in rebounding a distance away for evasion.

“Battling on the Black-Wind Cliff is truly different.” Xue Ying was secretly shocked. He knew of how formidable this place was and had prepared himself mentally for it. But the fact is he had no experience in battling at such places.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying, in terms of battle experience, I certainly have much more than you.” Xiang Pang Yun grinned and continued with his attacks.

At the peak of Black-Wind Cliff, under the gushing fierce wind, the two began their mad fight.

*Hong.*

Xiang Pang Yun was knocked backwards. Borrowing force from the rocks with his sword, he continued once again in the mad pursuit of killing Xue Ying.

Xue Ying tried an uppercut with his long spear with the hope of lifting Xiang Pang Yun off the ground, so that he could be swept into the abyss, yet Xiang Pang Yun did not receive that attack. After all, Xiang Pang Yun had the advantage and the direction of the battle was in his hands.

Both sides were trying their utmost in killing their opponent. Scars were seen appearing everywhere on the surface of the peak of Black-Wind Cliff, and rocks were all being thrown by the attacks, before getting swept into the deep recesses of the Black-Wind Abyss.

---



## Book 3: Chapter 14 – Big Contribution

---

Black Wind Cliff was so tall that the peak penetrated the clouds.

At high altitude above the clouds, Black-Moon centipede hovered with Bai Yuan Zhi, Qing Shi, Zong Ling, Tong San, Kong You Yue, Ji Rong, and Si Chen on its back. All who rode the centipede nervously looked at the battle below them.

“Black Wind Cliff! They’re actually deciding life and death at Black Wind Cliff!” exclaimed Bai Yuan Zhi.

Besides the Black Wind Cliff was the Black Wind Abyss with its Black Wind maelstrom. The maelstrom was so great, setting off endless winds, shaking and distorting the world. Seeing this massive windstorm made Bai Yuan Zhi and the others feel a measure of fear.

In the middle of the howling black wind, two figures frantically fought on top of the cliff.

“Their positions are very dangerous. Once their feet leave the ground, without anything to hang on to, they could easily be dragged into the Black Wind Abyss,” explained Bai Yuan Zhi, “Once dragged into the Black Wind Abyss... mortals like us would definitely die. Maybe only Transcendents can survive such an event and come out alive.”

“This Xiang Pang Yun, why does he insist on chasing after my brother!” Qing Shi trembled, “Didn’t he want to kill me? There was no hatred between him and my brother. Why disregard his life and fight with my brother on this Black Wind Cliff?”

“That’s right.”

Bai Yuan Zhi shook his head, “Chasing and trying to kill Xue Ying along the way here is fine, but Black Wind Cliff is very dangerous. The fact that Xiang Pang Yun still doesn’t want to give up... well, no wonder people say he is a madman who kills for fun. We don’t think the same way he does. I suspect that for him, your brother is the newest and best plaything.

“Damn, damn, why’d it become like this?” Qing Shi anxiously watched the fight between the two figures below. The black clothed youngster who used a spear was his brother, his closest and most important family member.

.....

Minutes and seconds passed by...

Xue Ying completely traversed to the brink between life and death. He deliberately approached the edge of Black Wind Cliff to let Xiang Pang Yun feel more peril.

Peng!

The two ceased to fight. Xiang Pang Yun broke off his attack, instead, he just tenaciously stared at Xue Ying.

“You still have not used up your Qi?” Xiang Pang Yun couldn’t believe it.

“Why are you asking? Have you almost depleted your own Qi? I say ah, until now you’ve been using a secret Qi technique, so your Qi should be used up by now.” There was a hint of excitement and accomplishment in Xue Ying’s eyes. He had borrowed Black Wind Cliff dangerous environment to make Xiang Pang Yun always feel menaced by the abyss. This way Xue Ying could prolong the fight. At this point, both sides were at their limit.

Xiang Pang Yun had used a secret Qi technique, making his Qi consumption rate suddenly increase. Likewise, Xue Ying had activated his bloodline power, putting his physical body under continuous pressure.

Even though the World Energy would replenished their power, their consumption rate was much higher than their replenishment rate.

In the end, Xiang Pang Yun would soon also be unable to maintain his Qi.

Xue Ying could now finally grasp his slim chance of survival.

“How could you have more Qi than me?” Xiang Pang Yun couldn’t believe it. He lived for so long, his Qi cultivation had already reached one step below the Transcendent rank. His technique had also been passed to him by his ‘Father’. It could be said that it was rare to see someone among the Legend rankers with more Qi than him, let alone a brat who had recently become a Legend ranker.

Xiang Pang Yun didn't understand.

Xue Ying had been primarily relying on his physical strength, so it was obvious that he could last longer than someone strictly relying on a Qi outburst.

"You will quickly use up your Qi. You will be dead if we continue to fight!" Xue Ying eyed his opponent. Xiang Pang Yun's speed was faster than his. He still had some Qi left, if he decided to flee immediately... Xiang Pang Yun could easily distance himself from Xue Ying.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying."

Xiang Pang Yun felt no shred of panic at all. His scarlet eyes stared at the black clothed youngster in front of him, "I admire you, this year you are only 22 years old, and already you can become One with the World and also reached the state Power Perfectly as One! You are even able to fight with me until this degree. Although your strength is weaker when compared with mine and Si Liang Hong's, but it is already enough to entered the top 1000 rankers in the Dragon Mountain Book.

"Twenty two years old and already so impressive. You still have long lifespan to continue to strive and work hard, at this rate, you have an eighty or ninety percent chance of becoming a Transcendent."

"Once you become a Transcendent... you will reach another plane of life."

Xue Ying was baffled.

Something was not right.

Xiang Pang Yun should using this moment to continue his attack or give up and retreat immediately before his Qi is soon depleted. Why was he speaking this nonsense?

"To kill a future Transcendent, such a feat is a big contribution!" Xiang Pang Yun laughed evilly. *Peng~~~* His whole body suddenly began to change. It began to rapidly expand and numerous black scales appeared on his skin. In the blink of an eye, Xiang Pang Yun transformed to black beast that was more than 10 meters long and had four hooves.

This four hooved beast had a pair of scaled wing and blood red eyes. Its body

fully was covered by black scales with a touch of red color randomly circulating them. It's aura made Xue Ying felt an immense threat.

It was six meters tall.

A tall and huge magical beast had just appeared in front of him. Xue Ying was completely stunned.

"Bea... magical beast?"

"You're not a human!" Xue Ying couldn't believe it, "A magic beast! Moreover, a mutated magic beast?"

Xue Ying instantly assessed it.

There was a sixth rank fearsome magical beast in front of him! Moreover a mutated one!

A sixth rank magical beast, its power was equivalent with a Legend ranker. There were so many magical beasts already identified and recorded, so people could easily recognize any magic beast. But a mutated one was a special existence which had already awakened its primordial bloodline. No books had recorded it yet.

In the immemorial era, there giants and beasts among the primordial life forms.

So it was also extremely rare for magical beasts to awaken their primordial bloodline. Humankind relied on Qi while magical beasts relied on their physical power. A magical beast would become more frightening when they awakened their primordial bloodline.

*"Humph, humph"* the four hooved black beast's bloody eyes were full of madness.

Its human body was granted by its 'father'.

After that he had blended into the human world.

A mortal human, even a Legend ranker would be unable to live past 200 years unless he were someone like Si Liang Hong who had already altered their body into that of a blood demon. This magical beast had already used his alias 'Xiang Pang Yun' for more than 100 years. Even if he wasn't exposed now, after some

additional years, he could still have retired and returned to his origins.

This time; however, Wind Devil had accepted this mission...

Actually Xiang Pang Yun would have turned up his nose at this particular mission. When he heard that Bloodshed Tavern was reporting that Dong Bo Xue Ying might be a young 22 year old powerhouse Legend ranker, Xiang Pang Yun knew in his heart he wanted to participate. Bloodshed Tavern was very unlikely to claim that someone was a Legend ranker without some kind of proof. If Dong Bo Xue Ying really was a Legend ranker, and at such a young age, then there was little doubt that he would become a Transcendent in the future.

To slay this kind of genius was definitely a big contribution! Even bigger than killing ten or twenty other Legend rankers. That's why Xiang Pang Yun had voluntarily participated in this mission.

The facts, as they turned out, were even more surprising than expected.

This Dong Bo Xue Ying had not only achieved One with the World, but he had also attained Power Perfectly as One. Even Xue Ying's strength was comparable to Xiang Pang Yun's strength. This kind of frightening evildoer was rarely seen in the entire Dragon Mountain Empire. Could he give up this kind of big contribution?

So no matter what, Xiang Pang Yun had to kill Dong Bo Xue Ying!

Xiang Pang Yun from the beginning of the mission!

His very purpose in coming to the human world was for slaughtering this kind of genius.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying, receive your death." The four-hooved, black-scaled, mutated beast rushed out.

"It turns out my opponent is a mutated magic beast." Xue Ying also knew that the situation was not good. His body moved like lightning.

Chi—

The four-hooved, black-scaled, mutated beast didn't care about the stab to his stomach. Even if a crack were to appear there, it would be impossible to pierce him. The scales were layered together such that one needed to pierce two or



three scales before one could penetrate into its body.

“Hu” the four-hooved, black-scaled, mutated beast angrily clawed at Xue Ying.

It’s four hooved legs were more than three meters long, thick and powerful. The ends of the hooves were sharp as blades. With the two front legs attacking at same time, the powerful assault blocked out the sky.

Xue Ying tried hard to resist the massive force slamming him into the ground.

“Its strength is more powerful than when the creature is in its human form!” Xue Ying started to feel despair. The gap in power was too big, and the mutated magical beast’s scale defense was too impregnable. He thrust his spear again and again but was still unable to pierce through. How could he fight against this kind of strength? If the human form Xiang Pang Yun listed in top 500 rankers, maybe its beast form, was at least in top 200 rankers if not in the top 100 rankers.

For a magical beast form to have such a power increase was also within expectations.

Magical beasts, of course such a creature’s true form was more powerful. After all a human body was naturally quite weak.

*“Hu hu hu”*

The four-hooved, black-scaled, mutated beast ‘Xiang Pang Yun’ continuously pounced, three times, quick as lightning. How powerful was the flapping force of it’s scaled wings? It’s flying speed could easily reached the speed of sound! A flying mutated beast, naturally didn’t care about the gale besides it.

Fast speed, huge body, within only three attacks, Xue Ying couldn’t resist any longer.

“Peng!”

Although his spear blocked the attack in front of his body, the smack of the four-hooved, black-scaled, mutated beast made to his spear still caused Xue Ying to retreat and fly back.

“Stabilize!” Xue Ying turned upside down as he flew away. He tried his best to stab his spear into the ground. The spear stabbed into the rock more than a

meter deep. Numerous cracks appeared in the surrounding surface, and Xue Ying's upside down body stopped its out of control flight.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying, don't keep struggling!” The four-hooved, black-scaled, mutated beast once again arrived in front of Xue Ying.

## Book 3: Chapter 15 – The Longing of a Transcendent Being

High up in the skies, those on top of the Black-Moon Centipede – Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi, Qing Shi, and the others were all shocked at seeing Xiang Pang Yun change into a gigantic four-hooved, black-scaled, mutated beast.

“It’s a mutated beast, and one that is different from an ordinary kind of magical beast! A rank six mutated beast on top of that!” Si Chen sighed in alarm, “Xiang Pang Yun is unexpectedly able to transform into a magical beast.”

*Peng peng peng.*

With just three swooping attacks by the four-hooved black-scaled, mutated beast, Xue Ying entered a dire situation.

“No, D... Don’t!” Qing Shi clamored, tears flowing down his cheeks, “Don’t!” That was his most important loved one.

“Xue Ying!” Zong Ling and Tong San were frantic as well.

“Quickly escape, quickly escape, we will die as well should the lord of the castle perish.” Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi’s expression greatly changed. Seeing the pair of wings on the back of the four-hooved, black-scaled, beast, he immediately felt terror. He knew his Black-Moon Centipede could only travel at half-sonic speed and a rank four flying-beast could even surpass his mount. A rank five flying-beast had the absolute capability of easily surpassing the speed of his Black-Moon Centipede refiner organism.

As for a sixth rank magical beast, and Xiang Pang Yun being such a mutated beast, its speed would definitely be more frightening! They had to hurry with their escape, else in front of that terrifying mutated beast, each and everyone of them would die!

Bai Yuan Zhi fully understood that after Xiang Pang Yun had revealed his true

form to Xue Ying, that Xue Ying would not have any chance of retaliating against him. This situation would not give Bai Yuan Zhi and his fellow riders enough time to escape. Thus, every single moment of time must be fully utilised for them to leave the area.

*“Hu!”* The Black-Moon Centipede immediately turned about, flying at top speed away.

*“Brother, brother!”* Qing Shi’s streamed, endlessly, down his cheeks. He fixated on Black-Wind Cliff not far away, praying that a miracle would happen, praying that his brother would survive.

.....

The long spear stabbed a meter deep into the mountain rock, allowing Xue Ying’s inverted and flying body to stop. Yet that four-hooved, black-scaled, beast once again pounced towards his direction.

*“He!”* Xue Ying exerted his strength, dodging to the side while pulling out his long spear free from the rock.

The four-hooved, black-scaled, monster’s blood eyes oozed killing intent.

*Hong!*

Its gigantic scaled wings suddenly flapped wide, showing the enormity of its wingspan.

Its enormous body charged towards Xue Ying but he managed to dodge it. Following behind the beast’s were its gigantic wings with a blood-coloured stream of energy. Xue Ying was unable to dodge the blood-coloured stream of energy in time. With a *‘Peng’* — the wing’s stream instantly slapped his body with a turbulent force, causing Xue Ying to fly backwards.

*“I...”*

This attack caused Xue Ying to fly out of the Black-Wind Cliff zone. He flew unceasingly while the black wind maelstrom buffeted him with its powerful force.

The difference between the two combatants was too big.

After transforming to its true self, Xiang Pang Yun’s strength was too

overwhelming. Coupled with the wind being too fierce on the Black-Wind Cliff and the enormity of that four-hooved, black-scaled, beast, dodging was too much of an arduous task.

“Hahaha...” The four-hooved, black-scaled, beast flapped its wings and charged out of the Black-Wind Cliff, before flying up the skies. With another flap, it was able to easily stay in mid-air, despite of the black wind maelstrom surging close by. After all, how powerful were the wings of a four-hooves black-scaled, mutated beast? Being a flying-beast by nature, it had an innate talent in using wind!

The power wrought by a flap of its wings was unimaginable. Even if he was in the midsts of the black wind maelstrom, he could still fully withstand the force of wind and not be swept away by it, much less to say when he was far from the maelstrom.

The four hooved, black-scaled, beast and Xue Ying stared at each other.

Xue Ying was being swept backwards.

The four-hooved, black-scaled, beast discontinued its pursuit. Continuing its pursuit meant that it would have to continue deeper down the maelstrom with increasing levels of danger. Naturally, it did not want to enter such situation. Furthermore, the ‘Black-Wind Abyss’ would suffice in killing Xue Ying.

“Haha, Dong Bo Xue Ying, you’re dead. I’ll let your little brother and the rest accompanying him join you so that you won’t be so lonely after your death.” The four-hooved, black-scaled beast flapped its wings before flying off in its chase of the Black-Moon Centipede. It wanted to kill off every single human within it.

“Little brother.”

Time slowed down.

Xue Ying’s vision captured the escaping Black-Moon Centipede high up in the skies. He was able to see clearly those on the centipede, that anxious and agonised Uncle Zong, Uncle Tong and the distraught little brother Qing Shi, who looked as if he wanted to rush down from the Black-Moon Centipede. Uncle Zong and Uncle Tong both appeared to be holding Qing Shi back.

“Brother, brother—” His little brother was totally distraught. He raised his

hand, gazing straight at his brother who was currently being swept towards the middle of the maelstrom.

That was his big brother!

“Little brother...”

“Little brother, little Pebble.”

Xue Ying did not know when they began, but tears were now streaming down his face.

When his parents were still around, the little Qing Shi would often babble while hugging his legs, “Brother, hug.”

“Brother, bad guy.” After being teased, little Qing Shi would shout.

“I want to sleep with brother.” That snotty and chubby child had slept with him on the same bed for many years, and his shirt had been wetted by the saliva from his brother many times.

“Brother, half is for you to eat.” That greedy snotty child was only willing to share with his brother the food that was so very tasty.

Over time, that snotty child grew up and went on to learn magic.

“Brother, I’m already a mage, I’m a mage,” He would exclaim joyfully.

“Qing Shi is so awesome.” Xue Ying would laughed when he hear that.

.....

Memories of his past ran through his mind.

Regardless of how naughty he was, or how wayward he became at times, Qing Shi would always remain Xue Ying’s most important person in this life, and someone he was willing to sacrifice himself in order to protect.

A sudden wave of powerful determination began coursing through his soul.

No one!

No one can kill my little brother!

Definitely not!

*‘I, Dong Bo Xue Ying, even if I were to die, I would still climb up from hell!’*

“Ah ah ah ah ah ah!” Xue Ying suddenly roared out in fury, a roar that most deeply resonated within him. At the same time, a short spear appeared in his left hand. At that moment, the maelstrom already had a strong hold on him, and he could not reach towards that four-hooved, black-scaled, beast. Thus, the only method he had now was to depend on this short spear, even though it seemed like a joke.

However, at this very moment, Xue Ying only knew that he had to grasp hold of this opportunity.

The flames of anger burned in his chest, the endless fury pumped through his body, leaving him feeling as if his entire body was on fire.

*“Hong!!!”*

Suddenly, a bright flame appeared on Xue Ying’s body, surrounding even the skies around him. The short spear in his hand was being encircled by that similar flame. Within the world-sweeping black wind, this red-coloured flame was incredibly bright, terrifyingly eye-catching.

At this moment, he was akin to a deity in the flame.

*Hong!*

His body was flying backwards in mid-air. Then suddenly, he exerted his strength, causing the short spear in his hand to fly out as a blaze, as if it were a meteor.

“En?” The four-hooved, black-scaled, beast turned towards Xue Ying when he heard the roars of fury. Following up, he saw Xue Ying’s entire body being surrounding by flames, and the meteor-like short spear that was being shot towards him.

“This!” The four-hooved, black-scaled, beast was shocked. He hurriedly put his entire thought into defending.

*Pu.*

Its feet and claws barely made it into position fast enough to defended itself, with the spear piercing towards it, lightning fast. That meteor-like radiance continued onwards and with a ‘*puchi*’, it pierced right into the chest of the

beast. The entire spear fully entered into its body, continuing to the point where the spear tip exited out the other side of the magical beast.

“Die for me!!!” Within Xue Ying’s hands, a second short spear appeared, and then a third short spear appeared.

*Hong! Hong!*

The second short spear pierced through the lower abdomen of the four-hooved, black-scaled, beast, leaving behind a big hole through the depths of its body. As for the third short spear, it pierced directly into the skull of the beast, forcing itself directly through it!

“Myriad... Myriad Existences...” The four-hooved, black-scaled, beast could not believe itself as it looked towards that figure surrounding by flames. At this moment, he finally realised something – that this terrifying genius had actually attained power perfectly as one a long time ago.

Realm of Myriad Existences.

On the Dao of techniques, once one comprehended it to the peak, the next level would be to grasp hold of the mysteries behind the Myriad Existences in the universe.

According to the divide of realms...

Great Spear Master represented reaching the peak in a mortal’s technique.

Realm of Myriad Existences would instead refer to the start of a Transcendent’s understanding towards the nature of heaven and earth, and the very first step towards comprehending it. Usually, one would only attain such comprehension when one became a Transcendent. As for Legend rankers... even in the entire Dragon Mountain Empire, including those Legend experts over hundred years of age, approximately only 50 of such existences could reach this realm.

Great Spear Master – represented one’s physique power perfectly united as one. Thereafter, further comprehension would allow one to start to feel nature, for one to understand the mysteries behind the heaven and earth.

Dong Bo Xue Ying attained power perfectly as one when he was 15. After that,



he had built himself a bamboo house at the back of the mountain in order to start comprehending the laws of nature. His spear techniques had become more and more restrained, with a touch of the breath from nature within it. This was the process behind understanding the mysteries of heaven and earth.

‘One with the World’ was actually a state for cultivators to look more closely at the nature of heaven and earth!

Before achieving that state of One with the World, one could still feel nature, just that the feelings would be fuzzy, as if watching through a layer of chiffon! But with the passing of six years, his spear techniques would inevitably be transformed by nature.

Especially the Qi method, “Three Stage Flame Technique”, allowing him to feel clearly the mysteries behind the flame every time he absorbed the power of flame into his body.

Six years of accumulation.

All of the life energy burst out right at this moment alongside with his willpower, that endless fury of flame and desire... finally allowed him to breakthrough the ‘Great Spear Master Realm’, achieving the ‘Realm of Myriad Existences’. Among these so-called Myriad Existences belonging to the heaven and earth, Xue Ying had only comprehended a little secret behind the Profound Mystery of Fire. But this was a profound power from the heaven and earth, and was something only the top 50 experts in the Dragon Mountain Book could comprehend. Such power was enough to kill even pseudo-Transcendents!

“Hu~~~” Xue Ying was bathed in flame, with the surrounding flame bringing out power in trying to stop his motion within the black wind maelstrom.

However...

The power of the flame could only carry up to 5,000 kg of force. Furthermore, when he threw out that short spear, his body also flew reacted with an opposite force, moving backwards until the current state of his body was close to the eye of the maelstrom where the whizzing of black wind swept forth with a strength of a few times greater than the 5,000 kg of force, ensuring the futility in resisting. This 22 years absolute genius who could rank in the top 50 of the Dragon Mountain Book, could only display his terrifying radiance at this

moment, before falling from his splendor.

“Qing Shi.” Xue Ying could see the currently escaping panicky Black-Moon Centipede. With it, a smile of relief appeared on his face.

That’s enough, that’s enough.

So long as his little brother could live, that was enough.

*Hu.*

Under the sweeping force of the fierce wind, Xue Ying fell unceasingly. Yet he would still hold his head high up, smiling at the Black-Moon Centipede high up in the sky, looking at the loved ones on top of the Centipede whom he was willing to sacrifice himself for.

## Book 3: Chapter 16 – Falling into the abyss

---

The Black-Moon Centipede escaped in a panic. Although the mutated beast below made Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi extremely anxious, what he saw suddenly stunned him.

The same sight astonished Zong Ling, Tong San, Qing Shi, Kong You Yue, Ji Rong, and Si Chen as well.

Because—

After Xiang Pang Yun had transformed into the mutated beast, he had knocked Xue Ying out of Black-Wind Cliff, causing Xue Ying to become uncontrollably swept by the fierce wind towards the maelstrom. Unexpectedly, Xue Ying let out a world-shaking roar – his body had leaned backwards, a short spear had appeared on his right hand, and even his entire figure had been engulfed by flame; even the surroundings had been illuminated by dazzling, massively spread-out flame – like a very beautiful flame lotus.

Dong Bo Xue Ying was the very image of a fire deity.

Xue Ying threw the short spear! It shot through the sky like a meteor!

One spear, two spears, three spears.

Every single short spear was a spear that the mutated beast could not block. Each weapon penetrated through the beast's vital spots, causing the creature to die on the spot. Its wings that were originally full of strength became limp, causing the monster's enormous body to eventually get powerlessly swept by the fierce wind towards the black wind maelstrom.

"It died! The beast died!" Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi was full of joy, though he was shocked as well.

"Quick, quick go and save Xue Ying, quick go and save him." Zong Ling had encountered many life and death situations in his past, and thus, he knew how important time was, making his reaction the fastest of all. Qing Shi turned anxious at that, causing him to react with a shout, "Quick save my brother,

teacher, quick save my brother.”

“Oh!” Bai Yuan Zhi also immediately responded to the urgent requests.

*Hu.*

He controlled the Black-Moon Centipede, turning in an arc, before rushing down at half-sonic speed. Even though the distance was more than a thousand meters, they easily covered it.

Unfortunately, Xue Ying had already been swept into the middle of the maelstrom and was currently being swept deeper into it.

“We’re too late.” Bai Yuan Zhi shook his head, “Even if we had enough time, I would not dare to bring the Black-Moon Centipede so close to the maelstrom.” He did not say as much at this moment. Actually, everyone realized it was too late. They just wanted to at least attempt to put in some last ditch effort at saving Xue Ying.

*‘Dong Bo Xue Ying, is he going to die?’* You Yue’s felt complex emotions. She had never imagined that Xue Ying would be powerful enough that even the transformed beast, Xiang Pang Yun would still be executed by him!

However, Ji Rong’s eyes brightened. There was a hint of insanity in her gaze, *‘He died? That is good. Him dying is a good thing! It is only him preventing me and Qing Shi from being together. Now that he is dead, I believe that not long after, Qing Shi and I will be together! This dead expert must have left behind many treasures... I must acquire them so that I can present such riches to our noble god.’*

.....

He watched that Black-Moon Centipede descend.

“Little brother,” said Xue Ying. After seeing the gigantic four-hooved black-scaled beast’s corpse nearby, his heart trembled. Taking out a steel hook attached to a rope, he threw it.

*Hu.*

How great was his strength? Even as he was in the middle of the black wind maelstrom, the steel hook turned into a blur as it flew towards the four-hooved

black-scaled beast, wrapping twice around its neck. This rope was actually a prize he had found in the treasure storage left behind by that Demonic Emissary. It was really tough. With just a tug, that dead mutated beast was pulled down while Xue Ying was pulled up.

*Sou*, in a flash, Xue Ying landed on the mutated beast's body.

Standing on top of the four-hooved mutated beast's body, getting a feel of the surrounding fierce wind, Xue Ying then exerted strength in his legs! His entire body bathed in flame!

*Hong!*

Soaring the skies with a leap!

However, the power of the Black wind maelstrom was too strong, reducing his flame empowered speed. At the very most, he could only reach a height of just over 50 meters before he fell again.

.....

The Black-Moon Centipede dove down at top speed, but it stopped a few hundred meters away from the black wind maelstrom.

"Closer," Qing Shi urged anxiously.

"I dare not go any closer. The wind is too strong, such that if I go any closer, the Black-Moon Centipede will not be able to withstand the wind," Bai Yuan Zhi said as the fierce wind whizzed around them. Even at such a distance, the power of the fierce wind taxed the Black-Moon Centipede flight ability. Should they go any closer, the centipede would no longer be able to overcome the wind strength and would be swept with it as well.

Qing Shi, Zong Ling and the rest anxiously gazed at the distant Black wind maelstrom on the centipede.

*Hu.*

In the eye of the maelstrom, the four-hooved mutated beast suddenly dropped. At the same time, a figure bathed in flame soared up to the skies. Everywhere around him was a sea of bright-red flame, weakening the power of the surrounding wind.

“Brother!” Qing Shi shouted in tears.

“Xue Ying!” Zong Ling and Tong San were anxious as well, though they could not do anything to help out I.

Swathed in flame, Xue Ying raised his head and stared at the distant Qing Shi, Zong Ling and Tong San sitting on top of the Black-Moon Centipede.

He began uncontrollably descending downwards once again.

“Qing Shi! Live well. Don’t disappoint me!” Xue Ying’s forceful voice resounded through the world. He worried most about his little brother. Xue Ying was afraid that should he die, his little brother would be greatly devastated, and that was something he did not want to see.

“Hahaha, do not worry. I, Dong Bo Xue Ying will not die so easily.”

“Even if I get swept into the Black wind Abyss, I’ll still find a way to live on!”

Xue Ying’s voice was full of confidence.

His gaze swept across everyone on top of the Black-Moon Centipede. Suddenly, he looked towards Ji Rong, causing a jolt in his heart. This Ji Rong was after all, someone who was suspected of being a believer of the Demonic God by the Dragon Mountain Manor. Right now, she actually rode on top of the Black-Moon Centipede in order to get closer to his brother?

“Qing Shi, remember this. Never get together with this Ji Rong! Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi, she will be exiled from my Snowrock Mountain from tomorrow on. Prevent her from ever stepping one foot onto it,” Xue Ying said unyieldingly.

Ji Rong was stunned.

Qing Shi’s big brother was not giving her even a single chance.

“Rest assured, Lord of the castle.” Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi answered unhesitantly. Such a heroic, outstanding character was someone he much admired.

“Haha, thanks.” Xue Ying’s spirit was very much uplifted, “When I come home from Black Wind Abyss, I’ll definitely have a drink with you, Great Mage.”

“This old one will be waiting for you!” Bai Yuan Zhi replied loudly.

Finishing the conversation.

Xue Ying continued falling downwards. Amidst the black wind maelstrom, this figure in flame became more and more blurry. As he fell, he looked towards his little brother, Qing Shi, with a smile on his face.

The wind whizzed unceasingly.

No other sounds could be heard in the world.

That black-robed teenager, surrounded by flames, had truly entered into the deep recesses of the black wind maelstrom, disappearing from everyone's sight.

Qing Shi's body trembled. He raised out his hands as if wanting to catch at that... brother of his amidst the flame, somehow or another, still appearing in front of him.

"Why... why..." Qing Shi was fully devastated.

Pain and agony drowned him like an incoming tide.

This was a pain he had not encountered before.

His life felt torn!

"Brother!!!" Qing Shi let out a mournful scream, "Come back, come back for me, come back! I'll listen to you, I'll definitely listen to you and not curse you. I won't get angry at you anymore. Just, just come back!!!"

Zong Ling and Tong San both hugged Qing Shi from the sides. Their eyes were filled with tears as well.

Living together for over 20 years.

Xue Ying was like their own child. How could they not feel grief? Yet because they had experienced more deaths in their lives, they were not as devastated.

"Xue Ying, do not worry. I and Tong San will definitely take good care of Qing Shi." Zong Ling thought.

Beside him, Tong San was still hugging Qing Shi, "Qing Shi, your brother has a heaven-sweeping talent, with a combat ability that transcends our imagination. Even if he was swept into the Black-Wind Abyss, I'm sure he will survive. He will definitely survive."

Mage Bai Yuan Zhi and Mage Si Chen rode beside them, sighing.

They believed that the last words of Xue Ying, about how he would definitely return... were merely to give his little brother hope. They knew Xue Ying did not want Qing Shi to do some desperate acts in his grief.

“Really amazing,” Bai Yuan Zhi sighed, “He is just 22 years. That Xiang Pang Yun became even stronger after revealing his beast-form, and yet, he was still killed by Dong Bo Xue Ying! In the end, Xue Ying was able to activate the flames of the world... that must be, Realm of Myriad Existence?”

“The fabled realm Myriad Existences. Even in the entire huge Dragon Mountain Empire, including those hundred years old men, those who have reached this Realm of Myriad Existences do not even number 50,” Mage Si Chen sighed, “Once one is able to achieve the Realm of Myriad Existences, they must have reached the top 50! Even if it was my clan’s old ancestors, they would be powerless in front of Dong Bo Xue Ying and not be able to retaliate. Even if it was the true self of Xiang Pang Yun, with such a rise of his combat power, he was still killed by Xue Ying’s short spears.”

“This combat power would be able to kill off even the pseudo-Transcendents!” Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi sighed.

“This kind of genius will only be born once in a hundred years throughout the entire Dragon Mountain empire.” Mage Si Chen did not have thoughts of comparing himself with Xue Ying. Towards him, he only felt admiration and regret.

Comprehending One with the Heavens at 22 was already a rare sight in the Dragon Mountain Empire, with only around a dozen achieving it.

But comprehending the Realm of Myriad Existences at 22 years old.

It was something that would only appear once every 100-200 years, a truly proud son of the heavens.

“The end of such an elegant character just after exposing his prowess... “ Mage Bai Yuan Zhi sighed once again, “Pity, such a pity.”

“Yes, if he lives on, he is almost certainly will reach the rank of Transcendents.” Mage Si Chen nodded, “Their movement of chasing and battling throughout a



distance of 50 kilometers would have attracted the attention of Dragon Mountain Manor. I believe very soon, someone will come and find us. With the release of the news of this battle... Dong Bo Xue Ying will definitely become famous, but it's a pity, it will still be too late."

"En." Bai Yuan Zhi nodded. Once news of this battle was spread, it would definitely be world-breaking news. Initially, this should be Xue Ying's splendor, and an achievement of allowing him to reach the highest level in the entire Dragon Mountain Empire. Yet now, he would not be able to enjoy that splendor anymore.

.....

Black-Wind Abyss.

The fierce wind whizzed about. The deeper he went, the stronger the wind.

Xue Ying was surrounded by flames. He primed the World Energy into the flames in order to reduce his falling speed. Despite that, his speed continued to increase.

"This is too fast. My speed has already broken the sound barrier. If my speed continues increasing any further... I'm afraid that I'll get splattered to death once I reach the rock-bottom of this Black-Wind Abyss!" Xue Ying was anxious. Suddenly, he saw the corpse of the four-hooves black-scaled mutated beast. Its body was really big, with two gigantic wings on it. Naturally, during its fall, the resistance brought by the wings was so great that its speed reduced so much till Xue Ying was able to reach it.

"En?" Xue Ying's heart trembled. At that juncture, he brought forth the flames of the world, shrouding that four-hooves mutated beast and doing his utmost in slowing its speed.

As for himself, not only did he not rely on the flames to reduce his speed, he actually fell even faster!

*Hu.*

Soon, Xue Ying fell onto the body of the four-hooved mutated beast. Letting out his senses onto the beast, he discovered a storage wristband beneath the scales at the front chest section. He took the wristband and examined what was

inside.

In the storage wristband, there were a lot of things; there was even food, a thick pile of gold notes, jewelry and more gold...

“Nothing useful here.” Xue Ying wanted to find something to aid in reducing his falling speed. The wristband contents did not contain anything useful for that purpose. Naturally, under ordinary conditions, Legend rankers would not die from falling. Regardless of whether it was Xiang Pang Yun or that Demonic God Emissary, none of them would prepare an item in breaking one’s fall.

Xue Ying’s gaze turned towards the four-hooved mutated beast.

“The scales of this mutated beast are really hard, harder than the rocks and soil on that mountain, and would not be able to reduce the force from the impact.” With a turn of his hands, the Flying Snow God Spear appeared in his grip. With that flat-sharpness of the spearhead, with a ‘*Shuai*’, he cut out the wings from the beast! Right now, those scaled-wings were not covered by the blood-stream as before, and thus, would not have defences as high as previously.

That blood-stream... was actually the Primordial Bloodline of this four-hooved mutated beast.

Quickly, Xue Ying cut one of the scaled wings entirely apart. This scaled wing had a wingspan of over a dozen meter, and it was quite wide. Yet compared to its size, the weight was quite light, implying a hollow structure within.

“*Pu.*” “*Pu.*” “*Pu.*” “*Pu.*”

Xue Ying stabbed apart some of the scales on this wing so that he was able to grab the bone support on it.

“Life or death, I’ll gamble on this.” Xue Ying kept his Flying Snow God Spear, grabbing onto a tough bone within the stabbed-open hole of the wing.

That was how he used the gigantic scaled wings as support.

*Hu!*

A wingspan of over 10 meters and 5 meters wide, this was how Xue Ying used it as his support. One must know that he was currently falling at a speed faster

than sound and the fierce wind around was relentlessly pulling him down! But under the influence of the wing at speed faster than sound... The impact of airflow actually allowed Xue Ying's speed to reduce, making him further and further from the four-hooved mutated beast body below him.

With both his hands holding onto the gigantic scaled-wing, coupled with the flames from the world, his speed gradually become slower. However, the deeper he fell, the stronger the wind, ensuring his falling speed to exceed sound regardless. Furthermore, there were even whirls within, causing Xue Ying to tumble around and making it hard to use the wing as support. He was struggling, doing his utmost in order to find that minute chance at surviving.

"How deep is this Black-Wind Abyss. It feels like I've already fallen for more than 7000-8000 meters already!" Xue Ying was rotating and overturning at times. But the fact remained that he was falling.

"En?" Xue Ying saw that beside the black fierce wind, at a mountain wall 1 km away, there was actually an enormous black organism entrenched there. That faint black figure seemed to be like a dragon! However, the length of its body was already over a thousand meters, longer than the body-length of any ordinary dragons. The enormous black organism swept around with its pair of golden eyes.

Xue Ying felt the tremors in his soul. This gap between them, was akin to how the organism could kill him with a breath. It was at this moment that Xue Ying Understood... why all rankers below Transcendents who came exploring would die!

*Hu.*

His falling speed was really fast. In a flash, he could no longer see that enormous black organism, falling even deeper into the pitch-black recesses of abyss.

## Book 4: Chapter 1 – Landing

---

As he was falling, Xue Ying could see that past the black, fierce wind were several black silhouettes. Some were enormous, while others appeared in the shape of an ordinary human... that unseen suppressive force likewise alternated between strong and weak as well. The strong suppressive force was so strong that Xue Ying sensed it could kill him with a simple gaze. The weak force had the minimum strength of a Transcendent. All these sensations caused a tightening in Xue Ying's heart.

At the beginning when he started falling, he had promised he would definitely return from the abyss, both to give his brother hope and to fight for his own survival! Yet right now, he understood that living through this disaster would be extremely challenging.

"Whatever, I'll do it step by step." Xue Ying's resolve was firm, "Firstly, I'll need to think of a way to survive the fall."

Both his hands held onto the enormous scaled wing's bone, stretching the wing apart.

The wind streaming past his body was both fierce and volatile. Xue Ying had to do his utmost to ensure the scaled wings would provide him with the greatest resistance to reduce his speed even further.

"But it is still too fast, too fast." Xue Ying's speed of descent was still increasing, "At this speed, I'll likely get splattered to death!"

"En?"

Xue Ying's expression changed.

This was because he could clearly see the surface below!

"I'm nearly there!" Xue Ying's heart was completely lifted up. Regardless of how dangerous this Black-Wind Abyss was, if he did not survive the first fall, then any chance of further struggle would be gone.

*“Hong—”*

Suddenly, before reaching the rock-bottom ground of about 100 meters square, the fierce wind disappeared.

Xue Ying felt the absence of any strong winds at about 100 meters above rock-bottom! As for the air space above that 100-meters layer... it was the start of a layer of the tempestuous, fierce wind blotting out the skies!

Xue Ying tore through the air towards the ground, creating a sonic boom. After entering the 100-meters zone... with the condition of no-wind, the enormous wings held by both his hands increased the air resistance tremendously! He even felt the explosive wrenching force pulling on his shoulders. Due to his strong, fleshly body, he continued to withstand such forces and ensured that he still exerted his full control at critical moments.

At a distance of 100 meters, Xue Ying’s speed rapidly decelerated.

But the distance of 100 meters was too short, and his initial falling speed was too fast. Within the blink of an eye, he smashed right into the mountain’s surface with a *‘hong’* sound. Even though his speed had cut down by half, it was still faster than the speed of sound, blasting a big crater in the mountain face below.

*“Hong—”* Both his legs reached the ground, before his entire body smashed into it.

The mountain rocks seemed to be as soft as water.

Or to speak simply, with Xue Ying’s powerful, fleshly body, the mountain’s surface was simply too weak. For Xue Ying, smashing onto the rocky mountain top was like an ordinary man jumping into water, but — once his speed reached a certain high velocity, and at a certain height, even if a man were to jump into water, he would still splattered to his death.

*“Hu.”* Xue Ying lost consciousness for a moment after hitting the bottom. The huge impact broke his bones with a sound and fresh blood spewed out from his mouth.

*“I’m injured. The bone of my left arm is fractured and three bones broken in my sternum. But most troublesome of all is the injury to my viscera.”* Xue Ying

had a very fine understanding of his body. He still rejoiced over the fact that he was able to reduce his speed by half during the last 100 meters! This enabled him to reduce the impact by 70-80 percent. Otherwise, he would still been splattered to death even with using the scaled wings.

“Now, my injuries are quite heavy, with my viscera being impacted. I won’t be able to endure fights that are too strenuous.” Xue Ying immediately understood, “I’ve got to quickly find a place to recover. With my recovery rate, only 3 hours will be needed for full recovery.”

The outer flesh would recover the fastest, followed by the bones and lastly, the viscera.

Xue Ying was still joyous over the fact that he had survived the fall.

.....

Following his landing and injury analysis, Xue Ying hastily dashed to higher ground. With both his arms held out for balance, he gazed into the distance. He first saw the scattered remains of the four-hooved, black-scaled beast. With this fall, the creature’s entire body had already splattered into many pieces, with several parts missing. At the same time, at a certain distance, he could see a black-scaled soldier dashing towards him at a speed so fast that after-images could be seen.

“Not good. I was discovered.” Xue Ying did not hesitate in escaping.

*Sou sou sou.*

Rapidly retreating, only after a while did Xue Ying have some apprehension decide to stop and hide behind a large chunk of rock about one kilometer away from his landing spot. Stealthily looking at the black-scaled soldier, Xue Ying saw that the soldier had reached – the large crater at the contact point.

“En?” Xue Ying’s vision was quite keen. With just a glance, he saw that beneath the black scales, the soldier’s body was formed by some black mist. The soldier’s eyes on his mask glowed with a faint red light.

“Not a human nor a beast. Somehow... it’s like it is not alive?” Xue Ying speculated with some uncertainty, “I originally thought that it had discovered me and wants to chase after me. According to what I know of the abilities of

ordinary Legend ranks, at this distance, it should be able to see me! Yet it does not come after me and instead, it investigates that crater I made accompanied by a loud bang.”

“It seems that its vision is quite ordinary, or maybe, it did not depend on its eyesight?” Xue Ying had many speculations.

Regardless, concluding from the fact it had speed that formed after-images...

Just solely on this, the black-scaled soldier would have surpassed Xiang Pang Yun completely!

“First, find a place to recover.” Xue Ying observed the surroundings. Soon, he spied a small cave beside the mountain. Only after the black-scaled soldier turned around to further investigate did he quietly leap across the 50 meters of distance to enter this small cave.

Using the energy from the world to probe for any organisms in this cave, he found none within.

Standing at the edge of this cave, he carefully peeked at the black-scaled soldier.

Standing at a high position, he could thus see further.

“That is—”

Xue Ying felt shocked.

At a distance of about 25-30 kilometers away, there was actually a cavern palace glowing with an azure light. Many black-scaled soldiers patrolled outside the cavern palace. They appeared to not know the meaning of exhaustion, and constantly marched about. Other than the black-scaled soldiers, there were also a small number of black organisms that gave him the feeling of pressure when he looked at them.

“Regardless of whether it was that thousand meters long, black dragon-like organism entrenched in the mountain high up, or the other black-coloured organisms, including the black-scaled soldiers,” Xue Ying nodded lightly, “It seems they are all protecting that cavern palace.”

“If I were to get closer, I’m afraid I would get easily killed” Xue Ying murmured.

“Forget it. Recovery come first.”

Xue Ying retreated into the small cave, sat down cross-legged, took out a piece of big meaty bone, and started roasting it with his flame.

This meaty bone was actually food found within Xiang Pang Yun’s storage treasure. Whether it was Xiang Pang Yun or that Demonic Emissary, their storage treasures did contain a large amount of food and water. This led to Xue Ying murmured to himself that maybe, all Legend rankers carried with them food and water? As to the smell of roast meat, Xue Ying was not worried. He could utilise the energy of the world to prevent the smell from escaping out of the cave.

“En, this is so fragrant. Seems like this Xiang Pang Yun really did know how to enjoy himself with good food.” Xue Ying ate it with big bites. Under his control, the fractured bones in his body naturally rectified themselves, and his visceras, too, gradually began recovering.

\*\*\*\*\*

The night was long.

Zong Ling and Tong San were able to control their emotions, but Qing Shi was completely devastated.

“My brother will certainly come back. He will. I’ll not move. I’m not going to move. I’ll wait for him below the Black-Wind Cliff. I’ll wait for him here.” Qing Shi was not willing to move, yet after Zong Ling’s words of persuasion, “Qing Shi, this Black-Wind Abyss is so big. Xue Ying might even come out from another side of the Black-Wind Cliff. Regardless, the first place he would visit would be the Snowrock Castle. If you were to wait for him here at the foot of the mountains... I’m afraid you might miss out on him.”

Qing Shi was convinced by this, and thus, went back to Snowrock Castle on the Black-moon Centipede.

“Hu!”

At this time, a team of cavalry rushed towards Snowrock Castle under the late night, with the Dragon Mountain Manor Lord Si An heading it.

How frightening was the news of the great battle between Xiang Pang Yun and



Xue Ying? The spies arranged by Dragon Mountain Manor went back to inform their manor lord of Water Rites Town Dragon Mountain Manor at the fastest speed. Lord Si An was so shocked that he did not care about sleeping. He arrived immediately.

*Hong Long Long —*

The draw-bridge was brought down, and the gates opened.

“Lord Si An.” Zong Ling came out personally to welcome him.

“How was it? Where’re Dong Bo Xue Ying? And Xiang Pang Yun?” Lord Si An asked.



## Book 4: Chapter 2 – A Night Later

---

“Lord Si An, let’s talk while walking.” although his heart grieved, Zong Ling still kept basic etiquette.

“Did Xiang Pang Yun come to kill Xue Ying?” As Lord Si An and Zong Ling walked together, Lord Si An couldn’t resist asking about this important affair.

Zong Ling nodded, “Assassins came to fulfill a Bloodshed tavern mission to kill Qing Shi. Xue Ying killed them, but then Xiang Pang Yun showed up and battled Xue Ying. They fought all the way from Snowrock Mountain to Black Wind cliff.”

“Black Wind cliff?” Lord Si An blurted out, startled.

As a manor lord of this small county area, he naturally knew about terrifying places of despair within his territory.

“They battled the entire way for more than 50 kilometers?” Lord Si An was shocked and couldn’t believe it. To fight like they did meant that both sides abilities were nearly equal, “To be able to maintain fighting and struggling for that long, Xue Ying’s strength must be comparable with the top 1000 rankers of Dragon Mountain Book.”

He still couldn’t believe it.

How old was Xue Ying? He was simply too great of a genius!

“And the result? Asked Lord Si An.

Zong Ling gazed into the night sky. After a silent moment, “At first, we thought Xue Ying might survive. However no one expected that Xiang Pang Yun was not a human, but instead he was a mutated magical beast.”

“A mutated magical beast that could change to human?” Lord Si An’s expression changed, “Sorcerer Palace?”

“What is Sorcerer Palace?” inquired Zong Ling.

“This is not something you have to care about,” excused Lord Si An. Behind this world’s ruler were the powerful Transcendents. Thanks to his identity as a

core member of the Dragon Mountain Manor Lord's staff, he knew some of the secrets that couldn't be disclosed to the public. He knew that since time immemorial, the Sorcerer Palace and humankind were in a continuous struggle. How serious this information/implication?

Sorcerer Palace has sent some magic beast to infiltrate mankind.

Fortunately, a magical beast needs to pay a hefty price to transformed into a human, so everything was still within control.

"And then?" Lord Si An continue to asked, "after he revealed his real form, did he kill Xue Ying?"

"No," replied Zong Ling, "An explosion caused Xue Ying to be thrown out from Black Wind cliff and get swept into the Black Wind Abyss. While being dragged into the abyss and in mid air, Xue Ying threw some short spears. Suddenly flames burst from his whole body and the sort spears turned into meteors which then pierced through Xiang Pang Yun's four hooved beast body. Three of the short spears stabbed into the beast's vital points, and the four hooved creature met its demise."

"Fire? Killed by short spears?" Lord Si An muttered, utterly shocked, "Myriad, realm of Myriad Existences?"

"Yes, Myriad Existences. Xue Ying could comprehended the Myriad Existences' profound edict of fire." Zong Ling sighed, as a Meteor ranker, he clearly knew the Dragon Mountain Book contents and recognized what Myriad Existences represented.

"He, he only 22 years old? Realm of Myriad Existence?" Lord Si An announced, stunned. Heavens!

It was a big blow.

This kind of exceptional genius might only appears once every hundred years in the whole Dragon Mountain Empire. Such a genius would almost certainly be able to become a Transcendent.

"This information is not false, right?" confirmed Lord Si An. He knew that once reported, this information would alert the Transcendents. It wasn't easy for someone to become a Transcendent, and the empire only had a handful of them.

“How could it be fake? If not for Xue Ying killing the four hooved beast, do you think we still would be alive in Snowrock Castle?” retorted Zong Ling. “If you still do not believe it, you can ask Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi and Si Chen.”

“I will definitely ask them.” nodded Lord Si An. He believed those people wouldn’t lie to him. He estimated, very soon, a Transcendent would visit here. In front of a Transcendent, mortals would very honestly tell everything.

“And Xue Ying?” pursued Lord Si An.

There was a hint of sadness in Zong Ling’s eyes as he calmly replied, “He couldn’t resist the black wind maelstrom and was swept into the Black Wind Abyss!”

Lord Si An was silent.

He got acquainted with Xue Ying when Xue Ying was only 15 years old. He still clearly remembered the first time he met the 15 years old Xue Ying, and the nice impression he got from this black clothed youngster. how he felt this very youngster would be terrific in the future. Six years later, Xue Ying was taller and, although he appeared reserved, also gave the impression of a mountain, sturdy and hard to shake. Recently, he had received intelligence from his superior suspecting that Xue Ying was a Legend ranker.

But the truth?

Xue Ying was even more stunning and dazzling than expected. He matched Xiang Pang Yun when locked in close quarter combat. When the beast showed its true form, in the final moment, Xue Ying used short spears to killed Xiang Pang Yun!

Only 22 years old and already entered among the top 50 rankers of the Dragon Mountain Book!

So dazzling! So brilliant!

Destined to become a Transcendent, such an extraordinary existence, but...

To perish!

“Pity, such a pity.” Lord Si An gently shook his head and felt regret. As a Dragon Mountain Manor core member, he understand what it meant to become

a Transcendent. Transcendents were on a completely different level of existence. No matter how formidable a Legend ranker, they were still mortal, but a Transcendent... their difference was like heaven and earth.

Of course, this difference did not include Pseudo Transcendents!

A talented person like Xue Ying, if he were to stay alive, certainly he could become a Transcendent – a real Transcendent!

“I will not disturb you any longer,” excused Lord Si An, “I will go to ask Bai Yuan Zhi and the others. I think this time, our Water Rites Town will be busy.”

“I will walk Manor Lord out.” Zong Ling accompanied Lord Si An to Castle’s main gate.

Zong Ling watched Lord Si An take his men and travel to Great Mage’s Building.

Zong Ling noticed a figure standing not far from him. That figure was precisely the petite young girl Ji Rong. She appeared delicate and charming.

“You’re still not leaving?” Zong Ling icily chided her, his face unsightly.

“I want to see Qing Shi!” said Ji Rong.

Zong Ling coldly humph and turned his back to her.

The last thing Xue Ying had said before he fell into the Black Wind Abyss was for his brother to leave Ji Rong! Zong Ling definitely stood with Xue Ying’s point of view, so naturally he disliked this Ji Rong.

.....

Castle, inside the library.

Qing Shi sat on the chair that his big brother usually sat on and gently stroked the desk. His memory traversed back through the times he spent growing up with his big brother. His big brother cherished him more than anything. For his apprenticeship, Xue Ying had disregarded any danger and had gone into Mountain Range of Desolation.

He couldn’t forget his brother’s words.

“Unless I, Dong Bo Xue Ying die, nobody else will be permitted to harm my

little brother! Even you, Xiang Pang Yun!” his brother, with a spear in his hand, had said those words in front of Xiang Pang Yun. Those words now faintly echoed in Qing Shi’s ears.

“Qing Shi! Live well, do not disappointed me!”

Even when he began to fall into the Black Wind Abyss, Xue Ying still looked after him.

Pa! pa!

Tears fall down onto the desk, disintegrating into small drops.

People felt regret only when they lost the thing precious to them.

“Brother, I believe you will come back. You will definitely come back. I will be waiting for you, always waiting,” whispered Qing Shi, “Rest assured, I will not let you down. My big brother, Dong Bo Xue Ying, is the greatest genius in the whole world. As your younger brother, I will not smear your name!”

*Dong dong*

Knocking on the door.

“Qing Shi,” Zong Ling’s voice called from outside, “Ji Rong is still at castle’s gate, saying that she wants to see you.”

Qing Shi stood up and open the library door.

Zong Ling stood outside the library.

“Let’s go,” Qing Shi calmly said.

Zong Ling nodded. He saw Qing Shi grow up, so he knew, although Qing Shi was a little bit innocent, he was a good child. Zong Ling trusted Qing Shi, so he came to tell him about Ji Rong and to let him settle it.

.....

On top of the castle’s wall.

Qing Shi stood atop the castle’s wall and looked down at Ji Rong’s figure, standing alone down there.

“Qing Shi” Ji Rong looked up, there was pain expressed in her eyes.

“What my brother told me, is it true?” Qing Shi coldly asked.

Ji Rong replied hastily, “No! it’s not true!”

“I ask once more, is it true?!” Qing Shi glared down, his expression sharp, like a blade, eyes staring into Ji Rong’s eyes.

Stared at like that, Ji Rong hesitated slightly, “Qing Shi, you also don’t believe me?”

“Do you think I can still believe in you!?”

“Ha ha..... Because of you, I broke my big brother’s heart, haha, how stupid of me, what a joke! Ha ha ha...” Qing Shi laugh crazily.

Zong Ling silently watched from the side. He knew Qing Shi was venting.

“Leave!”

Qing Shi coldly said, “My brother already ordered that you have to leave Snowrock Mountain tomorrow and from this moment, you can no longer take a step in entering Snowrock Mountain!”

“Qing Shi, you really want...” Ji Rong’s eyes were full of tears.

“Take my order!” command Qing Shi, “if tomorrow afternoon Miss Ji Rong is still within SnowRock Mountain, use force to throw her down the mountain.”

“Understood!” responded the surrounding patrol guard on the castle wall and all the soldiers down there.

Qing Shi then turned around and left.

“Qing Shi, Qing shi...” called Ji Rong. She could only see Qing Shi as he walked away from the castle’s wall and vanished from her sight.

Ji Rong’s face took on an unsightly appearance, her heart was full of wrath, “Dong Bo Xue Ying, damn! Even in near death moment, you still obstruct me.”

.....

That night.

Lord Si An quickly reported the news. Within the night, the news delivered to Tranquil Sun Province’s Dragon Mountain Manor Lord Council who also

immediately reported it to the Transcendent beings.

At the same time, Mage Si Chen also traveled through the night, back to his Si Clan who controlled everything in Azure River County. This kind of important news would definitely have to be reported to Si Clan's old ancestor, Si Liang Hong.

\*\*\*\*\*

Finally the unordinary night passed by and dawn of the second day came.

At the bottom of Black Wind Abyss.

"Hu," Xue Ying opened his eyes after sitting cross legged and meditated for a night. His physical injury already fully healed.

He got up and went to the cave entrance.

Although the black wind maelstrom up there made him unable to see the sun, the valley floor was still brightly lit and appeared very different from the night before. The grass and flowers around made the valley floor appear beautiful, like a fairyland. The valley wall was mottled with mosses and the distant majestic immortal cave dwelling continuously emitted a faint azure light.

The light emitted by the cave dwelling was more faint in the daylight. The light circulated around with endless mystery.

"Unfortunately, I will die if I go closer," pondered Xue Ying, "That Demon God Emissary and Xiang Pang Yun storage spaces have food and water. I can utilize World Energy so my food consumption is low. But still, it only might last for a year. If I can't find the way out in this one year, I will surely starve to death!"

"Although it's dangerous, I must find way out." Xue Ying pondered and carefully examine the cave dwelling exterior.



## Book 4: Chapter 3 – Scars of Battle

---

Being holed up within a cave, one would eventually starve to death.

But since Xue Ying had already decided to search for a route to survival, that afternoon on the same day, he quietly leapt out of this cave in search for a means of living.

“*Sou.*” Xue Ying was very agile and flexible. With the aid of the World Energy, his actions did not emit any sounds at all.

“I should not get close to that secretive cavern palace. The defense there is too heavy, and even the weakest black-scaled soldier would be quite tough for me to handle!” Xue Ying speculated that these black-scaled soldiers were even stronger than Xiang Pang Yun. Of course, he himself had comprehended the ‘realm of myriad existences’, allowing his combat power to increase to a stage where he could easily kill Xiang Pang Yun. Yet against the black-scaled soldier... the final outcome would still be inconclusive!

Having no certainty towards handling even the weakest, it would be pointless to mention those stronger protectors.

“*Sou sou sou.*”

Quietly, without making sound and with his back towards that cavern palace, he moved towards other areas within the valley of this Black-Wind Abyss, gingerly searching along his way.

The valley of this Black-Wind Abyss was really spacious, spanning over five kilometers wide, with the narrowest parts being at least three kilometers.

“Everywhere is full of weed and moss. It seems like for the past ten thousand years, nobody has come here.” Xue Ying was observing the surroundings as he walked. Suddenly, he saw a huge fissure on the large piece of land in front of him. The fissure was cross shaped, with one of the sections being three to four meters wide and approximately ten to fifteen kilometers long.

The other fissure though was only one to two meters wide and three to four

kilometers long, with one the ends extending all the way to the walls of the valley, tearing through an enormous crack within. This crack in the wall was close to a hundred meters wide, extending all the way upwards beyond the layer of black wind.

“These two fissures?” Xue Ying had some palpitations in his heart. After all, having comprehended the realm of myriad existences, he could feel a terrifyingly sharp and ferocious Qi emanating from the fissures.

“Split apart by weapons! These two fissures were split apart by weapons!” Xue Ying concluded right there and then.

He walked towards the fissures and peered downwards.

At a glance...

The fissure upon the mountain rocks was pitch-black, preventing him from seeing the bottom-most part, only hinting that it became broader the deeper it went.

“It came from beneath!” Xue Ying concluded based on his observations of the markings, “Such immeasurable power, splitting apart the ground from beneath all the way up to the surface of the valley and leaving behind a 15-20 kilometers long fissure.”

Having deduced this, Xue Ying’s expression changed.

My heavens!

This was actually a strike from underground, and its remnant power left behind a 15-20 kilometers fissure on the surface. How terrifying was such a power? That was to say, those towering mountains of a few thousand meters high, towards such an expert, a wave of his hand is enough to split apart the mountain into two! Even a human city would be totally annihilated in just one move!

Such combat power was too incredible. His battle against Xiang Pang Yun on the Snowrock mountain only resulted in the destruction of several huge rocks, trees and rocks on the side of the mountain despite it being such a long fight. The foundation of the Snowrock mountain remained undamaged.

This showed the gap in power.

His combat power compared to such an expert, was just like an ant compared to a gigantic dragon!

“Unless, this was the scar left behind by a battle between Transcendents?” Xue Ying considered, “No wonder, within the memoirs left behind, some powerful Transcendents could even drink with the deities, and these deities even feared them.”

Xiang Pang Yun and Xue Ying’s combat powers did not even have the qualifications for these deities to even pay attention to.

Not to mention the pseudo-Transcendents.

“A true Transcendent is this powerful?” Xue Ying did not dare believe it. His understanding of Transcendents was too shallow, with all of his knowledge based entirely on the memoirs left behind, like the descriptions written on the 《Dark Ice Spear Technique》, there was an abridged version stating some techniques required to become a Transcendent. As for what would happen after becoming a Transcendent... nothing was written down.

What would happen after becoming a Transcendent?

No idea.

Precisely due to the small amount of Transcendents existing, mortals would rarely get to meet one! Should a Transcendent actually appear in a certain area, Dragon Mountain Manor would definitely warn everyone there to act more humanely, and never ever anger a Transcendent, else their entire clan would be exterminated. Regardless of whether it was the Si Clan or the Mo Yang Clan... towards a true Transcendent, they would be jittery towards him.

“Such power should be the peak amongst all Transcendents.” Xue Ying secretly thought.

.....

At the same moment when Xue Ying was carefully observing the fissure and experiencing the terrifyingly sharp and ferocious Qi, black fog began appearing in every five kilometer square areas within this Black-Wind Abyss valley, before rapidly forming into a black-scaled soldier.

Similarly, in the sky about three to four kilometers away from Xue Ying, black fog began forming into black-scaled soldiers.

Each adorned with a mask, these red-eyed, black-scaled soldiers swept across the whole valley.

Every single day... the entire valley must be swept through thoroughly. This was a regulation set down by the owner of that cavern palace. Despite his death a long time ago, many tens of thousands of years ago, this regulation was still kept unchanged.

“An external guest?” Every time these black-scaled soldiers appeared, there would be a layer of red glow within their eyes, causing their vision of the world to be blurry. Despite that, they still saw the distant Xue Ying standing there.

*Xiu!*

The black-scaled soldier floated towards the ground before turning into a streamer as it rushed towards Xue Ying.

As Xue Ying was observing the fissures, the World Energy was still kept in operation within surrounding with careful vigilance towards the direction of the cavern palace. Should there be any movements, he would immediately escape, just like how an alarmed bird would be with an arrow from the bow.

“Mn?” There was a twitch on Xue Ying’s ears, and he suddenly turned behind.

Behind him, a black-scaled soldier was rushing towards his location. The distance apart was less than 500 meters. But to Xue Ying and the black-scaled soldiers, a distance of 300-400 meters would be considered nothing.

“Why would a black-scaled soldier appear so suddenly?” Xue Ying was startled, “A Transcendent’s zone would definitely have some strange occurrences. But I was already extremely careful.”

At this moment, it would be too late for him to hide.

“I better kill it fast, else should the movement of the battle become too big, more black-scaled soldiers would come over time, with even stronger protectors appearing.” The Flying Snow God Spear appeared within Xue Ying’s hand as he stood his ground towards the incoming black-scaled soldier.

*“Hong!”*

The long spear suddenly stabbed outwards.

Like a meteor, *hu hu hu*, a chain of shadows imbued with flame stabbed towards that black-scaled soldier. The black-scaled soldier wielded a black sword, *dang dang dang...* and rapidly parried against the attacks. This black-scaled soldier's entire body filled with black fog that coagulated its arms. When it moved, it appeared ethereal, allowing it to block the attacks easily.

“So fast.” Xue Ying did not hesitate in changing his techniques, from speed, it became an attack of power!

*Hong!* The initial chain of stabs by the long spear suddenly became a sideway sweep. He fully exerted his entire strength and activated his Power Bloodline, coupled with the imbue of powerful flames on his long spear; it moved in an arc whilst accumulating power as it moved towards the black-scaled soldier who coldly placed his sword in front of him.

A loud sound emanated.

The black-scaled soldier was bombarded until his entire body immediately trembled. Much of the fog that composed its body began dissipating, causing it to become even more blurry.

Seeing such a situation, Xue Ying immediately brought out another two attacks as the long spear continuously attacked the body of the black-scaled soldier, drawing out the fog that composed it. Finally, that soldier collapsed and turned into a fog that dissipated.

.....

In front of the cavern palace.

Other than the numerous black-scaled soldiers, there were some stronger protectors. One of these protectors who was propped against a greatsword and wore a relatively luxuriant armour suddenly opened his eyes. His eyes were glowing with a silver light.

*Hong!*

He turned into a black-coloured streamer, flying across the skies with a

frightening speed towards Xue Ying.

Even though they were 50 kilometers apart, that black-coloured streamer was simply too fast. With just a blink of an eye, he flew past five kilometers at top speed.

Xue Ying was constantly on the look-out towards that cavern palace. After eliminating that black-scaled soldier, he could naturally see a black-coloured streamer flying towards him at an extreme speed.

Flying?

Among humans, only Transcendents could fly in the skies! As for the Legend rankers who depended on the World Energy, or mages who depended on their spells, their speed would be too slow, and totally incomparable with those flying beasts! As for a Transcendent, their flying speed would be something truly terrifying.

Looking at that black-coloured streamer, Xue Ying felt a bout of terror, that this incoming figure was something not just a level above him.

“No other routes of escape!” Xue Ying looked towards the huge fissure beneath his legs. He was already curious about it from his earlier inspection. That powerful Transcendent who split apart the ground from underneath and created such an enormous fissure must have left a battleground behind. Before his encounter with the black-scaled soldiers, he had already been trying to think of ways to investigate the fissure.

“No other choice!” Xue Ying wielded his Flying Snow God Spear and directly leapt downwards!

## Book 4: Chapter 4 – Refiner Organism

---

Within a moment...

That black-coloured streamer began descending, then landed beside the edges of the fissure. That silver-eyed armoured protector coldly looked downwards into the fissure. There did not seem to be the slightest strand of emotion shown in its eyes.

After observing for a while, it propped itself against the greatsword, guarding the location.

After all, the master of the cavern palace had given out orders to patrol only up to this point. Should the invader not be within the boundaries, it would not chase after him.

.....

*Hu hu.*

Accompanied by the sound of the wind flowing by his ears, Xue Ying rapidly fell downwards. His entire body was shrouded by flames, irradiating everything within the underground fissure.

*Peng*, he touched the ground.

Xue Ying looked ahead. The underground fissure seemed to extend towards the direction of that cavern palace.

“Did the battle take place within the cavern palace?” At once, Xue Ying darted in that direction. His speed was relatively fast. Along the way, he looked behind him, before sighing in relief, “Fortunately, the protector didn’t come chasing after me.”

Following the curb of the underground fissure, he darted forward.

Finally, he stopped.

Xue Ying looked ahead. In front of him, were walls that glowed a silvery-white, as if they were made of jade. Beside the mountain rocks, these walls were

exceptionally eye-catching. However, their beauty was marred by a gigantic crack that cut across them! This crack was seven to eight meters long. On top of that, Xue Ying felt the remnants of sharp, ferocious Qi, which put him on edge.

That ferocious qi had been left behind tens of thousands of years ago, and yet, Xue Ying could still detect such a level of pressure!

*‘It seems that an incredible battle happened in this place many, many years ago. A powerful expert slashed out ferociously, cutting across the walls, earth and underground rocks, and leaving behind scars that ran through more than 50 kilometers until they reached aboveground. These are huge continuous fissures of 15 to 20 kilometers.’* Xue Ying nodded inwardly.

This devastation shocked him. The underground was composed of earth and rocks, yet one strike could penetrate through more than 50 kilometers? By the heavens! It was not an exaggeration to use ‘Armageddon’ to describe this!

Outside the silvery-white walls, he hesitated for a moment.

“I’ve no other choices! Going up the Black-Wind Abyss valley is a dead-end.” Xue Ying understood that within the silvery-white walled constructs in front of him, there could still be frightening dangers lurking within, or there could be surprises awaiting him, “I can only take this gamble!”

He wielded the Flying Snow God Spear in his hands...

The flames enveloped his body, while the World Energy spread outwards.

Xue Ying began to move along the walls of the fissure and into the construct.

*“Hoot!”*

The moment he entered, Xue Ying’s eyes brightened.

In front of him was an enormous, great palace of more than 300 meters in height, towering above all else, with a width measuring close to one kilometer! Such an enormous great palace... it was really shocking! There were broken pillars all around, either broken stumps or pieces on the ground. Most of the great palace was in ruins. Ferocious cracks littered the surface of the otherwise solid, silvery-white ground.

Far away, there was even a silvery-white wall with dozens of cracks criss-



crossing it. He realized that he had arrived to this very place by following one of those cracks.

“I’m sure some terrifying, great battle took place here!” Xue Ying was startled as he carefully examined the entire palace.

Since the remnants of this great palace were spread out panoramically, a single sweep allowed one to examine the entire place.

Despite that, Xue Ying was unable to find a single door! No doors to lead him into the palace, and no doors to take him to other areas. The entire palace was sealed. Furthermore, even though the palace was crumbling, no extraordinary debris was left behind on the surface of the palace.

“It seems that there was a survivor in that battle in the past who actually cleaned up this great palace,” Xue Ying whispered to himself. “How exactly did they enter this great palace, and how did they exit it? I doubt they entered through the crack I came through...”

“There must be something I’ve not discovered yet!”

Xue Ying was not satisfied.

He did not want to starve to death in this Black-Wind Abyss. He wanted to survive.

As he walked through the inner palace, Xue Ying carefully observed his surroundings, using the World Energy to scour through every single corner of the location. He surveyed the area slowly and meticulously.

“Omm~~~” During the time taken to boil a cup of tea, as his World Energy was used to sweep across every single corner of the great palace, a ripple suddenly appeared in one of the spaces.

“An abnormality!”

Xue Ying brightened up as he cautiously dug out a piece of silver with his hands.

*Xiu.*

The piece of silver was thrown out, becoming a streamer as it shot towards the ripple, causing that ripple to convulse and immediately collapse, revealing what

was hidden beneath it.

The entire area of a full hundred square meters had suddenly changed!

Now there was a stone bed with a skeleton sitting cross-legged on it. An ice-blue energy circled around it, and it wore a silver-coloured robe.

In front of that stone bed were eight polygonal pools. Within the pools a crystal-clear liquid moved about, with a light mist which floated above it. There was even a densely-inscribed array which circled the pools, and conjuring the surrounding World Energy to maintain itself.

Beside the pools, two golden mutated beast sculptures of at least 20 meters in height were entrenched in the ground.

One of it was of the shape of an ape with chains wrapped around it.

The other golden sculpture was a golden big Roc.

“Refiner organisms?” How good was Xue Ying’s eyesight? With just a glance, he could see that these two golden sculptures were extraordinary. “That skeleton with ice-blue energy circulating around it – despite having died who knows how long ago... must have been a Transcendent.”

An ordinary mortal would never have such abnormal events happening to his corpse after dying.

“As for the refiner organisms, I wonder if they can still move.” Xue Ying pondered over these thoughts. Refiner organisms required energy to operate. Without supplied energy, they would not be able to move! As for refiner organisms left behind by a Transcendent... Xue Ying was quite unsure regarding their circumstances.

*Sou sou sou.*

Xue Ying rapidly retreated back to the opening that he had previously come in from.

“*Xiu!*” Only then did he throw out a silver piece.

That silver piece became a fiery stream, flying over 500 meters of distance before hitting right on the ape-like golden sculpture. Suddenly, the ape-like golden sculpture opened its eyes without any warning. It’s eyes glowed with a

golden light. It raised its huge hands at the speed of lightning and grabbed the incoming silver piece. *Chi chi chi*, the silver piece turned into powder, immediately, flowing down from the gaps between its huge hands.

The golden ape organism's gaze swept across the surroundings, finding out Xue Ying, who was situated far away, at the entrance in the fissure, before roaring, "Mortal, don't come and disturb our lord!"

"Mn?" Xue Ying's expression brightened up, "It can speak?"

Transcendens' refiner organisms were indeed different – they could even speak!

"I've thrown out a silver piece that actually awakened it before even reaching it." Xue Ying silently thought, "It seems that once any attacks breach a certain area, the organism will wake up. But looking at the speed with which grabbed that silver piece... it did not seem overly powerful."

That silver piece was not an appropriate hidden weapon, and he'd used it only to test out the refiner organism.

After flying for a distance of over 500 meters, the attacking momentum brought by that silver piece would be weakened and grabbing it would not be a difficult task.

"Analysing from the speed with which it grabbed the silver piece, it seems that it isn't stronger than me by too much. As for the aura it released when it was awakened, I didn't feel any pressure at all from it." Xue Ying had some expectations, after all, when he saw that black, gigantic, dragon-like organism as he was falling from the Black-Wind Abyss, just a sweep of its eyes caused him to tremble and his knees to weaken.

As for the two golden refiner organisms in front of him, they could not compare with what he'd seen at all.

"Maybe this is an opportunity for me to obtain the treasures left behind by the Transcendent. And after that, I might even be able to find a way out of this place." Xue Ying could barely contain his excitement. Since the skeleton was placed in this location, there were bound to be routes leading to the outside world from here!

“Let’s try again.” Xue Ying turned his hands over, and a short spear appeared within.

Compared to the silver piece, the short spear was at an entirely different level in power.

*“He!”*

Xue Ying suddenly activated his Power Bloodline, with a strand of profoundness mixed with it within the flame. This profoundness within the flame allowed the power of his short spear throw to become even greater.

*Hong!!!*

That short spear tore through the air, emitting a piercing sound as it covered the 500-meter distance between him and that golden ape.

*“Peng!”* The golden ape furiously slapped out its hands with a *boom*. That short spear was deflected onto the ground, and the golden ape was knocked backwards a step, its expression turning to one of alarm and fury.

“Hahaha, the gap isn’t that huge at all.” Xue Ying’s eyes brightened up with excitement.

## Book 4: Chapter 5 – Caught

---

*Sou sou sou*

How fast was Xue Ying's speed? With just several evasive moves, he had already pressed over, but Xue Ying's speed had also begun to slowed down.

"Mortal, obediently go away," threatened the golden ape with a snarl.

"Refiner organisms are not real living organisms. They have to completely obey their master's order." Xue Ying secretly thought. Evidently, this order was a strict one, since even long after their master's death, the two refiner organisms still obediently followed it.

Xue Ying got closer.

The golden ape still did not attack.

Hu

When Xue Ying took another step closer, entering the area that was previously shrouded with the illusionary ripple, the golden ape suddenly roared rushed forward with a large stride.

But Xue Ying immediately took a step back and the golden ape immediately stopped. It then glared at Xue Ying.

"A perimeter?" Xue Ying smiled and looked at the area that just now shrouded what had been the ripple, "Did your master order you to attack anyone who entered the perimeter? I'm outside the perimeter, so you can't attack me?"

The golden ape howled, "Mortal, so what if you know? Just obediently go away!"

Xue Ying's mood was quite good. He thought only after several tests would he figure out what kind of order the Transcendent had given before his death, but he never guessed he'd even find the limits of the attack boundary on the first try.

"So just take it." In a flash, the Flying God Snow spear in Xue Ying's hand suddenly scuttled into the perimeter area, becoming a blaze that flew towards

the golden ape. A surrounding blaze permeated the air and completely enveloped the golden ape. Although the Universe Flame had a formidable suppressing power, to the golden ape, a Transcendent-rank refiner organism, that power meant nothing.

“Die, Mortal!” While ignoring the threat caused by Xue Ying’s spear, the golden ape slapped down with its large palm.

*Pu*

The spear stabbed into the golden ape’s knee but only left a white dot. As a refiner organism, its body material was incomparably sturdy. Even if Xue Ying were ten times stronger, he would still find it difficult to damage such a refiner organism’s body.

*Peng...* a big slap came down and Xue Ying instantly dodged.

*‘A Transcendent-rank refiner organism’s body defense is too strong,’* Xue Ying inwardly thought. *‘I’m unable to pierce its defenses even when using my maximum force. Fortunately, its flexibility is worse than mine.’*

Fighting for only a moment, Xue Ying and the golden ape already recognized each other’s strengths and weaknesses.

Peng peng peng!!! Heavy sounds reverberated around the golden ape and Xue Ying, who was bathed in flames like a demon. Xue Ying continuously dodged while his spear swept and whipped about. With all his power, all of his attacks targeted the ape’s joints like knees and ankles. Given the refiner organism’s fighting flexibility, these joints should have had complicated structures which made them quite vulnerable against attacks.

Attacked at the joints, the golden ape occasionally stumbled, but it didn’t receive any injuries and was still able to continuously slap the spear.

“Monkey, you can’t even handle a mortal? Looks like it is better for me to do it.” The golden bird sculpture next to the golden ape suddenly opened its eyes and glared at the ape with its golden eyes.

“You simply have to watch,” The golden ape said unhappily. He grabbed the chains that wrapped around his body. With a ‘huahua’ sound, he abruptly waved the chains, using them like a whip.

“Oh?”

Xue Ying was surprised. The chains, with a whistling sound, came fast like a mirage. Xue Ying’s spear instantly tried to pierce a chain’s link, but instead, the chains coiled around the spear.

“He can also use chains. In his hand, those chains are quite powerful. Fortunately, he’s just using simple moves, otherwise I’d be unable to fight the organism.” Xue Ying’s expression slightly changed, and he became more vigilant. By using the chains, the ape’s attack area became wider. The chains gave Xue Ying a difficult time in having to dodge it. Although his opponent’s strength was not that powerful, it was still a step higher than Xue Ying’s power.

With its stronger power, invincible defense, and a strange chain technique, in a short moment, the golden ape made Xue Ying quite exhausted.

But Xue Ying could still endure the battle, thanks to his agility.

“A mortal can actually fight for this long!” The golden bird swiftly dove down like a phantom. Xue Ying was alarmed, *‘so fast!’*

Its wings whistled by, sharp as a blade.

Xue Ying hastily used his spear to defend against this winged attack.

*Peng!*

With a loud noise, Xue Ying was thrown backwards. At the same time, a bizarre and unpredictable line of chains whipped over with intention of binding Xue Ying.

“*Clang*” Xue Ying jumped and thrust his spear while in mid-air, causing the chains to change direction.

After landing, he immediately retreated three steps back, taking him out of the organisms attack perimeter.

Xue Ying looked at the distant golden ape and bird with an uneasy feeling. *‘Strength wise, the golden ape’s strength was above me. Its only weakness was its flexibility. Fighting with him was very straining for me. Meanwhile, that golden bird’s speed far exceeds mine. With both of them joining hands, it is impossible to defeat them.’*

He could only be trampled on when both of them cooperated.

“Ha ha ha, mortal! I admit you have some strength, but it’s still not sufficient to defeat us. Your spear can only give me scratches and itches,” laughed the golden ape.

“*Humph,*” the golden bird didn’t bother with words.

*‘No need to rush, I have enough time.’* Xue Ying was very calm. *‘My body can still become stronger. My Qi is also still improving. Wait until my body reaches its limit. Perhaps then my strength will also make a huge advancement. When that time come, I will try fighting again with these two Transcendent-rank refiner organisms.’*

.....

## Water Rites Town

At the same time, while Xue Ying and the two refiner organisms fought, Ji Rong returned to her home in Water Rites Town. Early in the morning, she had already been banished from Snowrock Mountain.

“Rong’er, why have you already come back?” asked Ji Wu Hai as he and his wife stood at their daughter’s side.

“That Dong Bo Xue Ying should just die!”

Ji Rong’s face was gloomy and there was an ominous glint in her eyes.

It had been a long time since she’d been this unfortunate! To be looked down upon and to be bullied, she really wanted to get revenge! When she was at Snowrock Mountain, she was praised, second only to Kong You Yue, the little beauty.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying?” Said Ji Wu Hai suspiciously, “What’s wrong? You already found out the Dong Bo Clan’s secret?”

“No,” said Ji Rong coldly, “It’s not important how rich the Dong Bo clan is, the important one is... that Dong Bo Xue Ying. He’s an extremely powerful Legend ranker! Yesterday night, he and Xiang Pang Yun fought at Black Wind Cliff and perished together.”

“Perished together with Xiang Pang Yun?” Ji Wu Hai and his wife, both of them



were greatly startled.

Heavens!

Although both of them also had some strength, Xiang Pang Yun was the most powerful personage in the entire Azure River County. How old was Dong Bo Xue Ying? He could matched equally with Xiang Pang Yun?

“He ‘s a Legend ranker? We have to immediately report it to the Guardian,” uttered Ji Wu Hai.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying is already dead. He definitely gave Qing Shi many precious inheritances.” Ji Rong seemed furious and unreluctant. “Formerly, I wanted to continue staying beside Qing Shi, so it would be easier to get my hands on the treasures. But, never did I expect, before he fell down into the Black Wind Abyss, that Dong Bo Xue Ying would suddenly demand to have me banished from Snowrock Mountain. All to prevent me and Qing Shi from being together.

“So many treasures, if offered to the Guardian, how much merit would our family receive... the great god also will give us more.” Ji Rong was unwilling and furious.

“It was a major event. Quickly report to the Guardian.” Ji Wu Hai continued, “As soon as possible!”

At the same time, at the street outside of Ji Clan Mansion.

A dense crowd of soldiers arrived, led by Dragon Mountain Manor’ Manor Lord, Lord Si An.

“My Lord, I have been watching Ji Rong. She just got back to the mansion,” a scout reported.

Lord Si An nodded slightly, “Dong Bo Xue Ying was a genius that could even startle Transcendents. We have to do this neatly. This Ji Clan was suspected of being Demon God believers. Although it is not yet definite, this suspicion is enough to detain them. We need to catch them all first, to prevent this Ji clan from notifying the Demon God’s subordinates and creating more trouble.”

“My lord is wise,” praised You Tu by his side.

Early on, they already had sent people to watch, so they could catch them as

soon as Ji Rong returned to her home.

“Get in, catch all these Ji Clan members, including their servants. No one is to be left! Some of the servants may also Demon God’s believers,” ordered Lord Si An.

“Yes!”

Hong!

Numerous soldiers quickly surrounded the mansion. Two gate guards of Ji Clan’s mansion gate were frightened, and they didn’t dare resist. Some soldiers directly attacked, one kicked open the door. A big crowd of soldiers rushed into the Ji Clan’s mansion.

## Book 4: Chapter 6 – Transcendent Expert, Chi Qiu Bai

---

A seemingly ordinary-looking carriage was advancing at a slow pace on the streets of Azure River County

Inside the carriage, a black-robed Cui Jin Peng had a cold expression on his face, his eyes full of ferocious intent.

“With such a great reputation, the Bloodshed Tavern couldn’t even keep their promise!” Cui Jin Peng gritted his teeth. “It’s fine that the mission wasn’t completed. But wanting to ask for a second bounty from me for killing Dong Bo Qing Shi?”

He had gone to the Bloodshed Tavern right at dawn, waiting to obtain the results of the mission.

As for the reply by Bloodshed Tavern –

“Dong Bo Xue Ying’s combat power was far beyond our expectations. The assassins we sent out suffered a huge loss, thus, this mission will be relinquished.”

“Relinquished? What about the bounty?”

“No refunds!”

“I...” Cui Jin Peng was angered beyond reason by now.

How could he know that, in fact, Bloodshed Tavern was actually extremely dissatisfied? This mission had brought them huge losses. The deaths of the three Silver Moon assassins could have been overlooked, but not the death of the Wind Devil! Even Xiang Pang Yun had died! As a beast disguised as a human, Xiang Pang Yun’s death was not as important. The most crucial point was that Xue Ying had become such a frightening character at only 22 years of age!

Such a talent would definitely have a great chance of becoming a Transcendent! For the life of such a talented monster, Bloodshed Tavern would never accept gold pieces as bounty. Instead, they would only accept precious Transcendents’ treasures!

This mission had seriously been much, much too disadvantageous!

“How much would it cost if I were to offer another bounty?” Cui Jin Peng asked.

Bloodshed Tavern replied, “For a while, Snowrock Castle will have Transcendents paying close attention to it. The bounty for killing Dong Bo Qing Shi within a month would be a million gold pieces. After a month, it would be 500,000 gold pieces.”

Cui Jin Peng walked off after hearing that!

.....

“A bounty of 500,000 gold pieces for assassinating Dong Bo Qing Shi after a month?” Cui Jin Peng was back in the carriage, angered to the point of madness, “Bloodshed Tavern only has a greed for money. They only know how to ask for money.”

The previous debacle had almost exhausted all of his savings already.

“He is just a weak little mage. Since things have already progressed up to this stage, it seems I will have to kill him myself.” Cui Jin Peng gritted his teeth. Being the chief of the entire county underworld, he had with him a group of assassins as well, but just to test it out, he had decided to request for assassination from Bloodshed Tavern! Who would have thought that it would turn out this way... But in fact, he had already learned quite a lot from this request of his.

Because of these one million gold pieces of his, characters such as Wind Devil and Xiang Pang Yun had died. Dong Bo Xue Ying had fallen into the Black-Wind Abyss. Even Transcendents were startled by this incident!

*Lu lu lu ~~~*

The carriage suddenly stopped, causing Cui Jin Peng’s expression to change. “Why did we stop?” he asked.

“Mad Dog Cui!” A hoarse voice called. “Get out!”

Cui Jin Peng’s expression changed as he immediately opened the carriage door. With a single gaze, he could see three black-robed figures waiting for him, the leading figure being a black-robed old man with a gold tooth in his mouth and

gray hair. His eyes were unfeeling.

“Ah, Housekeeper Liu.” Cui Jin Peng unhesitantly came down from the carriage, in adulation.

The grey-haired old man observed him with a cold gaze, “Arrest him.”

“Housekeeper Liu, what is this?” Cui Jin Peng felt ignorant and at a loss, yet he did not dare resist. The other two black-robed men cuffed his hands with shackles. Cui Jin Peng was quite clear that this Housekeeper Liu... was in fact the housekeeper for the old ancestor ‘Si Liang Hong’ of the Si Clan, with an extremely high position. It was he who had allowed Cui Jin Peng to become the chief of the entire county’s underworld.

“The Lord wants to see you,” Housekeeper Liu stated with a single sentence, not saying anything else afterwards.

“Old ancestor?” Cui Jin Peng turned pale.

A short moment later.

Within a garden, Cui Jin Peng saw the old ancestor of Si Clan.

“Old ancestor.” Cui Jin Peng timidly kneeled.

Even though Si Liang Hong had lived for countless of years, her appearance was still relatively beautiful, as if she was an enchanting woman. Garbed in blood-red, her hair was blood in colour and her skin was white. Whenever one saw her, they would inevitably feel an impulsive desire. After all, she had the body of a ‘Blood Demon’, bringing with her a captivating charm.

“Because of you?” Si Liang Hong looked at Cui Jin Peng. “It is because of you, this mess that resulted in the death of Xiang Pang Yun, the expert dispatched by the Sorcerer’s Palace, and in the person who would certainly become a Transcendent in a few years, the monster of a genius, Dong Bo Xue Ying, falling into the Black-Wind Abyss to his death?”

“Things are unpredictable. This mess actually caused the end of two experts in this world,” Si Liang Hong lamented.

Her Si Clan was the absolute overlord in Azure River County, ruling over the

entire place with a single action of theirs. Even if it was in some dirty underworld, her clan's spies would be present. This Cui Jin Peng was actually Si Clan's loyal dog! Even in his areas of control, Si Clan would have spies placed within, with him not being able to resist against such an order. Thus, when his child 'Cui Hui' died, Si Clan had known about it in a matter of moments, along with even the fact that Cui Jin Peng had visited the Bloodshed Tavern!

"Many heroic characters fell because of some nobodies." Si Liang Hong sighed. "Alright, old Liu. I've seen him already. Take him away and settle it cleanly."

"Yes," housekeeper Liu said respectfully.

"Old ancestor, old ancestor, I'm entirely faithful to the Si Clan!" Cui Jin Peng immediately shouted out in fright.

Si Liang Hong did not even give him a second glance.

She knew that this time, there would certainly be Transcendents coming! Thus, the reasons for this incident would definitely be investigated by these Transcendents. Being the cause of the event 'Cui Jin Peng', she decided to prevent Cui Jin Peng from spouting out inappropriate things. Hence, the earlier she dealt with the matter, the better. After all, the truth was that the matter had nothing to do with her Si Clan, and it had entirely been Cui Jin Peng's idea.

"A genius monster who would almost certainly become a Transcendent died in such a pitiful way! Even though Sorcerer's Palace lost a latent chess-piece, they still gained quite a lot from this." Si Liang Hong was nervous, "The Transcendents coming this time will certainly be furious! My Si Clan is in charge of Azure River County. Hopefully, this will not affect us."

Si Clan was the number one overlord amongst mortals.

But in front of Transcendents? They could easily be annihilated.

.....

That day, Si Liang Hong rushed towards the Black-Wind Cliff within the Azure River County, waiting by herself.

Unexpectedly, only after she waited for three days did a Transcendent finally come.

*“Si La—”*

Within the skies of Black-Wind Cliff, the sun was shining brightly. Suddenly, a crack appeared within the space, and a figure came forth from within.

Si Liang Hong had been sitting cross-legged on the cliff. There were some arrays around her to cut away the fierce wind. Having felt the tremors in the space, she raised her head to look upwards, before having a shocking expression as she hailed respectfully, “Greetings, Lord Eternal Wind.”

The Transcendent who had come was actually the number one strongest expert in the entire Tranquil Sun Province — Eternal Wind Knight Chi Qiu Bai!

Si Liang Hong was extremely nervous, “I had thought that some other Transcendent would come. Never would I have expected it would actually be Eternal Wind Knight! This incident was so shocking that even such a terrifying existence had come!”

“I heard you have already executed Cui Jin Peng?” Chi Qiu Bai was quite handsome, his white hair swaying in the wind. Garbed in green robes, he stood on air.

“Yes,” Si Liang Hong respectfully replied. “This incident was indeed started by this Cui Jin Peng, who set down a bounty.”

“I know of the context already.” A single step brought Chi Qiu Bai above the Black-Wind Abyss. The initial fierce and furious black wind was suppressed until it dissipated. He looked below. There were some sort of frightening energies operating in the abyss, blocking off his vision and hiding from him the sight below the abyss.

“Ai, My Tranquil Sun Province would have finally had a new Transcendent and yet, he was killed in the debacle from Sorcerer’s Palace. This is not worth it.” Chi Qiu Bai nodded lightly, “You may leave first.”

“Yes.” Si Liang Hong knew that she had passed through this level, and that Chi Qiu Bai would not follow up on what she’d done. Without waiting, she backed away from the Black-Wind Cliff.

Chi Qiu Bai stood above the middle of the Black-Wind Abyss.

The unseen forces were oppressing everything below.

“Chi Qiu Bai!” Below, an enormous energy surged, making a faint huge figure to suddenly appear. Following that, a black dragon head appeared. This enormous black dragon head looked towards Chi Qiu Bai above him, “Why? Were you not satisfied with the previous battle and wanted to come and fight again? I’ve long said before, if you want to conquer this place, your combat power is still quite far off from what is needed. It’s better for you to go back and cultivate.”

“Is the mortal who fell still alive?” Chi Qiu Bai asked.

“Oh, There is indeed a mortal teen who fell down. Maybe he got splattered to death,” the black dragon head said. “I’m just merely the first guardian! At My Lord’s cavern palace, there are, naturally, even stronger guardians in that location. Can I control what happens below at the cavern palace?”

Chi Qiu Bai looked below, sighing imperceptibly.

This time, the matter concerning Dong Bo Xue Ying had actually been directed to the upper echelons of the Transcendents, for them to solve it. But, because of the location ‘Black-Wind Abyss’, a place that would even cause Transcendents themselves headaches, the final matter had been passed on until it had finally reached Chi Qiu Bai! This was why it had taken two to three days before he’d finally come over.

“If he is still alive and asking for help, send him out,” Chi Qiu Bai said.

“How polite.” The black dragon head laughed. “If I see him, I’ll definitely help him out! After all, he is still a mortal. The orders given by the Lord are after all, only for Transcendents.”

Chi Qiu Bai nodded silently.

Black-Wind Abyss was a very mysterious place in the past. Many ten thousands years ago, an expert of humankind had actually successfully stepped into godhood, then stepped into the Black-Wind Abyss to investigate... only then did the Transcendents of humankind know that this Black-Wind Abyss was actually a cavern palace left behind by an extremely powerful expert. Only when one won against all the Transcendent-ranked protectors could they obtain the treasures



left behind.

Even though that deity, including the Dragon Mountain emperor who came afterwards, had entered the location, none of them had ever forcibly taken away the treasures.

Firstly, forcibly taking away the palace would cause it to self-destruct ! Secondly, for those who had already become deities, they had built a united empire in the previous ages, and were the top peerless experts in the entire mortal world. Thus, they did not feel much avarice towards these treasures.

“Pity.” Chi Qiu Bai lightly shook his head. He felt that Dong Bo Xue Ying was quite fierce and quite lucky. “If he were to survive, my Tranquil Sun Province would have one more Transcendent. Furthermore, looking at his heavenly-graded talent, within the entire world one would only find a single existence within a hundred years. Even amongst the Transcendents, he could advance quite far ahead. Such a pity, such a pity.”

“Chi Qiu Bai, you better go and cultivate. After all, I have high expectations of you. Maybe in the near future, you might have hope of attaining the treasures left behind by my Lord. But looking at you right now, you are still quite some distance away” the black dragon head below bellowed out.

“Farewell.” Chi Qiu Bai turned away and immediately went off.

*Si La.*

A crack appeared within the space, and Chi Qiu Bai immediately lept out through it, disappearing into nothingness.

## Book 4: Chapter 7 – Father, Mother

---

The news about Xue Ying and Xiang Pang Yun fighting for hundreds mile and perishing together at Black-Wind Cliff began spreading.

This sensational news spread extremely fast.

Of course the fact about Xiang Pang Yun's real identity as a mutated magical beast remained absolutely confidential.

"After so many years, there finally emerged such a strong individual from our Water Rites Town! Only 22 years old and already able to battle with the fabled Xiang Pang Yun, be locked in battle for hundreds of miles, and in the end, perish together." Inside a tavern, an old man shook his head with grief, "This kind of hero, in the future, might have hope to become one of the fabled Transcendents... pity, what a pity. To fall like this, truly makes my heart ache."

"Old Song, who is Xiang Pang Yun?" Someone suddenly shouted.

"Really unknowledgeable!" the old man sneered, then lazily answered.

"Xiang Pang Yun was the number one expert within our whole Azure River County. More formidable than that hundred years old ancestor from Si Clan, he was only a step away from becoming a Transcendent! Even if Dong Bo Xue Ying started cultivating when he was still in his mother's womb, it still only counted for 22 years. Yet he could battle into a deadlock with Xiang Pang Yan and then they perished together; you say, is Dong Bo Xue Ying formidable or not?"

"Aah, after tens of thousands of years, this kind of personage finally appeared from our small Water Rites Town"

.....

The news of the battle became a sensation within the Azure River County.

Even in other parts of Tranquil Sun Province and other provinces, people also talked about the fight between Xue Ying and Xiang Pang Yun. Although the news that was spread around didn't mention Xue Ying's grasp of the Realm of Myriad Existences, his youth and ability to fight Xiang Pang Yun into a deadlock and then

perishing together... if you looked in the whole Dragon Mountain Empire, Xue Ying was quite a monster.

\*\*\*\*\*

Eastfields Province, Thunder Tide Shore

“Hong long long... “ Sea water was continuously pounding, producing numerous snow white ocean sprays.

There were several caves at Thunder Tide Shore, with each cave containing its own lock. Mo Yang clan’s convicts were imprisoned here. Ordinarily, people with special status would be in long-term confinement.

“*Clang dong*” A thick, heavy door opened and a maidservant went in to deliver food and drink. Thunder Tide Shore was a prohibited area and even had a spell array cast around it; there was no need to worry about prisoners escaping.

Inside the dark cave

A purple robed woman stood in front of a glossy stone wall with an engraving knife in her hand. A magic array was carved faintly on the stone wall. She slightly frowned in thought. Because she was imprisoned, she didn’t have the required conditions for experiments and she didn’t have enough paper and pens. The fact that she could get a engraving knife was thanks to her brother’s help in getting her the necessary permission.

The magic pattern carved on the stone wall was only for reference, while most of the calculations were processed within her mind.

Although Mo Yang Yu was imprisoned, she was still able to immerse herself in the comprehension of magic and spell casting.

“Madam.” the maidservant put down the food as a small voice called out.

“Mn?” Mo Yang Yu looked at the maidservant, “Why are you still here, is there something?” Usually after putting down the food, the maidservant would just silently leave.

“There’s a lord that asked me to tell you a few words,” said the maidservant

“Lord?” Mo Yang Yu frowned, “Who?”

“Lord Mo Yang Chen Bai,” replied the maidservant.

“Humph, what does he want to say, let me hear.” Mo Yang Yu coldly smiled.

The maidservant took a deep breath and said, “Lord Mo Yang Cheng Bai said... Mo Yang Yu, you birthed an extraordinary son. At only 22 years old, he fought to a deadlock with Xiang Pang Yun, the number one expert from Azure River County. Both of them contended with each other for hundreds of miles, and then both perished at Black-Wind Cliff! To have this kind of son, I congratulate you. Congratulations!”

The maidservant nervously said, “Madam, I will withdraw”

She was only an ordinary maidservant, so she didn’t dare refuse Mo Yang Chen Bai’s order.

Mo Yang Yu stood there without moving, only her tears flowed down.

“Wait a minute!” Mo Yang Yu suddenly shouted.

The maidservant who was already walking out, stopped.

“Tell me, is what he said true?” Mo Yang Yu couldn’t help but ask.

The maidservant answered, “Madam, it is true. The battle between Dong Bo Xue Ying and Xiang Pang Yun has been discussed spiritedly within the whole Mo Yang Clan. Everyone has talked about this event. Some people even suggested that if prior to that time someone had brought back Dong Bo Xue Ying, our Mo Yang Clan would have become more powerful. This news has already circulated for three months.”

Mo Yang Yu lightly waved her hand and the maidservant respectfully withdrew.

After she left, the thick, heavy door closed again. Mo Yang Yu’s body helplessly slumped down, sitting on the ground. Hands clutching debris on the floor, her fingers became pale, and with a trembling voice she said, “Xue Ying, I let you down. I wronged you..... my son.....”

Mo Yang Yu’s only envisioned the scene in the past when they separated.

Her oldest son, holding his little brother, Qing Shi’s hand, standing at castle’s gate.

“Father, mother, I, Dong Bo Xue Ying..... will definitely save you! Our family will definitely be reunited! Definitely!”

“I promise!”

“I promise, I will definitely rescue you! No one will stop me!”

Her son’s tender voice at that time lingered at her ears.

Her face long since full of tears, her body trembled, “Xue Ying, my son, why did this happen to you, why... ..”

.....

East Fragrant Lake Refinery, inside Mage Tower

“Dong Bo Lie, quickly move this thing,” A young male mage shouted, pointing to a pile of soot inside an experiment room used as a laboratory.

“I’m coming, I’m coming.”

Dong Bo Lie wore a tattered plain cloth and skillfully started to tidy up the waste.

“Dong Bo Lie, Mo Yang Chen Bai asked me to tell you some news,” the young male mage said, “It is about your son, Dong Bo Xue Ying”

“Xue Ying?” Dong Bo Lie asked, stunned.

“Your son, Dong Bo Xue Ying was amazing. Against Xiang Pang Yun, the two of them fought from Snowrock Mountain all the way to Black-Wind Cliff for a distance of more than hundreds miles, and then both of them perished together.” The young male mage turned around to go out, “I really admire your son. He was really amazing. A pity he died so young. Right, remember to clean up this place.”

Dong Bo Lie felt his vision lose any color from his surroundings, and the trash in his hands unconsciously fell to the ground.

He blankly stared, and his body trembled slightly.

\*\*\*\*\*

Eternal Wind Academy

Yu Jing Qiu had secluded herself in her mage tower for more than a month. When she go out from her seclusion, breathing the outside air, a smile appear in her face. Every mage's breakthrough was a difficult process, so when someone made a breakthrough, there was a happy and accomplished feeling in their heart.

"What a shame."

"A shame indeed. The whole Eternal Wind Academy students and faculty were all reprimanded by the headmaster." Two female mages walked side by side. The plump mage muttered, "No one inside our Eternal Wind Academy had talent like Dong Bo Xue Ying. But really, we should not be expected to be as talented as him. At only 22 years old, he was able to fight on par with Xiang Pang Yun until both of them perished together."

"I have been enrolled at the Academy for so long, and this was my first time seeing the headmaster. Never had I thought I would only see him because Dong Bo Xue Ying's matter."

"Each time the headmaster cultivates, he usually does so for eight to ten years. Most of the students, from their admission to graduation, have no chance of seeing the headmaster! It's a big stroke of luck for us to be able to see him once. I heard the headmaster really grieved about Dong Bo Xue Ying. I believe his speech, this time, was to motivate us."

"True, Dong Bo Xue Ying didn't have a powerful teacher or master, but he gained such strength through only self practice. It's really a shame. What a pity for this kind of talent to have died like that."

The two female mages talked along the way.

Yu Jing Qiu was stunned.

The headmaster's appearance was a major event, but the other topic the two female mages talked about was more shocking to her.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying, he...." Yu Jing Qiu was baffled, "He died?"

She still remembered...

In her despair, the black clothed youth that moved like a mirage and suddenly

appeared in front of her in the midst of explosion and countless fallen debris.

In the darkness, the black clothed youth, with a shield in his hand, warding off all the debris and stones, fully protecting her.

A seemingly ordinary man who was solid like a mountain.

“Impossible, the news must be wrong, definitely...” Yu Jing Qiu immediately ran to ask other people.

.....

Xue Ying had no idea about the situation in the outside world.

Inside the majestic spacious dilapidated hall, Xue Ying sat crossed legged, practicing. Surges of World Energy continuously rushed into and were absorbed by his body. It's had been nearly five months since his fall into the Black-Wind Abyss. These days he was always practicing, trying to improving his strength to the utmost.

“Hu” Xue Ying opened his bright eyes.

“Finally, my body has reached its limit and is unable to improved further.” Xue Ying sensed his own power. No matter if it was his speed, strength or some other aspect, all had reached an astonishing level.

“I will give it a try, there should be some hope to defeat those two Transcendent-rank refiner organisms.” Xue Ying looked at the distant golden ape and golden roc. In these five months, both of the Transcendent-rank refiner organisms had never taken a step outside the perimeter.

## Book 4: Chapter 8 – Please Forgive Me Senior

---

Xue Ying held onto the Flying God Snow Spear as he walked towards the two golden sculptures.

The golden ape opened its eyes, “Mortal, why did you come back? With your combat power, you have no hopes of winning.”

“Maybe there will be some surprises this time.” Finishing his sentence, with a ‘hong’, a faint red coloured stream of Qi appeared as his Power Bloodline began activating!

*Sou.*

Xue Ying leapt outwards with his entire body bathed in flames. This tempestuous flame began shrouding the surroundings, enveloping both the golden ape and that golden roc who was faking sleep. At the same time, the long spear in his hands was brought up with it great ferocity, akin to two stars clashing with each other, right down at the opposing golden ape.

“Clashing head-on? Mortal, you sure are reckless!” Seeing Xue Ying’s incoming move when he was at mid-air, the golden ape immediately waved its hands confidently, slapping its large palm right against the attack.

The ape was quite confident of its strength.

*Hong~~~*

The long spear hacked down furiously at the big palms of that golden ape, bringing with it a turbulent and valiant shockwave. The golden ape’s arms inevitably bent inwards as its body was pushed back three heavy steps and emitted a loud, heavy sound with each step; its eyes were full of shock.

Although Xue Ying issued out a move readily and the ape parried the attack with a flippant attitude, the fact that the force of the attack was able to make the ape move back three steps... implied that their strengths were relatively



equal!

“You, this monkey, sure has great strength. However, this time, you will surely lose!” Xue Ying was filled with confidence. The moment he touched ground, Xue Ying dashed forward as if he were a ghost.

“So fast.” The golden ape hurriedly took out its long chain, waving it in the air as it tried to stop Xue Ying.

*Dang dang dang~~~*

Xue Ying’s speed was distinctly faster than before. The quality of his physique had been raised sharply, allowing his flexibility and many other areas to achieve new heights. Previously, his flexibility was already extremely dominating, yet now, this advantage of his was even greater! The golden ape and its chain had no way of stopping Xue Ying as he easily dodged the counter attacks, and occasionally, defended against the ape with his long spear.

*Bang bang bang!!!*

The long spear consecutively lashed right at the golden ape’s joints, causing it to stumble.

“Little Bird, I can’t defend any longer!” The golden ape hurriedly shouted out.

“Monkey, you sure are useless.” A golden phantom whizzed out.

Xue Ying’s expression was serious. With an exertion of strength in his waist, the long spear suddenly swept outwards, *hong*— With the grandeur of the spear, it swept right at the wings of the golden roc, startling it for a moment; Xue Ying, too, retreated a step.

“Truly a great improvement.” The golden roc continued, “Monkey, together.”

“Yes.” The golden ape replied.

At that moment, the golden roc took the initiative to attack, raising out its wings as if they were both blades cutting out and fans slapping out. This huge roc’s speed was extremely fast, but its strength was still weaker than Xue Ying’s by just a bit. Through the profoundness of his spear technique, Xue Ying was able to completely suppress the roc. However, there was still the golden ape behind it, repeatedly waving the strange the unpredictable chain at him.

The golden ape wielded the chain with both its hands; the ends of the chain were unpredictable – at times striking out, at times lashing out, and at times trying to wrap around him.

With that single chain... teaming together with the huge roc, even though Xue Ying obviously had the upperhand, he was still unable to break through the entrapment of that golden roc!

“Damn.” Xue Ying gritted his teeth.

“We’ve teamed up together for many years. Entrapping others is our expertise. Even if it was some other Transcendents, they would still have a hard time breaking through our obstruction,” the golden ape said confidently.

“Even though the two of us are unable to defeat you, obstructing you is way too simple.” The golden roc was filled with confidence as well.

With a single spear, Xue Ying fought with the two Transcendent refiner organisms.

Though the spear technique was profound, he was still unable to break through the obstruction.

“Their creator is surely some powerful Transcendent mage.” Xue Ying understood, “As a mage, their individual physiques are quite weak. I reckon that the reason for crafting these two refiner organisms is for the sake of having a shield to obstruct the enemies. This way, the mages would be able to easily display their powerful spells!”

Although these live shields had weak attacks...

Their defense and entrapment capabilities were top grade.

For instance, these two Transcendent refiner organisms... were made of extraordinary materials. Xue Ying could not injure them at all. They were huge, with one of them being fast as well as having a wingspan of twenty to thirty meters. As for the other, its chain was unpredictable, and had speed much faster than his own, striking out at him continuously to damage and disturb him.

“Is it to say that I cannot defeat these two fellows.” Xue Ying felt anxious, “I’ve already reached my limit in combat power. It would be very difficult for my

power to rise even further.”

.....

Xue Ying exhausted his entire strength, yet with the teamwork of the golden roc and golden ape, one in front and the other behind, it was like a wall obstructed Xue Ying. Even when they utilised their body to defend and obstruct, being refiner organisms, every single part of their bodies could be treated as a weapon.

“With the food I have, I can only sustain myself through a little more than half a year.”

“The only hope I have of escaping lies here within the remains of this Transcendent’s abode.” Xue Ying’s eyes were filled with a strong desire, “There is no other way left. This is my only route!”

Xue Ying retreated until he was beyond the boundary.

“Giving up already?” The golden roc sneered.

“Mortal, you actually have some skills. Yet to defeat us, you are still far from that goal.” The golden ape added on.

“Give up? How could I give up?” Xue Ying laughed, “You are just some refiner organisms. To battle, you will certainly waste some energy, I guess! The more ferocious the battle, the greater the energy consumption! Even if you might be able to absorb energy from the world, your energy consumption would surely exceed that of your absorption. The moment you’ve depleted all your energy, I reckon you guys would be unable to move.”

Both the golden ape and golden roc trembled slightly.

“Receive this move!”

Xue Ying held onto his long spear. The vast and mighty flames surrounded him as he once again moved forward to attack. However, this time around, he did not activate his Power Bloodline.

Actually, even if his Power Bloodline was not activated, Xue Ying’s physical strength was still much stronger by several times that it was five months ago! As for his speed and flexibility, they were also much greater than before. Currently,

his fleshy body would not lose out to Xiang Pang Yun's mutated beast's fleshy body. In fact, as a human, Xue Ying's physique was much smaller and would thus, is more flexible than any mutated beast by more than a level.

*"Hong long long~~~"* Without his Power Bloodline, Xue Ying was unable to gain an upperhand in the battle. However, with the profoundness of his spear technique and flexible body, he was still able to battle against the golden roc and ape without having either side become a victor from the clash.

"Mortal, are you sure you want to continue fighting?" The golden ape was anxious.

"Of course!" This was the only way of escaping. Why would Xue Ying even want to give that up?

Any refiner organisms must have an energy source contained within. Of course, by borrowing from the arrays placed on their body, they would be able to absorb the world energy to recover, yet this kind of absorption... would be much slower as compared to an anima.

"Monkey, it seems our days as protectors will be coming to an end," the golden roc said.

In the eyes of the golden ape, there was a strand of complex feelings. Presently, it lashed out with its chain right at Xue Ying, "Mortal, if you have the capability to exhaust our energy, then do so. Regardless of what happens, we will still comply with our master's orders to obstruct you with all our strength!"

"In that case, bring it on!"

Xue Ying saw some hope. Naturally, he was filled with fighting spirit.

An hour, two hours, three hours...

This time, they exchanged moves for a full nine hours. Only after that did Xue Ying take a rest from exhaustion. The crucial point was that when he activated his Power Bloodline, he would naturally consumed energy at a much faster rate. Otherwise, he would be able to persist for an even longer period of time.

Following that, he ate some food and absorbed the energy of the Universe Flame to rapidly recover his energy while meditating to recover his mental

strength.

Just three hours later, Xue Ying was once again full of vigor like a dragon and a tiger!

“Let’s continue!”

This second battle lasted through a full three days!

After resting for three hours, he was once again full of vigor.

“Continue.” Xue Ying held onto his long spear with flames enveloping him as he once again started fighting.

.....

Fifteen days later.

The golden ape and golden roc sat down dispiritedly.

“You win.” The voice of the golden ape was much weaker than before, “Humans are such freaks to recover energy at such a fast pace. Three hours was enough for a full recovery! I’m afraid for us, it would take at least three months. There is no hope for us to persist.”

“You are an anima, and we are merely refiner organisms.” The golden roc said. The breaths felt from the two of them were much weaker. They only had enough energy to speak and had no more energy to continue fighting on.

Xue Ying was filled with excitement, smiling, “The two of you, I won’t be polite then.”

“Actually, our master has been waiting for a long time for a successor, just who would have thought he would be a mortal,” The golden ape shook its head while whispering.

Xue Ying walked ahead.

He first observed the octagonal pool. Within the pool, there was a crystal clear liquid with a faint mist floating about on its surface. Lightly taking a whiff, he could already smell that fresh aroma that lifted up his entire spirit and reduced the fatigue of his body. At the same time, his mind improved quite a bit, causing Xue Ying to brighten up, “Such a treasure.”

After which, he looked at the skeleton who was seated cross legged on the stone bed ahead of him. On its right hand, there was a silver wristband. By just lightly touching it with his senses, he could feel that it was a storage wristband.

“This junior Dong Bo Xue Ying meets this senior.” Xue Ying knelt down to give his respect. Having attained a Transcendent treasure, he ought to kneel down with respect for him, “Please forgive this junior.”

Having said that, with a wave of his hands...

Under the coercion of the World Energy, the silver wristband flew from the stone bed and onto Xue Ying’s hands, his Qi immediately refining it. Following that, he began a thorough observation of everything within.

“Such a big space!” With just a look, Xue Ying was startled at the humongous space within this silver wristband.

## **Book 4: Chapter 9 – Lei Zhan, the Elder of the Sea Deity Palace**

---

This silver-colored wristband contained a space of 2,700 cubic meters. It was definitely the storage space of a great Transcendent. Before this, Xue Ying had only obtained a 27 cubic meters storage ring, and its worth was valued closed to a million gold. How much more worth would this silver wristband be if compared to his ring?

“I reckon that for Transcendents, gold pieces are meaningless. Such mundane gold pieces and statuses are something they can easily obtain.” Xue Ying sighed to himself before looking closely at the articles within the silver wristband. It was quite empty within, with only a few item present, yet each and every one of them gave Xue Ying a feeling of extraordinary value.

The most striking item was actually a black-coloured inner vest. This vest was suffused with sparkling starlight, emitting out some sort of fluctuation into the atmosphere that made Xue Ying catch his breath.

How powerful!

As for the other striking item, it was actually a crimson coloured staff. The fluctuation emitted by it was similarly as powerful as the vest.

There were also a large pile of ashen pebbles that piled up to the height of a human. Though these pebbles looked ordinary, they too, emitted out a dense energy from the world.

Other than these, the rest were considered to be just some miscellaneous items – books, gold notes and other things.

*“Hu.”*

Only after walking to the side of the building did Xue Ying wave his hand, taking out the items within the silver wristband, and causing them to fall onto the ground within the Great Hall. He ignored the rest of the treasures and went ahead to the pile of books.

“Heavenly Water Droplets.” Xue Ying sat down cross-legged, before randomly taking a book and opening it. Curiosity erupted out of him, “A Transcendent Qi cultivation method?”

The Qi cultivation methods circulating around the mortal world, regardless of whether they were inferior goods or top graded ones, could only allow the user to cultivate up to Transcendent level.

As for anything after Transcendents, there were no clues regarding such methods.

“Only after reaching the ranks of Transcendent does one truly step onto the path of cultivation.”

“This road is filled with many dangers and difficulties. Step by step... the final destination of a Transcendent is to transform into a deity!”

This book about a Qi cultivation method only briefly touched on these points. As for what was recorded after the introduction, the book detailed the actual Qi cultivation method.

Yet these few simple introductory sentences startled Xue Ying.

Many memoirs described the ascensions of deities.

For example, the Dragon Mountain Emperor was actually a deity!

*‘So actually, the final destination of a Transcendent is to become a deity? No wonder the Dragon Mountain emperor was able to unite the entire world as one.’* Xue Ying thought silently to himself. Simply flipping over the cultivation method, he could see that this method was water-attributed, and was not suited for him. However, this information allowed Xue Ying to more fully understand the various levels of the path of Transcendents.

After flipping through this cultivation method book, Xue Ying took up another thick book – The Diagrams of Myriad Items.

Xue Ying briefly looked through the book. It actually described various Transcendent-ranked treasures, with each of them being extremely profound.

However, he didn’t presently need this information. He picked up another book.



“Mn?” Xue Ying brightened up, “found it.”

This book had no words written on its golden-cover.

Opening this book, Xue Ying read the first paragraph. Written within was – “I am Lei Zhen, elder of the Sea Deity Palace. To date, I’m already 1,500 years old and have reached the end of my lifespan. Right now, I’m going to enter closed door cultivation. Either I succeed and become a Demigod, or I’ll just die here in this ‘Black-Wind Deity Palace’.”

Xue Ying stared blankly at it.

Sea Deity Palace?

Lei Zhen was some Transcendent who was able to live up to 1,500 years? Such a long lifespan.

“He wished to become a Demigod?” Xue Ying thought to himself, “From the books of Qi cultivation method I saw previously, from low to high, a Transcendent’s road is split into three great levels – Sky, Saint and Demigod. It seems this elder from the Sea Deity Palace was already a Saint and was able to live a thousand and five hundred years? How long would one be able to live for if he broke through to Demigod?”

Xue Ying had many doubts and an unclear understanding. After all, towards the world of Transcendents, he knew too little.

Following that introductory paragraph, Xue Ying continued reading the entire book.

The records written in the book thereafter were more trivial – it was the account of this Transcendent ‘Lei Zhen’ regarding the milestones in his life.

“Infernal World? Demonic faction? Sorcerer’s Palace? Entering the Minor World?” Xue Ying read through the account of Lei Zhen while keeping a lookout for any information regarding the world of Transcendents.

Soon, he reached the very last page.

“In my entire life, being able to obtain the ‘Stone of Oceanic World’ was truly a great stroke of fortune. Successor... I’ve entered closed-door cultivation. Any other treasures that I could sell, I sold, and any treasures I could trade, I traded

for treasures to aid in my breakthrough. As such, I did not have many treasures left with me; I only had a life-saving Saint-Grade ‘protective inner vest’, and a low-level, Saint-Grade staff that was only used once. Should I fail to breakthrough, even if I had much stronger weapons, what use would they be?”

“Successor, if you are like me, entering this location by chance, I’ve left behind some treasures that might be of use for you.”

“If you are to openly defeat the many protectors and have already obtained the entire Black-Wind Deity Palace, then these treasures will not be worth a mentioning to you. It is only the Stone of Oceanic World that might be of some worth in your eyes. Oh yes, that Stone of Oceanic World is right there within the pool.”

Xue Ying gazed at the octagonal pool.

Having read through the account written by this Transcendent ‘Lei Zhen’, he knew that the ‘Stone of Oceanic World’ was an extremely precious and exotic treasure. This was actually the most precious core bred from a minor world, and was the most precious and exotic treasure obtained by this Saint-ranked Lei Zhen. Its use was actually not for battle. Rather, it was to aid in one’s cultivation and would be quite helpful in breaking through one’s bottleneck.

Such cultivation-aiding treasures were the lifeblood of Transcendents.

“That pile of stones.”

Xue Ying looked towards the side at the large pile of ashen pebbles, “So, they are called Origin Stones!”

This Lei Zhen actually sold off most of his treasures, including the oft-used Saint-Grade weapon before he entered closed-door cultivation. In exchange, he had obtained quite a lot of cultivation treasures with these Origin Stones comprising the majority of his obtained treasures!

Each Origin Stone was actually a source stone coming from a big world. Within it stored the most primitive world energy that had no attributes, ensuring no burden would be brought about to one’s physique, and thus, allowing one to cultivate at an extremely fast speed! Usually, ordinary Transcendents could not bear the expense of using such stones to cultivate. They could only afford to use

them when they were about to breakthrough the important bottlenecks in their cultivation path. Lei Zhen went into a closed-door cultivation, all the way until his death, leaving behind a large pile of Origin Stones.

“Successor, if you are to be like me and enter this location by chance, regardless of which route you take, I’m leaving behind a map of routes to ease your movement.”

“I’ve investigated thoroughly.”

“Following the walls of the valleys, climbing down or climbing up... will be the most straightforward path and also, the most difficult one – one has to avoid those protectors! Furthermore, one has to be quite a distance away from the cavern palace, because the security closer to it is tighter, with an impossibility for one to enter the palace through its front gates! If one has good luck and patience, one might even have a hope in climbing out from the valley. Previously, I had dispatched some small and weak refiner organisms in trying to find their way out of this place. A total of fifteen small and weak refiner organisms were dispatched, yet finally, only one was able to successfully reach the Black-Wind Cliff! I was able to obtain from the refiner organism on top of the Black-Wind Cliff a detailed account of what it experienced. The security below is extremely tight, with the latent difficulty in using this path being too high, too hard.”

“There is still another possible path which I took to reach this location. That year, I chased after an expert from the Sorcerer’s palace, chasing all the way to the underground lava river before finally, successfully killing him. Beside this underground lava river, I discovered a crack within the rocks. Extending my senses, I realised that this crack was extremely deep and strange. Thus, I turned myself into fluid, flowing through the cracks that penetrated all the way for more than five hundred kilometers before reaching another crack by the Black-Wind Deity Palace and entering it.”

“Black-Wind Deity Palace was actually crafted by a powerful senior ‘Ancestor Black Wind’. Ancestor Black Wind was a Demigod, and was the indisputable, strongest Demigod during his time! The Black-Wind Deity Palace that he left behind is unmatched, with no Transcendent having successfully killed his way in to obtain the treasures left behind. From this, one can see how powerful he was!”

“This area that I found was actually one of the underground Great Halls within the Black-Wind Deity Palace. My combat power was too weak and thus, I was unable to seize the entire Black-Wind Deity Palace. At the very most, I was only able to enter this small little area within the Black-Wind Deity Palace.”

“As for the map for the route out of here, and the map which I plotted of this Black-Wind Deity Palace, they are all recorded within the last page of this book.”

---

## Book 4: Chapter 10 – The Only Way Out

---

The page showed a map filled with details and explanations.

“What? There is actually a door within the underground Great Hall of the Black-Wind Deity Palace that leads all the way out to a Major World?” Xue Ying was shocked. There were detailed explanations on the map that described a hidden door below the underground Great Hall that led all the way out to a Big Transcendent World. Having read through the thousand-year account of the Sea Deity Palace Elder ‘Lei Zhen’, Xue Ying understood more about the world he lived in.

The mortal world he lived in was actually an extremely stable material world!

A material world that was huge and beautiful.

At the various locations within a material world, there were folds and slits in spaces... creating several imperfect Transcendent worlds. These Transcendent worlds were categorised as Major Worlds and Minor Worlds. It was precisely due to such a world’s imperfections that led to the formation of some of the unique treasures produced within these worlds! Even the core of an entire world might be formed into a treasure. The many precious items a Transcendent needed more or less originated from these worlds.

Within a mortal world, not even an Origin Stone could be mined! What was an Origin Stone? It was actually a mineral where the most primal World energy generated from the birth of a world gathered within. In the heavily-regulated and beautiful mortal worlds, most of the World energy was used up in making it perfect, resulting in Transcendents being unable to find any strange minerals from them.

But those Major and Minor Worlds had very simple rules. The mysterious power was used instead of perfecting the world to form real, countless and precious ‘Transcendent treasures’. Such items created a fanaticism amongst the Transcendents!

Thus, even though these worlds looked simple and crude, they were still

termed as 'Transcendent World' precisely due to the fact that they contained many Transcendent treasures!

"How rare is a Major World actually?" Xue Ying was startled, "And this place is actually connected to one of them?"

According to Elder Lei Zhen, there were eight Big Transcendent Worlds which humans had discovered! Counting this additional Major World that was directly connected to the Black-Wind Deity Palace, there would be nine such Worlds!

"Every single Major World that is yet to be opened are considered a treasure trove." Once again, Xue Ying felt amazed.

No wonder Ancestor Black Wind decided to craft a Cavern palace here.

BMajorWorld...

They were rare and precious. Once many people knew about it, only the most powerful of Demigods would be able to seize all that world's treasures! Demigods would surely enter and plunder large amounts of a world's Transcendent resources.

"Major Worlds are really too rare and precious." Within the explanations, Elder Lei Zhen repeatedly reinforced, "One must never expose the existence of such a world even if he is a good friend. After all, he might plot behind your back."

Actually, before Elder Lei Zhen entered his closed-door cultivation to the death...

He still held onto the hope of becoming a Demigod! Having lived for over 1,500 years, he did not have much attachment for the mortal world, thus, he did not reveal any single secret that he had obtained relating to the Black-Wind Deity Palace.

.....

Xue Ying closed the book. His expression showed deep contemplation.

"Major Worlds are so precious that Demigods would become fanatical about them." Xue Ying thought silently, "However, there is a high chance that this Elder Black Wind had already seized the treasures within. Furthermore, seeing that I'm

just a mortal, I'm still quite a distance away from being able to enter it."

After that, Xue Ying began skimming through the remaining books before waving his hand to collect all the various materials, leaving behind only two strange-looking talismans. These were actually the talismans used in controlling the two Transcendent refiner organisms. Penetrating them with his Qi allowed him to easily refine them.

Beside him, the golden ape and roc both said immediately, "Greetings, master."

"Wait until I leave this Black-Wind Deity Palace. I'll definitely bring you guys along," Xue Ying said.

"Master, we've long desired to get out of this place." The golden ape was really excited.

The golden roc was also, filled with expectations.

Xue Ying smiled, "The two of you call each other Monkey and Little Bird, thus I'll call you those names as well."

"Master, whatever you want to call us, we'll be called that." The two Transcendent refiner organisms were extremely obedient. That was the virtue of refiner organisms – absolute loyalty.

"Oh yes, the Stone of Oceanic World is within this pool?" Xue Ying pointed towards the octagonal-shaped pool.

"Mn." The golden roc said, "The late master was worried that there might be experts from the Sorcerer's Palace finding out about this place, thus, he decided to form arrays around the pool. If I break apart this token, the arrays will explode with a power equal to that of our late master's combined powers. Perhaps the explosion might kill the enemy, but more importantly, the Stone of Oceanic World would definitely be smashed into powder. Also, within the Black-Wind Deity Palace, there are more dangerous places designed to thwart the experts of Sorcerer's Palace should they would also attack those locations.

Xue Ying nodded.

The Sorcerer's Palace was an organisation formed by the Transcendents of the

beast's race.

Humans and beasts had the utmost hatred for each other. Even when leaving behind the treasures which had been hard-earned by himself, he would never ever leave such precious items behind for someone from the other race!

"Hu." Xue Ying knelt down. He cupped both his hands, bringing up the spiritual liquid from the pools for a drink.

A burst of coolness circulated through his entire body.

Within every part of his body, regardless of whether it was the muscles, the bones or the visceras, the Dantian Qi Sea or his Soul of Consciousness, they all received some nourishment. Furthermore, the moment the energy from this spiritual liquid was absorbed, Xue Ying's hunger entirely dissipated.

"Drinking actually satiated my hunger." Xue Ying laughed.

"Food is considered to be energy as well." The golden ape laughed, amused, "The spiritual liquid transmuted by the stone of Oceanic World is naturally more nourishing to the body than the mundane food found elsewhere. The late master drank from this spiritual liquid every single day. The nourishment from this pool is part of the reason he was able to become a peak Saint expert... this spiritual liquid."

Xue Ying raised out his hands, scooping up the strange-looking jade stone from within the pool.

This jade stone was entirely oceanic-blue in colour. There was a mild oceanic-blue stream circulating on its surface. This jade stone was able to capture the essence from heaven and earth and was actually the core of a Minor World. Looking at it would bring forth a temptation to bite it. This desire... actually stemmed from the instinct of life.

"Looking at it made me feel like eating it." Xue Ying felt amazed.

"Do not eat it directly. Eating it would be too wasteful," The golden ape reminded, "Placing it within the water will let it dissolve slowly, turning ordinary water into spiritual liquid. The late master depended on it for the transmutation of spiritual liquid for close to a 1,000 years, and only half of the stone was used."



“It requires water?” Xue Ying frowned, “I do not have any water though!”

“Actually, the spiritual liquid from this pool is able to let master drink for 30-50 years.” The golden ape said, “When you are able to get out of this place, master will certainly be able to prepare more water.”

Xue Ying nodded, before waving his hand to coerce the energy from the world with a *‘hu’*. The spiritual liquid was all brought into the storage treasure. Actually, the space within it was independent, with no air and gravity. Once any material was brought within, it would not move any longer. Thus, the spiritual liquid brought within was suspended in mid-air within the storage treasure.

Following that, Xue Ying walked towards the crack at the distant wall. This entire underground Great Hall had walls with enormous cracks within.

“According to the annotations on ancestor Lei Zhen’s map, he came in from this particular crack.” Xue Ying looked towards that crack in front of him. It inclined downwards.

Xue Ying followed along the crack.

His body was bathed in flames, brightening up the pitch-black area within the crack. The further he travelled, the narrower the crack became. After walking for five kilometers or so, the crack became so narrow that he was unable to continue.

“Mn?” Xue Ying frowned, “It seems Ancestor Lei Zhen really did turn himself into water before he was able to go pass this particular crack that leads all the way to the Black-Wind Deity Palace. Currently, as a mortal, I have no way of passing through it.”

If there was no path, would he have to dig out another road himself?

Obviously, such an idea would not work.

“Following the account of Ancestor Lei Zhen, the surrounding area of this Black-Wind Deity Palace is actually a gigantic array! Including the huge mountains along the sides, the ground and various other areas, they are actually all surrounded by arrays! Even within the valleys, the entire place is filled with arrays. Outside these arrays, large amounts of protectors can be seen patrolling, and these protectors have really sensitive senses.

“The moment one dares to destroy the surface, digging out the mountain rocks to form a path within the arrays, one will immediately be discovered.”

“One can only follow the present path! I can’t destroy the slightest of things.”

Xue Ying felt frustrated.

Transcendents did not even succeed in escaping with their tricks, so how could he have any hope of doing so.

“This crack is really too narrow, and it spans for 500 kilometers...” Xue Ying shook his head lightly, “Only when I become a Transcendent can I go through this.”

.....

Helplessly, Xue Ying could only go back to that broken, large Great Hall. Currently, as a mortal, even if he had other maps of small areas within the Black-Wind Deity Palace, he would still be unable to enter them.

Looking at the empty Great Hall...

The only way of going out would be to cultivate all the way to being a Transcendent!

“Monkey, Little Bird.” Xue Ying looked at the golden ape and golden roc, smiling, “It seems I, Dong Bo Xue Ying, will only have you two as my comrades for a long long time.”

## Book 4: Chapter 11 – Six Years...

---

There were two different methods usually used for stepping into the realm of Transcendents – one was through body transcension while the other was through the Qi transcension!

Many pseudo-Transcendents were fortunate... and were able to borrow external forces to aid them in transcending their fleshy body. Only one out of ten would succeed. Even when they succeeded, their Qi cultivation still remained at the Legend level and could not compare with a true Transcendent in terms of combat power. At the very most, they would only rank within the top 500 of the Dragon Mountain Book. Despite that, many Legend rankers would still carry on despite the danger, risking their lives in gambling for attainment.

That was because the moment they became a pseudo-Transcendent, their lifespan would prolong! Facing the more powerful Legend rankers, even if they could not win, they could still escape through the skies – flying away.

*‘According to legends, the second awakening of one’s Primordial Bloodline could allow one to step into the realm of Transcendence,’* Xue Ying silently thought to himself, *‘It’s a pity that this is really too difficult.’*

Within the memoirs of Lei Zhen, there were several mentionings about the second awakening of the Primordial Bloodline.

The first awakening would allow one to dominate amongst the mortals.

As for the second awakening... only attaining it would one have the elegance of a primordial being.

One must know that a primordial being had the capabilities to rival the strongest true deities! However, the traces of any Primordial Bloodline found within mortals were too thin, and people with even the first awakening were a rare-find. For one to even have a second awakening... nothing detailed was mentioned within Lei Zhen’s memoirs. But Xue Ying could infer from the context that such a second awakening was really difficult.

*‘I am currently trapped here within the underground Great Hall of Black-Wind*

*Deity Palace and do not have any other way. The only path I could take is the most ordinary one – Qi transcension.*’ Xue Ying thought to himself.

The moment one’s Qi underwent transcension, this Transcendent-type Qi would inevitably seep within the fleshy body, bones, viscera and mind, creating a body transcension along it.

This path of transcending...

Was the safest out of the two.

Like those pseudo-Transcendents, under the condition of being stuck at the bottleneck in breakthroughs, they would utilise some external force in reforming their own fleshy body. Especially during the process where one reformed his brains, nine out of ten would die from the process. Only a small number of these people would succeed in becoming a pseudo-Transcendent, prolonging their lifespan.

“Hu~~”

Xue Ying sat cross-legged on the smooth ground within the Great Hall. The energy of the Universe Flame entered into his body and into his Dantian Qi sea.

Within the Dantian Qi Sea, a small round ball was seen rotating about.

This was precisely the True Dan formed after a Legend ranker’s Qi fully agglomerated into a materialisation.

“I must continuously cultivate and polish this lump of True Dan before there can be a qualitative change within it. Only when a strand of Transcendent Qi appears within the True Dan can the transcension of all the Legend Qi occur.” Xue Ying felt quite vexated, “Cultivating and polishing... a qualitative change...”

There were no shortcuts for this road.

Many Legend rankers, including the transformed beast Xiang Pang Yun and the top 50 genius monsters noted in the Dragon Mountain Book were all trapped within this bottleneck for a long period of time, trying their best to cultivate and polish their True Dan until the day that they could transcend!

*‘I’ve attained the realm of Myriad Existences, and also comprehended the mystery behind the Fire of Myriad Existences.’* Xue Ying thought, *‘My Qi is also*

*that of a flame Qi... and I have the spiritual liquid transmuted by the Stone of Oceanic World. All of these should allow me to step into Transcendence at a faster pace.'*

The probability of an ordinary Legend ranker stepping into Transcendence was really low.

And those who were able to comprehend the Realm of Myriad Existences were all ranked within the top 50 of the Dragon Mountain Book, and usually had a higher chance of transcending! Most of those who comprehended the Realm of Myriad Existences were over a century in years, with Xue Ying being just 22. Thus, he had plenty of time and could be said to be certain of transcending. The only variable was how long he would take, ten years? Fifty years? One hundred years? Nobody was able to predict it!

"Being anxious is useless."

"Calm down. Let's do it slowly step by step." Xue Ying sat cross-legged as he slowly absorbed the energy from the Universe flame, slowly cultivating the Qi True Dan within his body.

.....

Time is merciless.

On top of the Snowrock mountain, the cycle of melting and reforming of snow had happened over and over again. The trees, flowers and grasses on top of it had withered and flourished over and over again...

Before Xue Ying fell into the Black-Wind Abyss, the name of Lord Xue Ying was well known. Within the entire Tranquil Sun province, and including places outside of it, discussions were made regarding him.

But regardless of how genius an monster was, a dead genius would lose his title as a genius.

Right now, any discussions about Dong Bo Xue Ying within Tranquil Sun province were becoming rare. Even his hometown – Water Rites Town – did not have many discussions over Xue Ying. After all, to them, Xue Ying was just a passing guest. Only when they were drinking would they occasionally sigh about the matter... After all, the Water Rites Town had actually given birth to such an

amazing character.

Three years after Xue Ying fell into the Black-Wind Abyss...

A piece of news shocked the entire Azure River County, even reaching to the entire Tranquil Sun province.

The genius heaven-favored girl mage 'Yu Jing Qiu', had become One with the World and entered the realm of Legend ranks!

Entering Legend ranking was actually not rare.

But she was just 28 years old and had actually become a Legend ranking mage! That was too rare. Mages were fundamentally different from knights – in that knights could breakthrough as long as they comprehended the World Energy. But for mages, they would have to consolidate their understanding gradually and analyse the many spell matrices and that of the World energy to a certain level before they could finally step into the realm of One with the World!

Just 28 years? She was indeed quite a monster.

\*\*\*\*\*

Within the Eternal Wind Academy.

The Autumn rain sprinkled down. Today, many discussions could be heard within the academy about the female mage 'Yu Jing Qiu'. Although she could not compare with Dong Bo Xue Ying, the monster seen only once in a hundred years in the entire empire, Yu Jing Qiu was already quite capable in her own ways, with such a talent appearing once every 18 years in the Dragon Mountain Empire.

"Jing Qiu," A gentle voice could be heard.

Yu Jing Qiu was sitting within a pavilion, drinking a cup of tea while looking out at the sprinkles of Autumn rain. After this breakthrough, she felt quite excited within her heart, yet it was quelled the moment she thought of that genius.

"Teacher?" Yu Jing Qiu turned towards the source of the voice. Standing up, she saw a white-bearded old man carrying an umbrella walking towards her.

"Jing Qiu, have you decided? Are you ready to enter one of the Transcendents' organisation?" The white-bearded old man said.

“Teacher, you and the Academy principal and many other Legend rankers within the Academy are all part of the Water Daoist Faction.” Yu Jing Qiu said, “I would of course join the Water Daoist Faction as well.”

The Water Daoist Faction was an extremely big Transcendent organisation.

“The Temple of Earth God values you quite greatly, and even gave you quite good conditions for joining them. Aren’t you going?” The white-bearded old man laughed.

“The Temple of Earth God is more strict about giving freedom.” Yu Jing Qiu shook her head, “I don’t like to battle and kill. I only want to discover more about the spells peacefully and freely, investigating more about the mystery behind nature.” “Mn.” The white-bearded old man nodded lightly, “Good. Then you should prepare yourself. One of these days, I’ll bring you to the Northern Great Snowy Plains to visit the Water Daoist Faction. Thereafter, I’ll bring you to the Infernal World! All of this elementary knowledge is stuff I told you before, so do finish the mundane matters before we leave.”

“I understand.” Yu Jing Qiu nodded.

.....

Within the valley of Black-Wind Abyss, inside a dilapidated underground Great Hall within the Black-Wind Deity Palace.

A black-robed young man was seen bending his body. In his hands, there was a dagger that swiftly cut away his messy hair. With his control of the World Energy, he was able to have a fine sensing of every single strand of his hair. Very quickly, he was able to cut his hair into a simple and casual hairstyle. When he was young, he would always have the habit of having a short hairstyle whilst training diligently every day. After all, having long hair could be very troublesome, and thus, he did not want to waste time on such matters.

Following that, a flame appeared out of thin air, incinerating all his cut hair into ashes.

It had been six years.

There were not many changes in Xue Ying’s facial countenance, except the expression within his eyes that showed him being more reclusive along with his

entire character being more aloof.

Being trapped in this place for six full years with only two Transcendent refiner organisms to talk to, how boring and mundane were the days here? Initially when he started, Xue Ying felt uncomfortable already. Fortunately, all these years were spent madly training in his spear techniques, allowing him to slowly conform to such loneliness!

“Monkey, come. Let’s fight.” With a single move of his hand, the Flying Snow God Spear appeared in Xue Ying’s hand.

“Master, you only know how to bully me.” The golden ape felt depressed.

“I’ve always feel that my spear technique is not right. Stop grumbling and just receive my spear.” As Xue Ying was still contemplating in his heart over the problem with his spear technique, he executed a move right at the golden ape, beginning their exchange and at the same time, pondering over his problem while sparring.

Initially, he did not feel any problems existed with his own spear technique.

Yet the more he cultivated and trained within the Great Hall, the more he felt that there was a huge problem with his spear technique, something that became more uncomfortable as time wore on.



## Book 4: Chapter 12 – Water of Myriad Existences

---

*Hong hong hong*, Xue Ying and his Flying Snow Spear God were just like an erupting volcano, powerful and fierce. He struck at the golden ape continuously, causing it to hurriedly parry each thrust and, at times, use its own body to defend against the attack.

“With an explosive first strike, following that strike a decline, and an exhaustion at the third.” Xue Ying shook his head, “Fire of Myriad Existences... shouldn’t be like this!”

Six years ago, he first comprehended the realm of Myriad Existences, killing Xiang Pang Yun with it. At that time, there was violent aggressiveness within Xue Ying’s spear technique as the overbearing and arrogance of the flame was born within it. That time, when he displayed it, he felt particularly joyful. Yet after the six years of lonely cultivation... Xue Ying gradually began to realise there existed some problems with his spear techniques. His first strike would have an immense explosive power, and following that, it was really just repetitions.

Continuously attacking explosively, as long as his enemies was able to adapt to it, then his set of techniques would become useless.

“The true spear technique shouldn’t be like this!”

Xue Ying suddenly fiercely retreated.

The golden ape felt some apprehension as he looked at his master, who had retreated back 100 meters. Xue Ying actually started practising his spear technique.

“A mortal’s spear technique is required to be hard and soft at the same time! Yin and Yang united as one! How could I pursue just fierceness ever since I’ve comprehended the realm of Myriad Existences?” Xue Ying started displaying the most popular fundamental in the world – Soul Spear Technique. Every single move and attack was simple and natural, bringing with it some mysterious softness conception.

“Only after kneeling can I jump higher.”

“Withdrawing my fist is for the sake of the next attack.”

“I’ve always wanted my spear technique to be stronger and fiercer, and to do that, I need to become more my power must become more reserved. Only when softness and hardness unites as one could the hardness become even harder!” Xue Ying exuberantly displayed his spear technique. All these years, he had been chasing after the hard and fierce profoundness of flame. Right now in turn, he started chasing after the other side – the soft side of strength.

As he displayed his techniques...

He brought forth the accumulated doubts he had towards his own spear technique for the past six years, bringing his heart out in joyfully displaying his techniques. The more he trained in his spear technique this way... the faster he actually became!

This single bout of training lasted for a little more than five full days.

Suddenly —

Xue Ying’s Flying Snow God Spear rotated as if it enveloped the entire heaven and earth, withstanding every single existence. Surrounding the shadow of the rotating spear, streams of water could be seen rotating along the spear, forming a maelstrom. With the sound of ‘hua hua hua’, this was truly a natural forming stream of water from the heaven and earth.

The Water of Myriad Existences!

“Yes, it is this feeling.”

“Truly beautiful.”

“Softness is endless within water. My spear technique is lacking this kind of softness and this kind of Yin!” Xue Ying’s eyes were filled with delight. The moment he looked towards the maelstrom of water formed by his spear’s rotation... Xue Ying understood that he had comprehended the profoundness of ‘water’ within the Myriad Existences.

“Monkey, Little Bird, the two of you attack me together!”

Under his excitement, Xue Ying flashed ahead, charging towards them.

Both the golden ape and roc glanced at each other, before emitting out weird

sounds and jointly attacked!

*“Hong!”* The golden ape slapped with his big palm.

The spear in Xue Ying’s hand began stabbing out with a rotation. He had already deviated from several techniques within the Dark Ice Spear Technique. As the spear stabbed outwards, it brought with it a rotating stream of water. The moment the golden ape’s big palm touched Xue Ying’s spearhead, it could feel as if it hit an endlessly rotating gyro. The rotating spearhead easily slid past its palm, stabbing directly at the chest of the golden ape.

*Puchi!*

That single stab hit right at its chest, bringing a strange rotating penetrative force that made the golden ape feel uncomfortable. It was fortunate that it was a Transcendent’s refiner organism crafted from extremely sturdy materials.

The Stab of Soul Spear Technique!

Currently, Xue Ying had started on his own path, leaving behind the manacles binding him to the Dark Ice Spear Technique. After all, his path of spear technique would be fundamentally different from Ancestor Gu Yuan Han. At the very most, he had only gleaned from Ancestor Gu Yuan Han some of his extremely good pointers like the superimposition of rotating forces. As for Xue Ying, he had actually refined this sort of rotating force together with the ‘Water of Myriad Existences’, combining them to greatly increase its power.

“What kind of move was that?” The golden roc beside the golden ape felt apprehension towards the spear. Instantly, it began flapping its wings and moving over towards Xue Ying.

With a rotation from the spear...

As if a gigantic maelstrom appeared within the heaven and earth, the approaching golden roc could feel its strength being directed to the sides.

“Hahaha...” Xue Ying felt extremely pleased, “Little Bird, Monkey, now you two should be a little more careful.”

One could see Xue Ying’s spear dancing about, interlacing with the two of them as they began exchanging moves.

In the past, if Xue Ying was said to be extremely aggressive, right now, he was like a slippery loach. With his defensive spear technique, his enemies would be unable to utilise their entire strength! When he attacked, even though it was not very powerful, it was still filled with strange irregularity that caused his enemies to be unable to predict his changing attacks. In addition, that sort of rotating penetrative force was quite ruthless.

*“Peng.”* At times, Xue Ying’s spear would explode aggressively, causing his spear to be bathed in flames, severely attacking the bodies of his enemies.

One soft, one hard, causing his enemies to feel like vomiting blood.

*“That’s right. This is exactly what I wanted!”* At the same time, while Xue Ying was battling, the Soul Spear Technique gradually transformed. Every move and attack followed endlessly, inevitably increasing the threat brought by the Fire of Myriad Existences.

Furthermore, even the ‘Profound Mystery of Fire’ was slowly transforming.

The original flame was just aggressive and fierce, with only violence in its incineration! As for now, there appeared to be an extra strand of a hidden blade, allowing this fierce and hard strength to endlessly last.

*“Within fire and water, there exists some fundamental similarities.”* Xue Ying’s comprehension of the Fire of Myriad Existences was increasing, allowing his comprehension of the Water of Myriad Existences to improve by learning from the essence of profoundness behind the flame. It was not purely soft but instead, there was some faint penetrating hardness hidden within.

Fundamentally soft with hardness stringing through it that could explode at any time, this was the current Xue Ying’s Water of Myriad Existences.

Fundamentally hard with softness penetrating through it endlessly, this was his current Fire of Myriad Existences.

*“How joyful.”* Xue Ying felt joy in displaying his spear techniques.

Previously, there was always some sort of ‘With an explosive first strike, following that a decline, and an exhaustion at the third’ feeling. After all, being so fierce throughout was extremely tiring.

Right now, he did not even feel tired at all, and his spear techniques could be chained endlessly.

.....

Even after comprehending the profoundness behind Water of Myriad Existences, his Qi would still be required to be slowly polished and cultivated unhurriedly.

Within the Great Hall.

Xue Ying sat down cross-legged, absorbing the Universe Flame from the heaven and earth in aid for polishing and cultivating that lump of True Dan. Even after cultivating it for six years, he was still unable to breakthrough.

But as of today, as Xue Ying was leading the Flame Qi in his body, he actually utilised the somewhat newly comprehended Profound Mystery behind the 'Fire of Myriad Existences'. As the Qi was used to cultivate and polish his True Dan, hidden within was some sort of soft strength... at times it was a hard polish; at times it was a soft polish. Half an hour, an hour... that lump of True Dan gradually transform.

For six years, he had been drinking the spiritual liquid transformed by the Stone of Oceanic World. This spiritual liquid had cultivated his fleshy body and Dantian Qi sea's Dou Qi True Dan, endlessly cultivating and polishing it.

And right now, the cultivating Qi brought with it a refined version of the Profound Mystery behind 'Fire of Myriad Existences' ... showing an instant and distinct transformation in its aid for cultivating and polishing his True Dan.

*"Weng—"*

The surface of the lump of the True Dan began glowing, as if it was being reborn.

On the surface of this True Dan a brilliance gradually appeared that slowly agglomerated together. Slowly, it turned into a sort of mist with a faint red flame hidden within. This sort of mist actually had an inconceivable Transcendent power within. Even though it seemed lacking, this one single strand could easily cut apart any stone sword, with the weaker Refiner Weapon being unable to withstand its cutting edge.

“Transcendent Qi?” Immense delight suddenly overwhelmed Xue Ying.

---

|

## Book 4: Chapter 13 – Transcendent Being

---

Surprisingly, Xue Ying had Transcended so suddenly...

He was so excited, he felt feverish as if all his blood was boiling. Trapped inside the Black-Wind Abyss for six years, he always yearned to become Transcendent! However, deep inside his heart, he thought it would have taken twenty or even fifty years for him to achieve it. But who could have known that... he would break through and become a Transcendent in only six years!

“I’ve become a Transcendent! I- ... I can go back! I can go back home!” Many scenes and people flashed through Xue Ying’s mind.

The hustle and bustle of the outside world, his brother Qing Shi, his parents, Uncle Zong and Uncle Tong, the castle’s soldiers and the Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi as well, and even Si An from Dragon Mountain Manor along with Yu Jing Qiu, who had taken a mission together with him.

Having been alone from such an early age, Xue Ying was already yearning for his freedom.

“With me becoming Transcendent, it will be easier to save father and mother.” Xue Ying was so excited, there was a faint trace of tears in his eyes. He immediately grinned and took a deep breath, “Calm down, a meal needs to be eaten one bite at a time. First I need to completely transform my Qi in order to become a Transcendent.”

Inside Xue Ying’s Dantian Qi Sea, the round lump of his True Dan was letting off threads of lights which continuously radiated brilliance, condensing even more mist. The faint red flame mist was increasing in quantity. The first thread of Transcendent Qi was hardest to form. After the first thread was formed, the next one would take much less time to materialize.

A large quantity of red flame mist quickly permeated throughout his Dantian Qi Sea area. With a ‘ka ka ka’ sound, the lump of True Dan started to crack. The lump of True Dan was the condensed form of Legend Qi. Along the crack, all the Legend Qi was being sucked in and transformed into Transcendent Qi without

exception.

After a time, there was no Legend Qi left. All that remained was the faint red flame mist.

*Hu* the energy of the Universe Flame continuously rushed into his body.

World Energy was being continuously changed into Transcendent Qi, thus being directly absorbed by Xue Ying. It kept going until he faintly felt his Dantian Qi Sea filled to the brim, at which point he stopped it..

“My Qi has transcended now.”

Xue Ying was full of expectation, “Now for transcending my body!”!

*Si si...*

One by one, threads of Transcendent Qi started to seep into his skin, flesh and bones. Actually, in the mortal stage, people could already use Qi to transform their body, so Xue Ying was already familiar with the process. But the changes caused by Transcendent Qi were more visible and extreme.

Xue Ying’s skin and flesh was absorbing Transcendent Qi, slowly leading him into a body transcension.

His skin and flesh also became more durable, and flexible, showing an innate qualitative change. .

‘*Gu, gu, gu*’ as his bone marrow was also transforming. Likewise, the blood produced by the bone marrow also evolving. The blood flowing throughout his entire body was transforming his internal organs into their new state.

Using one’s own Transcendent Qi to transform their body was the safest method, because everything would naturally happen.

Using external force to transcend one’s body like those with Pseudo-Transcendent bodies was like gambling with your life. Even if one was to be successful with this method, one would still have to pay a huge price. It was usually worth the cost, however, as a Legend rank was still mortal, with a lifespan of only around 100 years more than a normal person’s, whereas if they succeeded, they would have the chance to live for much longer.

“My flesh, skin and bones already transcending, now for my viscera and brain,”



Xue Ying silently thought to himself. Due to the circulation of his blood, his viscera and brain had already undergone a minor transformation, so it was more accommodating to the Transcendent Qi.

Transcendent Qi directly penetrated into his viscera, being rapidly adsorbed, and transforming his insides.

His viscera produced a fine substance, the majority of it going to his brain, making the latter undergo a transformation.

After one hour, his viscera transformation was complete. This time, Xue Ying's Transcendent Qi finally penetrated his brain, making it undergo numerous minor changes, and thus very safe to receive Transcendent Qi.

*Hong!*

Xue Ying felt a rumbling sound from his brain. Whilst it was transforming, Xue Ying felt that his brain was blazing hot and his ears were ringing, but he kept calm.

Slowly, this rumbling sound gradually dissipated. Unprecedentedly, his mind was crystal clear, his thinking speed also greatly increased. His sight, smell and hearing had also undergone an astonishing transformation. His eyesight had greatly improved, enabling him to see things from fifty kilometers away. He could even could see a small earthworm fifty kilometers away!

Unimaginable! This was what it was like to be Transcendent!

"It's a strange feeling." Xue Ying looked around. The great hall that originally looked dilapidated and desolate, all of sudden become colorful. The world had become very beautiful.

"Transcendent." Xue Ying stretched out his hand and then directly used dagger to stab his arm.

*Hua...*

The dagger cut through his arm as if it were air, leaving no injury whatsoever..

It seemed like the dagger and arm were not in the same dimension. The dagger had clearly passed through his arm, but the arm hadn't been affected at all.

"Mortal matter and Transcendent matter are entirely different!" exclaimed

Xue Ying. “My body has already undergone transcendence. Now, only Transcendent matter can inflict injury on my body”

So, no matter how many mortals there were, all of them were nothing in front of a Transcendent!

It was because no matter what, they were unable to inflict any injuries on Transcendents. Even the puniest Pseudo-Transcendent, a Legend ranker expert listed in the top fifty of the Dragon Mountain Book, still needed to use things forged from Transcendent materials, or weapons coated with a layer of Transcendent material, before they able to harm and even kill a Pseudo-Transcendent. But it would be very hard to kill them if the Pseudo-Transcendent focused on escape.

“My body should be able to transform!” Xue Ying’s body underwent a transformation.

*Gu gu...*

The body instantly became soft, becoming a pool of liquid, and condensed into a flowing sphere.

“Ah, Master!” at this moment, from distant place, the golden ape and roc were shocked. Their master transformed into sphere-shaped liquid, “Master already became a Transcendent?”

The liquid sphere continuously changed.

Occasionally it became a cube, in other a knife or a spear.

And then completely broke down into numerous particles! These numerous particles were the Transcendents physical body ability to break down their body into the most tiny form.

*Hu*

In the end, Xue Ying transform into his original human appearance.

“A Transcendent body is amazing!” Xue Ying was completely amazed. But maintaining human form was still the best choice in life and death battle. The other form’s defence was weaker, and so was its fighting capabilities.

“Fly!”. In a flash, Xue Ying’s body changed into a flame.

A flame like a shooting star.

*Hu*

With his high speed, in a split second, he had already flown around the great hall once. The flame sped up and circling the great hall again and again, leaving trail of light behind it. Countless blazing lights appeared inside the great hall. The flame landed and changed back into Xue Ying's human form.

"Change again into water!" Xue Ying instantly changed into water body and then with high speed, he flying freely around the great hall and even making 'S' flight pattern before stopping.

"Very impressive!" Xue Ying expressed his happiness.

A Transcendents flying ability was aided a little by World Energy.

If someone who was already able to comprehend 'One with the World' stepped into the Transcendent rank and transformed their body into fine particles, they would be able to use World Energy to control the particles, making them fly at high speed. That was why a Transcendents flying speed was so amazing.

Flying in the air was the most relaxing, as both the land and sea offered some obstruction to one's speed.

If someone reached the Realm of Myriad Existence, the fine particles form could even attach to the Universe Flame or water energy, making their flying speed even faster and amazing.

Different forms of Myriad Existences would give different movement attributes!!

For example, mastery in Profound Mystery of Earth using Earth Energy will enable its user to walk through the earth with high speed.

Using it at a water stream like the ocean, river or lake, also enabled them to move at high speed. Mastery of a profound mystery outside the source they were trying to move in resulted in a slower speed.

Someone who mastered the Profound Mystery of Space were even capable of teleportation! But it was very difficult to master 'Profound Mystery of Space'.

When he landed, Xue Ying felt wonderful, “Flying gave me a wonderful feeling; so free and unrestrained.”

“Mn, before, as a mortal, I was unable to see other parts of Elder Lei Zhen Black-Wind Palace. I will look around now, after that, it’s time to go home.” Xue Ying was full of joy.

When Xue Ying landed, the golden ape and golden roc also came closer. At the same time, both of them said, “Congratulations to Master for becoming Transcendent!”

## Book 4: Chapter 14 – I'm home

---

“Haha, it seems that having clothes when flying is quite troublesome.”  
Regardless, Xue Ying still felt quite happy.

Beforehand, whenever he flew, he would keep his clothes in his storage wristband. As for the storage wristband itself, since it was a Transcendent Saint lower-grade treasure left behind by Elder Lei Zhen, it could transform into particulates.

But it would not be appropriate to battle in particulate form.

With no armor protecting his body, no protective treasures, and no weapons for parrying, he would certainly lose out when fighting against an enemy of similar level. Thus, battling in the human form would still be his strongest form.

“When master decides to join a Transcendent organisation, master will certainly be bestowed with the most basic of Transcendent goods,” The golden ape said.

“Mn.” Xue Ying nodded.

Six years had come and gone. All that time, he had lived with these two Transcendent Refiner Organisms. During that time, they had chatted much about various matters regarding Transcendents.

For instance, amongst the many Transcendent organisations – Sorcerer's Palace, Demonic Faction, the Temple of the Earth God, and Bloodshed Tavern... Xue Ying had more or less, a brief understanding about them.

Of course, Monkey and Little Bird were, after all, just refiner organisms and only knew the most superficial information.

“Let's go have a look at the entrance to the Major World.” Xue Ying smiled.

“The entrance to the Major World is right there!” The golden ape and roc pointed the way for him.

Having studied the map, Xue Ying clearly knew, long ago, where the entrance

to the Major World was.

Looking at the ordinary-looking crystal clear walls in the great hall, Xue Ying raised his right hand, bringing forth a blazing faint red-coloured Qi from his palm, easily shrouding and entering that wall. Following that, the wall began transforming into an enormous, quaint-looking door that was about a hundred meters high. A fluctuation ,appeared to be emitted from the door, transferring itself into Xue Ying's mind.

"I, Black Wind."

"On the other side of the door is a Major Transcendent World. Do not enter before achieving the combat power of a Saint." That fluctuating transmission imprinted a map and several annotations into Xue Ying.

The map represented the Major World behind the enormous door.

"Indeed, it matches its reputation as a Major World. There are actually traces of Demigod inheritances." Having understood the annotations on the map, Xue Ying felt fear. Countless of ten thousands years ago, there was a Demigod within the Major World before the master of Black-Wind Deity Palace died! The master of Black-Wind Deity Palace was extremely powerful at that time, causing the other Demigod to be so frightened that he hid himself. As of today, that Demigod would most likely be dead from old age. However, there might be other Demigods born into this world. Such a world was considered to be extremely dangerous. But it would similarly be a treasure trove of such value that could shake Xue Ying's world!

"My combat power right now is too weak. If I were to enter, I'd be sending myself to death." Xue Ying shook his head before deciding to turn away and leave the place.

Within the underground great hall.

There was actually another proper door as an entrance, just that it would require the power of a Transcendent before it could be opened.

"*Hong long long~~~*" Xue Ying's Transcendent Qi penetrated through, starting the operation of some hidden gears, resulting in an enormous door appearing right on the otherwise utterly smooth crystal wall. The enormous door raised

upwards as it revealed behind it azure-coloured stair steps.

“The late master actually swept through this entire area with his senses. The golden ape helplessly said, “Just nearing some slightly important places... would have protectors guarding them. He could not move forward thereafter.”

“What did Ancestor Lei Zhen find after sweeping through the entire area?” Xue Ying asked.

“There were many miscellaneous material goods placed around by the master of Black-Wind Deity Palace. However, already acquiring those items was considered as making a fortune for the late master,” The ape replied.

The layout of this Deity Palace was relatively complex.

Many places were obviously areas where the master of the Deity Palace used for testing purposes. Thus, not even a single precious miscellaneous material item could be found there. It seems likely that these goods were taken away by Elder Lei Zhen when he was alive.”

“There will be no roads further ahead,” The golden ape said.

“Is it because of these two?” Xue Ying pointed ahead of him. Within a spacious corridor, there were two sculptures that looked like lions.

“It is because of those two.” The golden roc actually spoke for once. Its eyes filled with cold calmness, “The two of them have peak Saint combat power. That year, the late master could not even breakthrough this obstacle they created.”

“Peak Saint?” Xue Ying was tongue-tied.

So extravagant.

Refiner organisms were different from humans. Humans would certainly age and die! Yet refiner organisms would never truly age, never die. They could even be passed down to the future generations.

Like Lei Zhen, being the Elder of Sea Deity Palace, a peak Saint expert, he was only able to leave behind two Sky rank refiner organisms. But of course, Lei Zhen hadn't left much behind when he died because he had decided to sell off most of his treasures for the sake of entering closed door cultivation! But for those at the level of Lei Zhen... it would be really hard to even obtain a single refiner organism

with the combat power of a Saint.

“Why would the two peak Saint refiner organisms be placed so freely here within the palace?” Xue Ying thought back to the time when he killed the Black-scaled soldier. That Black-scaled soldier was actually formed by some Black fog and could not be considered to be a refiner organism.

“Our late master said that in the past the Black-Wind Deity Palace master was actually an extremely frightening Demigod Mage. The Deity Palace array that he arranged had not been broken even once by any of the Transcendents!” The golden ape said, “The difficulty of breaking through this array is much harder than sweeping across a Transcendent World. The two refiner organisms you see in front are just merely the tip of an iceberg of the protectors within the entire Black-Wind Deity Palace!”

Beside it, the golden roc continued, “Does master see that? There is the faint marking of an arc over there?”

“I already knew. Ancestor Lei Zhen wrote in his account before.” Xue Ying nodded. There were many places above ground that were marked on the map. Within the surroundings of the corridor, there was indeed a big arc of a circle that was left behind by the master of Black-Wind Deity Palace. It was a mark to warn his assistants not to enter the arc, for they would be attacked the moment they did so.

“Let’s try it out.” Xue Ying took out a spindle-like dart and threw it!

*Sou.*

The dart, shrouded by Flame Qi, turned into a burning meteor as it flew right at one of the lion mutated beast sculptures.

That lion mutated-beast sculpture suddenly opened its eyes, *Xiu! Xiu!* Two scarlet ray shot out from its eyes right at the darts. With a ‘*chi*’, the dart was instantly incinerated into ashes.

Xue Ying looked at the scene dumbfounded.

The lion mutated-beast sculpture gave Xue Ying a cold look before closing its eyes once again, with no living breathe as if it were an ordinary sculpture.



“So fortunate that it is extremely loyal in following the orders given by the Deity Palace master, and that it will not attack any living thing outside the arc.” Xue Ying laughed, “Alright. I’ve taken a look. Monkey, Little Bird, it’s time for us to leave.”

He was merely just trying to understand and investigate...

With his current combat power, forget about trying to seize this Deity Palace, he did not even meet the criteria of entering the Major Transcendent World.

After all...

He had just merely stepped into the rank of Transcendent.

.....

Walking to one of the cracks in the wall within the underground great hall...

“It’s time to go home.” Xue Ying waved his hands, coercing the World energy into bringing both the golden ape and golden roc beside him into his storage wristband. This storage wristband was unable to keep any living beings, but for items like the body of a dead man or refined organisms, they could be safely placed inside.

“Let’s go!”

*Hu.*

Within moments, Xue Ying turned into flame as he flew through the cracks.

Following deeper along the wide cracks, the area became narrower, though Xue Ying’s speed of flying was still kept fast.

As the crack became narrower and narrower, it started converging with some of the existing cracks underground, forming an eventual split-road! If not for this, he was able to just concentrate on flying for a full 500 kilometers straight with just one movement.

It was fortunate that Xue Ying had memorised diligently the map left behind by Lei Zhen. Thus, this fork was unable to make him lose his way anyway whatsoever.

As he flew, there were some areas that were extremely narrow! Regardless,

the flame was able to flow through them.

Roughly about the time it takes to brew a cup of tea.

“*Hu hu hu~~~*” A blazing lava river was seen slowly flowing about. Beside it, there were cracks within the mountain rock that were blocked by magma.

*Xiu.*

A stream of flame flew out from the crack blocked by magma. Above this lava river, in mid-air, the figure of a black-robed young man was seen.

“Lava River!” Xue Ying looked towards the lava river in front of him. At that point of time, delight appeared on his expression, “I’m out!”

Within the time taken to brew a cup of tea, he flew past 500 kilometers of distance before arriving at this lava river.

“Right here is Crow Volcano.”

Following that, with a ‘*Sou*’, Xue Ying turned himself into a stream of water as he flew. Even though his speed was much slower as compared to his flame, it was stealthier.

Within a few breaths of time, a stream of water flew out of a hole within the volcano, before rapidly heading up to the clouds in the high skies.

This volcano was only about 500-1000 kilometers away from Water Rites Town, Snowrock Mountain. It was a relatively famous volcano within the Azure River County, called ‘Crow Volcano’, and a place Xue Ying was extremely familiar with.

.....

Within the night sky, there was a bright and round moon within.

A stream of water flew past quickly amongst the clouds in the high skies. Very quickly, it covered the 500-1000 kilometers of distance.

*Hu.*

The stream of water transformed into a black-robed young man.

This black-robed man slowly descended, passing through the cloud-layer. He overlooked the entire place beneath him, that mountain that he rose up at, and

the extremely familiar castle on top of it.

“I’m back.” A smile broke out on his face.

---

|

## Book 4: Chapter 15 – Reunion

---

Looking down to the area spreading out below him, Xue Ying started feeling really agitated, a sentiment very unlike his usual self.

He could clearly see the main building of Snowrock Castle below him. His parents were not around, and he himself was not there either. Only his little brother and several trusted servants were inhabiting the main building. Currently, only a single room within the main building was still lit. It was the study room which Xue Ying had most often used in the past. This late into the night, and someone was still within the study room. No servants would dare to do that. The person inside had to be his little brother!

*Sou!*

Xue Ying's figure disappeared mid-air, then quietly appeared in the corridor outside the study room.

Standing within the corridor, he looked into the room through a window.

A handsome, striking young man was sitting inside the study room. On the table, a large number of papers containing many spell diagrams were piled up.

Xue Ying stood near the window, peering inside.

“Qing Shi, you’ve become taller and more mature.” Xue Ying smiled. “So late into the night and you are still learning spells. In the past, this brat had never been so hardworking.”

Bending over the table, the handsome young man, who was deep in contemplation, suddenly felt that he was being stared at, and raised his head to look through the window. He saw a figure outside, one which left him stupefied. After rubbing his eyes, he looked once again, eyes wide-open.

*Hu.*

Suddenly, he stood up, rushed towards the door to the study room, and pulled it open to find a black-robed young man in front of him.

“Brother, is that you? Am I hallucinating?” Qing Shi did not dare to believe what he was seeing. Even though all these years he had tried to convince himself that his brother, Dong Bo Xue Ying, would definitely come back... deep inside his heart, he also knew that his brother had over a 90% chance of dying after falling into the Black-Wind Abyss!

“I’ve come back. What? You brat, did you want me to die, is that it?” Xue Ying laughed.

Qing Shi suddenly rushed forward to hug Xue Ying, his tears dampening his clothes.

Xue Ying rubbed Qing Shi’s head, then looked him over. In the past, when rubbing his brother’s head, Qing Shi had been a lot shorter than him. But now, it seemed that they were about the same height.

“Regardless, he has grown up so handsome! He could get by in life by just depending on his good looks if needed,” Xue Ying whispered softly.

“I’ll go call Uncle Zong and Uncle Tong.” Qing Shi let go of Xue Ying before continuing his line of thought, “All these years, Uncle Zong and Uncle Tong have severely missed you, brother!”

“Mn.” Xue Ying nodded lightly. “I’ll go with you.”

.....

Late in the night.

The dining hall of Snowrock Castle’s main building was bustling with activity, even the chief chefs of the castle having been woken up in the middle of night in order to prepare a sumptuous meal. No one was irritated by being up so late, and neither were they impatient to get back to bed. Instead, everyone felt excited. Because, from what they had heard... their Snowrock Castle’s amazing Lord, Dong Bo Xue Ying, was back! Hereafter, the days in Snowrock Castle would certainly be better.

“Send down the orders that all the soldiers and servants of the castle will receive ten times their basic salary this month!” Qing Shi excitedly shouted out in the dining hall.

“Thank you, young master. I’ll pass down the order.” the female servant was really excited.

The table in the dining hall had been set, good wines and dishes displayed on it. But this was not all of it, as more dishes were currently being prepared. The entire Snowrock Castle lit up, more and more soldiers and servants waking from their sleep. Most of them came out of their rooms blearily, met by their comrades’ words, “Second Dog, why are you still in a daze? The Lord has returned! Our Lord has finally returned!”

“What? Our Lord has returned?”

“It’s young master Xue Ying.”

“What!?”

There was a furor amongst the countless soldiers and servants. The amazing Lord of their Snowrock Castle was back? When they also heard that their pay for this month would be ten times more than usual, their joy grew even more!

Xue Ying, Zong Ling, Tong San and Qing Shi were all in the dining hall.

“I’m so excited to see my little brat brother again,” Xue Ying laughed. “Oh, right. What happened? Why are the servants still calling you young master? I’ve been missing for the past six years. You should have taken over the mantle of Lord of the castle by now.”

Having reached Xue Ying’s current level of combat power, being the Lord of a territory could not be considered very important.

“Xue Ying!” Zong Ling’s heart was filled with happiness, “You don’t know, but... ever since you fell into that Black-Wind Abyss, most of the castle’s people had already accepted Qing Shi as the new Lord... But Qing Shi refused. He said that he would keep waiting for you, whether it was for 50 years or for a 100 years. That he would wait until he gave his last breath! And that for as long as he lived, the position of the Lord would always be left vacant.”

“I knew that my brother would definitely come back. See, isn’t he back?” Qing Shi said, absolutely delighted.

“Qing Shi’s behaviour is different now, compared to six years ago. We haven’t

seen you this excited before,” Tong San bellowed.

“Look who’s talking, Uncle Tong! Look at you, the grin on your face is so wide that your lips are about to split!” Qing Shi teased back.

“I’m happy! Today I’m really happy...” Tong San laughed out loud.

Xue Ying laughed lightly at that. He felt the sincere happiness coming from his loved ones. Even though Uncle Tong and Uncle Zong weren’t his blood, they still treated him as a nephew.”

“Oh yes, Xue Ying. How did you manage to come out from the Black-Wind Abyss?” Zong Ling asked.

“As I fell, I borrowed the wings of Xiang Pang Yun’s mutated beast body, due to which I fortunately survived. Thereafter, I spent six years trying to climb up from the valley.” Xue Ying told a story that he had made up long before this. As for the secret hidden path amongst the cracks that he used in order to escape, information about it had to never be leaked out. If that happened, Xue Ying was afraid that some experts would enter and sweep clean that piece of the Major World.

Although Xue Ying was not some wicked fiend, he was also not so selfless that he’d share it with others.

“Spent six years to climb up?” Tong San was shocked.

“Within the depths of the Black-Wind Abyss, there is actually a Transcendent’s cavern palace, surrounded by many guardians. It’s extremely dangerous,” Xue Ying answered simply. Information about the Black-Wind Deity Palace was already well-known amongst all of the Transcendents, and he had no need to keep it a secret. “My combat power is still too weak, so I was unable to go near any of those guardians. I could only try to avoid them! Climbing up from the valley, I had to be careful not to make the slightest movement, lest it would alert the protectors. The moment they became aware of my presence, that would have been the end of me. It is to my fortune that I’ve become a Transcendent, and so I managed to carefully climb out of the place.”

This was the story he had long prepared.

After all, no one but him could confirm the truth. If one did not believe? One

could always descend into the abyss and try!

‘*Transcendence?!*’ Zong Ling, Tong San and Qing Shi’s minds were reeling with this word. They were stupefied!

“Xue Ying, you’ve become a Transcendent?” Zong Ling had been the first person to react.

Xue Ying nodded.

There was no need to hide this piece of information. After all, he would be entering a Transcendent organisation soon, and he would go to the Infernal World soon after.

.....

Water Rites Town, Dragon Mountain Manor.

Even though morning light was already falling in timid rays over the skies, the moon was still hanging high. The entire Water Rites Town was drowned in silence, most people already in deep sleep. Only a few vendors who had taken an early start to the day were preparing for the business day ahead.

At the same time, the Manor Lord of Water Rites Town, Si An, was in a deep slumber.

“Manor Lord, Manor Lord!” The white-haired old man You Tu still had some grit in the edge of his eyes, yet he was agitated to such an extent that his face had turned entirely red. He knocked on the door.

*Creak.*

The door opened.

Manor Lord Si An peeked over the edge of his door, blurry-eyed. He was wearing slippers. Glancing at the person outside his room, he grumbled, “You Tu, why are you shouting so early in the morning? Look, the sun is not even up yet!”

“Big news, big news!” You Tu continued.

“What big news is more important than my sleep? Continue,” Manor Lord Si An replied. Other than past orders regarding Dong Bo Xue Ying, which only had him busy for a few moments, his days had otherwise been quite bland.



“It’s Dong Bo Xue Ying!” You Tu answered. “Dong Bo Xue Ying has returned!”

Manor Lord Si blinked a few times, then, wide-eyed, said, “Dong Bo Xue Ying has returned? Is the news reliable?”

“Yes, it’s most certainly the ironclad truth! The entire Snowrock Castle has been buzzing with activity the entire night! Every single soldier and servant will receive ten times their usual salary this month!” You Tu said. “Many servants even saw Dong Bo Xue Ying eating and chatting with his little brother in the dining hall, talking throughout the night!”

“Oh my god! He survived even the fall into the Black-Wind Abyss?” Manor Lord Si An could not dare to believe it. “This, this...”

He had felt such heartache in the past.

Knowing that such a brilliant individual had actually fallen from the sky all of a sudden... It was such a pity.

But six years later, Dong Bo Xue Ying had actually returned!

“Should I pass on the news to the higher-ups?” You Tu reminded him.

“Yes, pass on the news.” Manor Lord Si An was instantly awake. He immediately ordered, “I’ll go pass on the news right now. Prepare a carriage for me! I’ll immediately set off for Snowrock Castle! Find someone to go and open the city gates in advance!” It being too early, city gates had yet to be opened.

“Yes,” You Tu acknowledged.

The Dragon Mountain Manor had their own special ways of transmitting messages.

Manor Lord Si An promptly passed on the news to the higher-ups. He did not care much about how much furor this news would bring, to the extent of not even bothering to eat a proper meal; he ate a few mouthfuls, then, along with a few servants, he immediately set out for Snowrock Castle!

## Book 4: Chapter 16 – Passing on the Message

---

Early in the morning, the air was fresh and crisp.

Xue Ying exited the castle through the main entrance, and the soldiers guarding the door excitedly puffed up their chests, greeting, “My Lord!”

Xue Ying recognized several familiar faces among them.

He wandered without purpose towards the peak of Snowrock Mountain, admiring the beautiful scenery below the rocky cliffs, with its many villages and the rushing Azure River, like a band of white silk spread across the distance.

Xue Ying took a deep breath, relishing the fresh, familiar air. It was so much cleaner than the one he’d had to breathe underground, in the great hall of Black-Wind Deity Palace. He could smell the fragrance of flowers and the earthy scent of the ground.

“My Lord,” said a voice.

Xue Ying turned around to look at the Great Mage Bai Yuan Zhi, who was coming his way.

“Great Mage.” Xue Ying still held deep respect for his little brother’s teacher.

“In front of My Lord, I do not dare to be called Great Mage,” Bai Yuan Zhi hurriedly said. Although he did not know of Xue Ying’s recent breakthrough into Transcendence, the fact that he had been able to kill Xiang Pang Yun... told him enough to know that his status was lower when compared to Dong Bo Xue Ying. “My Lord, if you would truly think highly of this old decrepit, then it is enough to call me simply Mage Bai Yuan Zhi.”

Xue Ying nodded mildly.

“Actually, I already knew that My Lord had returned last night, it’s just that I wouldn’t dare to disturb you at such a late hour.” Bai Yuan Zhi laughed, saying, “Congratulations My Lord, for coming back alive from the Black-Wind Abyss! That Black-Wind Abyss is an extremely dangerous place according to the records written many ages ago. It’s said that not even a single Legend ranker has ever

come back out alive, My Lord possibly being the very first to do this!”

“Really.” Xue Ying did not say much.

He was a Transcendent as of now. Escaping from that place with merely the power of a Legend ranked expert would be much too difficult, as he had personally experienced.

“Oh yes, what happened with Ji Rong and You Yue?” Xue Ying asked. Even though he had chatted with his little brother for a very long time the previous night, he had not asked him about Ji Rong. After all, she was his ex.

“I see that My Lord hasn’t been informed, as you’ve just came back after all.” Bai Yuan Zhi sighed, “That Ji Rong is now unexpectedly a follower of the Demonic God cult. It was only after a thorough investigation led by Manor Lord Si An that I find out about it.”

“Cult of the Demonic God?” Xue Ying nodded. The Dragon Mountain Manor’s investigation skills were indeed very proficient.

“As for Kong You Yue... Approximately half a year after My Lord fell into the Black-Wind Abyss, she went along with mage Si Chen towards the Azure River County,” Mage Bai Yuan Zhi continued, taking notice of Xue Ying’s expression. He was, after all, an aged and wise person, and had long ago known of the complicated relationship between Kong You Yue, Si Chen and Dong Bo Xue Ying.

Xue Ying laughed, “So shrewd.”

To him right now, he treated such matters quite aloofly and did not hold on to much hatred for Kong You Yue, just that he felt that this girl was really opportunistic in her heart. She should have entered the Si Clan by now.

*Clatter! Clatter! Clatter!*

The grounded trembled mildly. Xue Ying turned his head towards the source of the sound, finding at the distant path on the hill, a group of riders riding rapidly towards him. As for the person leading the group, it was none other than Manor Lord Si An.

“It’s Manor Lord Si An.” Bai Yuan Zhi said, “So early and he has already reached here. It seems Manor Lord Si An departed from Water Rites Town

before the sky was even bright. He must have some urgent matters. I'll be on my way then." Having said that, Bai Yuan Zhi smiled as he retreated.

From the distance, Manor Lord Si An could see Dong Bo Xue Ying standing at the fringes of the mountain peak. Thus, he rode on the horse without slowing down, heading straight towards Xue Ying.

*"Lu lu lu~~~"*

The horses' hooves were brought upwards as the horses stopped.

Manor Lord Si An came down with a leap, leaving his horse behind recklessly for his men to look after.

"Lord Dong Bo." Si An had a joyful expression, "Heard that you have come back. Initially, I still held onto some doubts, but this is really such a miracle, a miracle! I've already brought the news upwards and I believe that not long afterwards, there will be some Transcendents coming to invite Lord Dong Bo to join their Transcendent power!"

For those who were ranked top 3000 within the Dragon Mountain Book and those who were worthy of being cultivated would usually attract several Transcendent powers interested in cultivating them.

Despite the special treatment, those who were able to step into Transcendence were still only a minority of people.

Like Si Liang Hong, Xiang Pang Yun and many others, despite joining some Transcendent powers before in the past, they were still unable to step into Transcendence.

"Mn?" Xue Ying frowned, "I want to take a trip to Eastfield Province to bring back my parents! You said that there would be Transcendents coming, what is their estimated time of arrival?"

"Lord Dong Bo, please do not! It would be better for you to remain here at Snowrock Castle. My Dragon Mountain Manor's method of conveying messages is extremely fast. I believe that in about one or two days, there should be Transcendents coming." Si An said. What a joke it would be if Transcendent experts were to be lead here in a wild goose chase!

Xue Ying mildly nodded, “In one or two days time? That’s enough time. I’ll be heading out later towards Eastfield province, Bellfeather County! Before the skies darken, I’ll definitely be back.”

“You... You...” Si An was startled, “You’ll be back before dark?”

That was two different provinces.

If he were to follow the path and walk on it, with the roads curving here and there, it would be many ten thousands kilometers long! To say that he would be back before dark?

“From here to Eastfield Province, Bellfeather County, the distance in flying there would just be about 40,000 kilometers long.” Xue Ying said.

“Going there and back should be a total of 80,000 kilometers. Even with a top-notch refiner ship, flying at its max speed, that would be 2500 kilometers per hour! Twelve hours in a day... would only allow one to fly to 30,000 kilometers. There’s still quite a distance to cover.” Manor Lord Si An was still quite confused.

“No. I’m saying, I’ll be flying there myself.” Xue Ying smiled.

Manor Lord Si An was startled. In his eyes, an expression of doubt formed as he looked towards Xue Ying, “Lord Dong Bo, you’ve already...”

*“Hong!”*

On the surface of Xue Ying’s body, a layer of flame-like Qi appeared. That unseen pressure caused Manor Lord Si An difficulties in breathing.

Following that, Xue Ying began absorbing the Qi on the surface.

“Do you believe now?” Xue Ying looked at him.

“I believe.” In his mind, Manor Lord Si An was still in a daze. Dong Bo Xue Ying was just 28 years old and he had already become a Transcendent? Such a monster... for the past thousand years, only the Eternal Wind Knight ‘Qiu Chi Bai’ was comparable! Who was Qiu Chi Bai? That was the number one expert of the entire Tranquil Sun province. Every single power was very hopeful in Qiu Chi Bai becoming the number one expert under the heavens.

For example, some of the protectors within Black-Wind Deity Palace had high hopes for Qiu Chi Bai, believing that he had hopes of breaking through the

arrays.

“Territory lord Dong Bo, Lord Dong Bo.” Manor Lord Si An was quite nervous. As the most basic director of the Dragon Mountain Manor in such an isolated place, what would his status be when faced with a Transcendent? If it was the Si Clan or the Mo Yang Clan, they still threaten him with their power. But those clans would still shudder in front of a true Transcendent.

From this, one could see how large the difference in their status was.

“I’ve known you since I was 15.” Xue Ying smiled, “You don’t have to be that modest.”

“Yes. Yes.” Manor Lord Si An was flustering. That was because within the area he was governing, there actually appeared a Transcendent. Such matters never happened for countless of basic directors in the entire world. That was because most Legend rankers would have entered a Transcendent power long before that! Why would a Transcendent actually appear so suddenly that required them to report to the Dragon Mountain Manor?

“I’ll report this matter right at this moment. This matter is really too big.” Manor Lord Si An quipped, “Lord Dong Bo, I believe that the six big Transcendent organisations, such as the Demonic Faction and Sorcerer’s Palace, will soon be sending some representatives over.”

Having said that, Manor Lord Si An flipped over his hand. Within it, a squarish crystal tablet appeared. Manor Lord Si An immediately carved a few words onto the crystal tablet.

Xue Ying attentively watched this scene.

This was the most low-end message transmission refiner tool, and would most likely be able to transmit the news to the Dragon Mountain Manor in Azure River County! For Transcendents... the transmission crystal tablet they used would enable one to pour one’s consciousness within as a form of message transmission. Even the possible area that the message could be transmitted would cover almost every place under the heavens.

“The news has been transmitted!” Manor Lord Si An’s fingers were still somewhat shaking as he pressed on the transfer button. Thereafter, he raised

his head towards Xue Ying.

“Sorry to trouble you.” Xue Ying said.

“This is my job.” Manor Lord Si An grinned, “And it is my honor. Lord Dong Bo, your matter is really too important. I believe this will certainly be transmitted to the higher-ups amongst the Transcendent organisations! I’m afraid that there will be some delay. It should take about one or two days before the Bloodshed Tavern and Temple of Earth God arrive. As for other organisations, you will have to wait a little longer. Because of the fact that you are a new Transcendent, I’m afraid that the number of Transcendent organisations coming to invite you will be huge.”

Xue Ying lightly nodded.

This was within the parameters of the predictions he had made long ago. Having chatted with Monkey and Little Bird for such a long time, he understood more or less about matters regarding the Transcendents’ organisations.

This was why he decided to take the initiative in leaking out the news of him Transcending to Manor Lord Si An and letting him pass on the message! That would allow more organisations to come and invite him themselves. After all, on the road of cultivation... external resources would still be quite important. Only when there was more competition would he be able to make a better decision in choosing a Transcendent organisation.

“I’ll first take a trip to Eastfield province to visit the Mo Yang Clan. After that, I’ll come back to wait for the various Transcendents.” Having finished his sentence, with a ‘sou’, he transformed into a stream of flame, rushing up to into the skies. Within moments, he disappeared from the vision of Manor Lord Si An.

Manor Lord Si An was still in a daze as he looked upwards. Murmuring to himself, “A Transcendent actually appeared in our Water Rites Town?”

.....

*Hu.*

Among the clouds, a meteor-like streamer flew at top speed. He had left early in the morning. Just two hours later, before it was even noon, Dong Bo Xue Ying had reached the easternmost area that was closest to the sea, Bellfeather

County of Eastfield province, Thunder Tide Cliff.

“Mother.” The flames in mid-air began agglomerating into a black-robed teenager. He looked downwards.

Borrowing the fluctuations brought by the World Energy...

Xue Ying found out where his mother was being kept.



## Book 4: Chapter 17 – Meeting between Mother and Son

---

Xue Ying's face changed after spreading his senses.

*Shua!*

His figure quickly arrived at the thick, heavy door of a cavern located in the middle of Thunder Tide Shore. Xue Ying grabbed the heavy door's lock, his hands trembling slightly.

*Chi...* a Legend ranker would barely be able to destroy this lock, but Xue Ying easily crushed it into fine powder with his bare hands.

*Clang...* Xue Ying gently opened the door.

Inside the damp and gloomy cavern there was a white-haired, purple-robed figure, quietly sitting in the corner.

Because the cavern was located beside the ocean, the air was very high in humidity. At first, Mo Yang Yu had used her magic to dispel the humidity, but now the condition inside was terrible.

*Hong long long...* the seawater outside seemed to rumble non-stop.

Xue Ying slowly walked closer, and silently sat beside that figure.

Looking at the purple-robed woman in front of him... Xue Ying's heart was pounding.

When he had been small, his mother was beautiful and graceful.

But the woman in front of him... her hair was white and messy, her complexion was dull, the purple robe she wore was also dirty, and there was no hint of magic fluctuation from her body... she had changed into an ordinary mortal.

Xue Ying's eyes silently became moist.

He stretched his hand, gently grasping hers. His mother's hand was rough.

"Mother," Xue Ying softly said.

This white-haired, purple-robed woman turned her head around. When she saw the black-robed youngster in front of her, she still hesitated slightly. Because... the year when the couple was arrested, Xue Ying had been only eight years old!

“I am Xue Ying! Your son, Dong Bo Xue Ying!” His voice trembled slightly.

“Xue Ying?” Mo Yang Yu lightly shook her head.

“I’m really Xue Ying. Look! Here, on my face! There are two small birthmarks.” Xue Ying pointed under his eyes. The birthmarks were really light and small. Usually, people wouldn’t notice them. Only after careful scrutiny would they be noticed.

Mo Yang Yu’s eyes look spirited. She carefully studied Xue Ying’s face.

Eyes, nose, ears...

A mother would always know her child. The eight-year-old Xue Ying truly resembled the Xue Ying in front of her. And, after a careful look, in some parts, Xue Ying even slightly resembled his father, Dong Bo Lie.

When Mo Yang Yu’s trembling hand touched her son’s head, her eyes become red and tears flowed down her cheeks.

“Xue Ying, it’s really you? Really you, you’re not dead?!” Mo Yang Yu was excited.

“I’m not dead. I, your son, fell into the Black-Wind Abyss, but I truly got out alive!” Xue Ying was also crying. Words couldn’t express the mother and son’s excitement.

At this moment——

A ferocious guard, suspicious, came to Mo Yang Yu’s cavern door, muttering to himself, “The mage said that Mo Yang Yu’s prison door has been opened? But it isn’t time for the food to be delivered yet, and also, there’s no report of anyone coming to see this crazy woman. This crazy woman obsessively studies magic, and ignores her elder brother, Mo Yang Chen. Who would actually come to see her?”

He quickly arrived at the cavern’s entrance.

The thick, heavy door was really open. The guard looked inside and saw a white-haired, purple-robed woman and a black-clothed youth sitting together.

“Brat, who are you? Who allowed you in here?!” shouted the guard.

Xue Ying had been talking to his mother. Moreover, he had already become furious when seeing his mother’s poor condition. Upon hearing the noisy guard, he turned his head, a cold, murderous look visible in his eyes.

*Hong— —*

Unintentionally, his willpower fluctuated for a moment.

When Xue Ying had comprehended One with the World, his spirit had also obtained a kind of nourishment. It further improved after his comprehension of the Realm of Myriad Existences. But the most significant improvement had occurred when he had become a Transcendent; aside from body transcension, his spirit had also undergone a qualitative change. The time when Xue Ying had comprehended the state of One with the World, his gaze had become the equivalent of a thousand stares.

Xue Ying’s gaze now contained a considerable amount of pressure.

Once someone stepped into the way of the Transcendent, their whole being would evolve and transform into an entirely different level of existence. The soul was the one part that changed the most, and in the end, could even become God-like!

“Ah!” the guard’s vision blurred, his ears ringing, his entire soul trembling, while his body weakly tumbled down and directly fell from Thunder Tide Shore onto the rocks below. Fortunately, his body was strong enough, so he only coughed a bit of blood before tumbling down into the sea. The impact woke him up and he immediately dashed out as if his life depended on it.

.....

With a glance, Xue Ying watched the guard fall down and run out of sight, then he turned back to continue looking at his mother. Xue Ying held his mother’s hand, saying, “Mother, I will wash your hair.”

“Mn, very well. It’s been dirty for so long, anyway.” Mo Yang Yu continued to

look at her child, as if she couldn't fully believe he was truly right in front of her

With a gentle wave of Xue Ying's hand, a golden basin appeared. The golden basin was one of the miscellaneous items inside Xiang Pang Yun's storage ring.

Water appeared out of nowhere, quickly filling the basin.

Right now, only Xue Ying existed in Mo Yang Yu's eyes. She did not pay attention to the mystery of where the water had come from. She simply lowered her head, letting Xue Ying wash her dirty hair... Xue Ying washed carefully, water surrounding his fingers as he twined the filth from his mother's hair. In a short while, Mo Yang Yu's hair had become clean.

*Hu~* World Energy circled around the cavern, making it look brand new. The purple robe that Mo Yang Yu wore was a refiner item. With a light vibration of the World Energy, the filth, dust and stains on the robe completely disappeared.

"Mother. Come, eat something."

Some pastries and fruit appeared on the table, along with a bottle of the Stone of Oceanic World's spiritual liquid.

Xue Ying gave the spiritual liquid to his mother.

"Try it," happily offered Xue Ying.

"Mn." Mo Yang Yu smiled, receiving the cup, and slowly took a sip. After she drank it, her dull skin started glowing, and her eyes started to sparkle. This Stone of Oceanic World was a treasured core of a Minor World, it could nourish a Trancendent's soul. Its effect on the mortals was even more magical.

"What's this? The injury from when my magic went rampant has healed a little!" his mother exclaimed in surprise.

"It is a spirit liquid. Drink some more since it's good for you, mother. Just drink it freely." Xue Ying then asked, "Mother, your magic went rampant? How come? Before, I heard you'd already had a breakthrough into Meteor rank, how could your magic have gone rampant?"

Rationally, it was relatively safe for a mage to cultivate until one became a Legend ranker.

It was very rare for their magic to go rampant.

Mo Yang Yu slightly smiled, “When I heard about your death, I was full of grief and anger, so I wanted to quickly become stronger, to slaughter my way out. But my heart was too chaotic, too impatient to breakthrough, and become a Silver Moon ranker. When I finally had a breakthrough, the spell matrices broke, and my magic power collapsed, resulting in an injury to my soul.”

Xue Ying gently held his mother’s hand, comforting her.

.....

The poor guard who had escaped from the sea had already arrived at the campsite near the forbidden area. He yelled, “Big news! Big news!”

---

|

## Book 4: Chapter 18 – Who Exactly is He?

---

Thunder Tide Shore was a notorious prison for many outlaws. As such, there would be a large number of guards, as well as mages operating the arrays that controlled the entire forbidden area.

“Quick, quick, quick! Something’s happened at Mo Yang Yu’s ward! That black-robed teenager is too powerful! With just a gaze, my eyes became blurry and my ears boomed with loud sounds, making me fall from the Thunder Tide Shore and into the sea... It’s too terrifying!” the guard frantically recounted his experience. Soon, a large number of guards started to gather. The commander of the Thunder Tide Shore’s guards was a Silver Moon Knight.

“Made you fall with only a gaze?” The Silver Moon Knight, who was carrying a weapon box, frowned. “Hmm... unless it’s a mage who specialises in soul techniques?”

“First Squad, Second Squad, Third Squad, gather and prepare to leave now!” the Silver Moon Knight immediately gave his orders, “Get the arrays ready for an attack at any moment.”

“Yes.”

“Yes.”

All the guards acknowledged his orders.

The arrays within the forbidden place were set into motion. Around the Thunder Tide Shore, the temperature was dropping viciously, frost forming on the surface.

“Go away!” a sound thundered amidst the entire heaven and earth.

A turbulent wave of water appeared out of thin air, like a huge slithering snake. This gigantic wave, several hundred meters in height, swept down on the guards. The guards panicked and took out whatever they could, be it weapons or shields. Standing in front of them, the Silver Moon Knight’s expression changed. A shield appeared on his hands out of thin air.

*“Hong long~~~”* The wave swept down, making the protectors fly and roll all over the place. The Silver Moon Knight was the only one who could stand firm on the ground. His expression mildly changed, “Water-attributed spell? Such a powerful force... I’m afraid it should be a Silver Moon Mage!”

“Who, who dares to infringe on Mo Yang Clan’s forbidden prison!” The Silver Moon Knight loudly shouted out, “State your name!”

Suddenly, a stream of flame Qi rushed up to the skies.

The faint flame Qi looked as if it was ordinary, yet its presence made the Silver Moon Knight feel an unseen terror. Every strand of Qi felt like the sunlight blazing the heaven and earth. This Flame Qi high up in the skies immediately turned into a gigantic palm.

*Hu!*

The gigantic palm immediately smacked at the Silver Moon Knight.

“No no, this is not a mage. That previous wave of water is actually operated from the Realm of Myriad Existences!” The Silver Moon Knight was finally enlightened. He wanted to dodge, yet that gigantic flame palm was too fast. He could only defend himself with his shield.

*Peng*, the gigantic palm descended. With a smack, it brought the Silver Moon Knight down, forming a sunken cavity on the mountain’s surface, the sound of many breaking bones echoing. The Silver Moon Knight spouted blood.

“Thank you for your mercy, sir.” The Silver Moon Knight felt terrified. He understood that his opponent had given him mercy, else that single strike would have been enough to smack him into meat paste.

Only then did the gigantic flame palm slowly retreat.

The distant, still rolling guards and the Silver Moon Knight were looking at the floating gigantic flame palm with terror! That flame palm then transformed itself into large amounts of Qi, going back to its source within Mo Yang Yu’s cave of the Thunder Tide Shore.

“Captain.” At once, some of the guards came to help up the fallen Silver Moon Knight.

“Everyone, don’t make any excessive moves. We mustn’t disturb that lord.”  
The Silver Moon Knight immediately called back his orders.

“Yes.”

All the guards automatically acknowledged it. Why would any of them be in the mood to make a joke? If they were to truly fight, they would be instantly annihilated. Previously, that wave of water was actually going easy on them. Other than the Silver Moon Knight, all the weaker guards, including Meteor-ranked knights, had flown around uncontrollably. Yet, none of them were dead. They’d been given mercy.

“This palm did not look like a spell. It’s more like Qi.” The Silver Moon Knight clutched his chest. His eyes betrayed the anxiety and panic he was feeling. “Despite Qi leaving his body, he could form such a force? Unless... Could he be a Transcendent?”

.....

Within the cavern.

Xue Ying was accompanying his mother, chatting with her while she ate some pastries and drank the spiritual liquid transmuted by the Stone of Oceanic World.

He did not want anybody to come and disturb them. Thus, he had decided to use the water from afar to slap away those guards. Were he to use fire... it was likely that the guards would die. Even though deep inside Xue Ying’s heart was filled with fury, ultimately, he was not a crazed fellow and knew that ‘injustice has a beginning, and debt has an origin’. As for those low-leveled guards, they had only taken up the job to fill their bowls with rice.

It was only because the Silver Moon Knight commander had provoked him that Xue Ying decided to give him a lesson.

“Xue Ying.” Mo Yang Yu looked at the faint red misty Qi from outside the cavern entering into Xue Ying’s body.

“Your Qi can already be brought back into your body and you can operate it so freely. Could it be...” Mo Yang Yu did not dare to believe it.



“Mn. I’ve just entered Transcendence not long ago,” Xue Ying said. “I had fallen into the Black-Wind Abyss. It was only because of my breakthrough to the Transcendent rank that I could fortunately escape from there.”

Mo Yang Yu had mixed feelings of doubts and pride.

Her own son...

Her eight-year-old boy from back then had already become a reputed legendary Transcendent 20 years later!

“It feels like a dream. I cannot believe this!” Mo Yang Yu laughed.

“Mother, please eat some more.” Xue Ying arrived with a couple of pastries. He reckoned that his parents had not had a good life these past few years.

“Mn.”

Mo Yang Yu was feeling relatively good. Eating the pastries with big bites and drinking the spiritual liquid, her skin transformed at a speed visible to the naked eye. All the wrinkles had started fading away, yet Xue Ying still poured cup after cup for his mother, until a whole pot was emptied. Regardless, with a command from his mind, he refilled the pot with even more spiritual liquid. His mother had suffered from her magic power insurgence all these years, injuring her soul. Furthermore, she had been worrying in the years thereafter. Adding to that a mage’s predisposition to a weak physique, and having no magic power for cultivation, she had definitely fallen to rock-bottom.

Usually, any Transcendent-ranked Saint expert would not dare to treat the spiritual liquid transmuted by the Stone of Oceanic World as a normal sustenance that could be freely consumed! This was the greatest acquisition obtained by Elder Lei Zhen in his entire life. Before he died, he had laid down an array, preferring to destroy it rather than give it to the beast race.

In any normal occasion, just drinking a bit was enough to satiate one’s hunger.

A pot of spiritual liquid was enough for ten days’ use! Its worth amounted to more than a million gold pieces! But of course, Transcendents would not be willing to use gold for trade. Having reached their level, the mortal world’s gold pieces did not have much worth in their eyes since they had enough for what they needed. What they treasured more was Transcendents’ treasures!

“Mother, how did you know that something happened to me in the past?” Xue Ying asked.

“It was Mo Yang Cheng Bai who sent someone to tell me about it,” Mo Yang Yu replied. “He did it on purpose to anger me. But if it weren’t for him, I’m afraid I wouldn’t have known anything about what had happened even after a long time.”

“Again that Mo Yang Cheng Bai!” Xue Ying’s eyes were filled with killing intent.

*‘He must die!’*

However, Xue Ying was able to quickly control his feelings and continued accompanying his mother, chatting and letting her eat. He wanted her to be happy.

“Mn, I’m actually full.” Mo Yang Yu laughed, “Unknowingly, it seems like I’ve drank a lot. The injuries on my soul have fully recovered, and I feel like I can’t drink any more.”

“Once you are full, there’s no need to drink any longer.” Xue Ying laughed. “This Transcendent spiritual liquid is enough to satiate the hunger of ordinary people for an entire day. Mother, it’s because of the injuries on your body, along with the deficit brought by all these years, that you could absorb and digest the liquid continuously. After your body is fully recovered, you would naturally be full.”

In front of his eyes, Mo Yang Yu’s snow-white hair had gained some strands of black.

The appearance and color of her skin had fully recovered to the state it had been six years ago. His mother’s mind seemed even stronger than before.

“So mysterious,” Mo Yang Yu said.

“This spiritual liquid is quite important. Mother, you must tell no one about it,” Xue Ying continued. That Stone of Oceanic World was enough for him to use for more than a thousand years. But of course, he would still leave some for his parents, Qing Shi, Uncle Zong, and Uncle Tong. They were all his loved ones! However, he would still want this to be kept a secret. He was at ease with the rest apart for Qing Shi. However, having encountered such a huge blow that

time, he was bound to be more mature now.

After spiritual liquid entered the body, the Dantian Qi sea and the spirit would be nourished holistically, even for Transcendents. Needless to say, for mortals, it would be of an even greater help! Ultimately, his parents could walk far in this road of cultivation, and the liquid could help them live longer.

“Rest assured. I understand,” Mo Yang Yu laughed.

“Then let’s go pick up father.” Xue Ying stood.

“Dong Bo...” Mo Yang Yu’s heart throbbed. Her husband and she had been separated for twenty years already.

Twenty years... It was far too long.

Holding onto her mother’s hand, he walked to the entrance of the cavern.

The Transcendent Qi permeated through Xue Ying’s skin, surrounding and acting as a layer of protection for his mother.

Following that, Xue Ying took his mother up into the skies.

“Thunder Tide Shore.” Flying high up in the skies, Mo Yang Yu looked down to the entire Thunder Tide Shore beneath her, and its dumbfounded group of guards. This had been her prison for the past twenty years.

“Father is at East Fragrant Lake Refiner workshop. Let’s go!” Xue Ying said.

*Sou!*

He turned into a stream of flame light, breaking across the sky.

“So fast!”

The pale-faced Silver Moon Knight commander, who had been holding onto his wounds, looked at this in shock, “He’s flying in the skies, he’s a Transcendent!”

“The legendary ability to fly in the skies? Transcendent?” All the guards were startled. Within the mortal world, many people had heard of Transcendents... but those who had actually seen one were few and far between.

“Who is that black-robed teenager?” Mo Yang Yu has been confined all this time, so how could she possibly know a Transcendent? Unless it was someone she knew twenty years ago?” The Silver Moon Knight held onto some

uncertainty, “In front of a Transcendent, what would the Mo Yang Clan be? But why would he save her only after twenty years? Was it a Transcendent who has only recently achieved a breakthrough?”

The Silver Moon Knight was trying to speculate and clear his doubts.

Suddenly, he thought of someone—

An extremely amazing, peerless genius that appeared only once every hundred years in the entire Dragon Mountain Empire, and the person who had died in a fight, together with Xiang Pang Yun!

“Unless that’s Dong Bo Xue Ying? Could he have escaped after surviving the fall into the Black-Wind Abyss?” The Silver Moon Knight was still uncertain and shocked. The more he pondered, the more he felt that within Mo Yang Yu’s circle of people, it was only that monster Dong Bo Xue Ying who had the abilities to cross into Transcendence.

“Regardless of who it is, he must have an extraordinary relation with Mo Yang Yu! It could even be said that this Transcendent will be angry at the entire Mo Yang Clan.” The Silver Moon Knight trembled in fear as he continued along this line of thought. A Transcendent’s fury? It was not something the entire Mo Yang Clan could withstand!

“I must pass down the message, I must warn the clan at the quickest speed.” The Silver Moon Knight did not dare delay even the slightest bit, immediately sending someone to pass on the message.

If an expert of Azure River County had been there, they would certainly have recognised Dong Bo Xue Ying.

However, this was Eastfield province, Bellfeather County, where nobody recognised Xue Ying!

.....

*Hong—*

Xue Ying held onto his mother’s hand as the flame enveloped around the two of them. They were flying at top speed.

“So fast. So this is a Transcendent’s ability to fly?” Mo Yang Yu looked around

her in shock. The surroundings seemed surreal, with just only the scenes farther ahead being clearer by a bit.

“This speed we are travelling is half my fastest.” Xue Ying further explained, “When Transcendents take someone with them in flight, their speed would slowed down by a lot.”

Transforming into fine particles and attaching them to a stream of flame, his speed could then soar to an extreme. Only during cases of more important emergencies would he utilise it, or in cases when he was required to tunnel through some narrow areas.

Flying whist remaining in the form of a human only gave him 70-80% of his maximum speed.

If he were to bring along another person with him... his speed would be even slower! Xue Ying could only maintain half his fastest speed at most.

“We’ve reached our destination. Ahead of us is the East Fragrant Lake.” Xue Ying was takijng his mother along by her hand, slowing down as he descended past the cloud layer. He could see the sparkling East Fragrant Lake shining below him.

“That was so fast. We’ve only spoken a few sentences.” Mo Yang Yun was amazed past her limits. She had grown up in Bellfeather County, and was familiar with the distance between East Fragrant Lake and Thunder Tide Shore.

Enveloping the entire East Fragrant Lake’s refiner workshop with World Energy, Xue Ying easily found out where his father was. His expression softened after seeing that his father’s condition was much better than his mother’s.

## Book 4: Chapter 18 – Fear and Horror!

---

The East Fragrant Lake refiner workshop looked like a humongous fortress. Among them, were outlaws and ordinary men wanting to earn some money.

Within the Mage Tower, in the middle of the workshop, Great Mage Xu Guang Qing had the highest position. Superseding him in the hierarchy were his pupils and then the servants. Dong Bo Lie, who was one of them, was currently doing some strength-related work for survival.

“Who!”

The defensive alertness of this refiner workshop was even higher than the Thunder Tide Shore. Other than Great Mage Xu Guang Qing, there were also two other Silver Moon mages operating the arrays. There were even several Silver Moon knights, one of them wearing a unique refiner armour... that was able to display Legend ranking combat power! Under the coordination of the arrays and the many arrangements of the Mage Tower, even if a Legend expert who comprehended One with the World intruded, he could only escape awkwardly thereafter.

“Hu.” Xue Ying held onto his mother’s hand, flying above the refiner workshop. He did not put those protectors in his eyes.

*Hua hua hua...*

Many knights had already rushed to the enormous roof of the refiner workshop. Looking at the two figures in mid-air, they felt nervousness and their hearts quiver.

The two of them were flying?

“Hmph.” Xue Ying’s swept across the area coldly with his gaze.

A wave-like substance of spirit undulation rushed outwards toward the group of knights and swept across them! Under the undulation, these knights’ heard a booming sound in their ears, and their eyes became blurry. They felt terror deep inside their hearts, causing them to lose control of their body as all of them fell

onto the ground, including that Silver Moon Knight who was wearing the unique refiner armour.

“Mother, father is right there.” Xue Ying brought her along to the Mage Tower. One of the windows immediately melted suddenly and soundlessly, forming into a door that Xue Ying and Mo Yang Yu walked into.

“This, this is...”

“A Transcendent?”

Regardless of whether it was the two Silver Moon mages controlling the arrays or the Great Mage Xu Guang Qing in that Mage Tower, with the heavy security of the Refiner workshop, they were able to see the open intrusion of Dong Bo Xue Ying and an incredible occurrence... just a simple gaze and everyone, including that Silver Moon Knight, had fallen onto the ground?

Even if it were a Legend mage who specialized in the soul, it would still require some time in order to display such a spell. Furthermore, surrounding the two of the intruders was a layer of protective Qi. That Transcendent Qi was like the rays from the sun, it was too bright and eye-catching.

“That white-haired woman, if I’m not wrong, should be Mo Yang Yu?” A mage opened his mouth among the many who were too nervous to dare make any movements.

.....

Dong Bo Lie was wearing a tattered commoner clothing and sat in his little house resting. His entire body was covered in sweat. With his Heaven-grade Knight physique and Qi, it was enough to allow him to keep a strong and powerful body. However, these twenty years of labour had been very taxing, especially for the past six years. First, he heard of Xue Ying’s death, followed by his wife’s, Mo Yang Yu, sudden magic power surge that turned her into a crazed wreck...

Yet he still persisted. Dong Bo Lie did not know of how he was able to do so, how he could continue for so long. Maybe it was because he believed that surviving gave him that hope of a miracle.

“Ka.” The door suddenly opened.

“Come, come. We’ve come.” Dong Bo Lie was so startled that he jumped out. Suddenly, he became stumped by what he saw outside the door.

There stood a snow-white haired, purple-robed woman and a black-robed teenager.

“Ah, Ah Yu...” Dong Bo Lie did not dare believe that in front of his eyes, this purple-robed woman was still as beautiful as before, just that her hair was white. She did not turn out to be like the rumors said – a ‘crazed’ wreck.

“Dong Bo.” Mo Yang Yu looked at the person in front, the one who fought on despite the many life and death situations, and a brave hero that had transformed into such a spiritless and awkward person. Her eyes became red as she walked up to grab hold of her husband’s hands.

Xue Ying stood by the side, watching them silently.

He watched as his father and mother talked, he watched as they hugged each other and cried together.

“Dong Bo, I’ve not tell you this. Look who came. That is our son, Xue Ying.” Mo Yang Yun pulled Xue Ying over.

“Xue Ying?” Dong Bo Lie had long felt that the black-robed teenager in front felt familiar, with an unspoken closeness to him. After hearing what his wife had said, he still had some doubts, “But I thought Xue Ying had already...?”

“Xue Ying survived after falling into the Black-Wind Abyss. He had crossed over to Transcendence now, allowing him to escape from that place.” Mo Yang Yu said, “Our son is already a Transcendent.”

Dong Bo Lie looked at his son.

His eyes, his nose, his ears... he could still remember how his son looked when he was eight. Thus, he was convinced that this person in front of him was really his son, Dong Bo Xue Ying. Even if there was someone who looked similar to him, it was only an overall similarity. The minute differences would still be there, unlike the uncanny resemblance of this black teenager to his son.

“Father, mother, from today onwards, you will not have to endure any more hardship.” Xue Ying said, “Nobody will ever have the right to make you bear it



any longer.”

Dong Bo Lie suddenly felt proud.

“I, Dong Bo Lie, have a Transcendent for a son. Hahaha...” Dong Bo Lie was so excited as he laughed, “I knew this day would eventually come! Hahaha...”

“Good brat.” Dong Bo Lie smiled while nodding, “I knew that you will definitely be much more formidable than your old man. From what I see, you are much more formidable than me by a lot! Not bad, not bad.”

Xue Ying’s control of his feelings was extraordinary. Yet listening to the praises of his father, he could not help but feel satisfied and delighted.

“The past has passed.” Xue Ying’s voice became cold, “But for those who made him bear such hardships, none of them must be let go. That damnable Mo Yang Clan caused father and mother to endure such bitterness for twenty years. That fool of a clan... has no need for survival! For those who played the blackhand, every single one of them will have to pay.”

Twenty years.

His parents suffered terribly.

Separating both children and parents.

“Xue Ying.” Mo Yang Yu added, “There’s no need. No need to bring so much trouble. Within the entire Mo Yang Clan, only a few has grievances with me. The majority of them has no enmity and resentment with us! The Matriarch herself has all along followed the rules of the clan and could not be considered to have completely wronged me.”

Mo Yang Clan was after all, the place she grew up in. Many people within were familiar to her.

“Just killing Mo Yang Chen Bai and a few others, then forget this matter?” Xue Ying stared at her, “Impossible!”

When he was eight.

That cold-blooded decree brought away his parents!

Xue Ying wanted to kill Mo Yang Chen Bai for the first bout of revenge.

However, towards the Matriarch who sent down the decree and the entire foolish higher levels of the entire Clan, he, too, felt should suffer his vengeance.

“Xue Ying.” Dong Bo Lie looked at his wife, before continuing, “This is after all your mother’s birth place and the Clan she grew up with. Many of them were close to your mother, so there is no need to make too big of a mess.” “Father, mother, don’t you two feel hatred?” Xue Ying hurriedly asked.

“At least we are still alive.” Mo Yang Yu said, “No need to implicate too many of them!”

Still, Xue Ying gritted his teeth.

*Sou.*

He disappeared from within the house. Mo Yang Yu, Dong Bo Lie hurried out of the house towards the window. They saw that high up in the skies, Xue Ying was bathed in Transcendent Flame Qi as if he was a deity looking down at the mortal world. A terrifying coercion was felt emanating out from him. Xue Ying’s cold gaze swept through those beneath him. Everyone within the refiner workshop, those who secretly looked at what was happening, the mages and knights, all felt uneasy and frightened.

“I am Dong Bo Xue Ying! Amongst you, I’m sure that many have heard of my name before.”

“I’ve escaped from the Black-Wind Abyss alive and thus, the people who should be feeling terror should be your Mo Yang Clan!” Xue Ying’s voice was cold and emotionless as it resounded throughout the refiner workshop. “Initially, I wanted to exterminate your entire Mo Yang Clan! Those who deserved death will all die! Including the person who send out the decree in the past, your Matriarch.”

“But my mother decided to plead for you all. Your Mo Yang Clan sure is lucky.”

“However, even though you have escaped from death, punishment must still be meted out!”

“Tell your Matriarch Mo Yang Qi that I am waiting for her apologies.”

Xue Ying, who was high up in the skies, created fear and unease amongst the

many mages and knights of Mo Yang Clan, “If I’m not appeased... Hmph hmph...”

The final sneer brought a chill down everyone.

If he was not appeased? What would Dong Bo Xue Ying do thereafter? Nobody knew.

“Father, mother.” Xue Ying flew to their sides, holding onto their hands, “Let’s go home.”

“Mn.” Dong Bo Lie and Mo Yang Yu nodded. Even though Mo Yang Yu felt that her son’s threat would create terror and unease within the Mo Yang Clan, and that many people would die, she still felt that it was much better than his previous solution. Furthermore, she did not have any remaining friendly relations with the Mo Yang Clan. So many years down the road made her feel resentment deep inside her heart. But there were people like her brother that made it awkward.

*Sou.*

With his parents, he formed into a stream of flame and rapidly disappeared across the skies.

The entire Refiner workshop was silent.

Very quickly, the various Silver Moon mages and knights gathered together to where Xu Guang Qing was.

“Great Mage Xu, what should we do?” Everyone felt panicky.

“What can we do? If we cannot cross this threshold, the entire Mo Yang Clan would be exterminated.” Great Mage Xu Guang Qing shook his head, “The only thing we can do is to convey what the Transcendent expert said word by word to Matriarch and let her decide. Ai, how hard would it be for the fury of a Transcendent to be appeased?”

## Book 4: Chapter 20 – The Reign of Terror

---

The atmosphere within the Mo Yang Clan ancestral residential hall felt so heavy it was as if the air had congealed. The three elders who came to this hall were pale and had sweat-covered foreheads.

“Say, what should we do?” In the Great Hall, sitting above the rest was a silver-garbed woman who exuded a baleful aura.

She was naturally the current Matriarch of the Mo Yang Clan – Mo Yang Qi.

Ever since the brilliant ancestor who founded the Mo Yang Clan died, the entire Mo Yang Clan began waning. It was only due to Mo Yang Qi, whose body underwent a breakthrough to ‘pseudo-Transcendence’ that allowed the Mo Yang Clan to rise again! Even though, before a true Transcendent, pseudo-Transcendents were nothing but a joke, towards mortals, pseudo-Transcendents were still terrifying.

They also had the ability to fly and remain unharmed by all non-Transcendent treasures, while having a lifespan of 800 years! Thus, preserving the prosperity of a clan was enough.

But even to them, there applies an unspoken rule... never offend a true Transcendent!

Before this, the Mo Yang Clan was always careful about handling things; they even had thoughts of finding ways to wed someone in those peak clans with Transcendents within to stabilise their status. But right now...

“I’ve always trusted the decisions made by you elders during your gatherings! All the trivial matters of the clan were given to you all to handle, and yet?” The silver-garbed woman’s voice was filled with fury, “Sir Dong Bo Xue Ying was just 22 when he could fight with Xiang Pang Yun, and in the end, he fell into the Black-Wind Abyss! Falling into Black-Wind Abyss means certain death? Nobody actually saw his body, so why must he be dead? That time, you guys should have treated sir Dong Bo Xue Ying’s parents kindly!”

The three elders did not dare murmur out a single word.

The three secretly muttered to themselves, *'The mutual destruction of Dong Bo Xue Ying and Xiang Pang Yun was something known to Matriarch as well!'*

"Right now, it seems we've brought a big scourge to ourselves! Our Mo Yang Clan had been around for a thousand years, yet a single mistake was enough for us to see extermination right in front of our eyes!" Mo Yang Qi was really angry.

She felt appalled and uneasy.

The news from Thunder Tide Shore and East Fragrant Lake refiner workshop had reached them. The ability to fly, Transcendent Qi, a single gaze that caused everyone including Silver Moon knights to fall helplessly... all of these implied that Dong Bo Xue Ying was a true Transcendent!

Xue Ying's threats were exactly passed to them word for word.

Mo Yang Qi felt flustered because within Xue Ying's threat, there included a sentence — 'Those who should be killed would be killed, including the Matriarch who set down the order!' That implied that the initial plan included her in his hit list.

"Fortunately, Mo Yang Yu valued her relations with our clan, which deterred her son from acting upon his anger." The moment Mo Yang Qi thought of this, her eyes turned even colder.

She had made her decision!

"For the sake of the clan's continued existence, we must please sir Dong Bo Xue Ying immediately!" Mo Yang Qi said. Even now, whenever she mentioned Xue Ying, she would add a 'sir' to represent her respect for him.

"Right.."

"We must please sir Dong Bo." All the elders hurriedly agreed with her.

"That time, during the Elder's gathering, who was the one to suggest severely punishing Mo Yang Yu? Who was the one to agree to marry Mo Yang Yu out to someone else?" Mo Yang Qi asked.

Among the three elders present, two of them looked towards the cold-looking Elder.

The cold-looking Elder's expression changed.

“Elder Shan, you’ve lived quite a long life already. It’s time for you to sacrifice yourself for our clan.” Mo Yang Qi’s expression was cold as she looked towards him.

The cold-looking old man gritted his teeth as his expression turned savage, “Suggesting to marry Mo Yang Yu out to someone else was just spoken casually. This... she had also violated the clan rules. Of course she must be punished severely, I...”

“Mn? You still dare to rebel and refuse to give in?” Killing intent emanated from Mo Yang Qi.

This large clan that had a history of a thousand years already had a population of more than ten thousand. Elder Mo Yang Shan’s sacrifice, compared to the annihilation of the entire clan, was a considerably small matter.

“Mo Yang Shan, you are already quite old. Having received the kindness of our clan for so long, you dare to be afraid of death at this moment?”

“Hmph, you were the one who suggested her severe punishment! How can we let you retreat this time?” The other two Elders angrily shouted. Within the gathering of elders, there were many of those like Great Mage Xu Guang Qing, who was born from another clan. The only elders who were part of the Ancestral Hall of the clan were just these three. Even so, how could sacrificing one of them be considered as a big deal?

“It’s my wrong.” The cold-looking old man finally lowered his head.

“Why did you suggest for Mo Yang Yu to be married out? Who had helped you from the sidelines? Record everything down, may it be those who actively taken part or those that were undercover. Whoever was involved in this must be recorded down, not a single one must be left out!” Mo Yang Qi indifferently ordered. The clan had already grown large and much infighting had naturally existed. There were so many descendents yet why must Mo Yang Yu be the one who was targeted? There must have been reasons behind the discord within the clan.

“After recording those who apprehended Mo Yang Yu and Dong Bo Lie, those who were involved in being calculative against them and those who had mistreated this couple must all be included, regardless of whether they planned

or carried out the deed.”

“These are all fundamental.”

“Regarding what else we should do to appease that Transcendent, invite the founding members of the clan for a discussion and give me an answer as soon as possible.”

Mo Yang Qi casually stood up and sent down the orders, “Handle it quickly. Those who must be caught must be caught. Not a single one must escape from this!”

.....

Within a luxurious courtyard, a middle-aged man wearing quite an extravagant robe was comfortably sitting down. Beside him, was a group of beautiful women serving him – some were peeling fruits to feed him and some were giving him a massage.

He was precisely Mo Yang Chen Bai! He had just lived past 90. As a Silver Moon Knight, being able to live to 160 was normal. Some of them could even live until 200 years old. From his lifespan... he could not be considered old.

“Master.” A skinny teenager barged into the courtyard, shouting, “Master, master, something big has happened.

“Preposterous! How dare you barge in. If what you said is not of great importance, you will pay with your life.” On Mo Yang Chen Bai’s face, an intent to kill could be seen. This was his backyard and the place where his women lived. Those male servants and male protectors were all forbidden from entering.

“It’s news passed down from East Fragrant Refiner Workshop saying Dong Bo Xue Ying has already transcended and succeeded in saving his parents. Dong Bo Xue Ying left our Mo Yang Clan a final ultimatum.” This skinny teenager was Mo Yang Chen Bai’s dog servant. When his owner encountered trouble, this dog servant’s life would certainly be finished, “My Master, we should quickly think of what we need do.”

Mo Yang Chen Bai’s expression changed, “I thought Dong Bo Xue Ying died? How could he become a Transcendent? Could this news be a forgery?”

*Hong long~~~*

Suddenly, a sound of ‘*hong ming*’ could be heard from the skies. A black-coloured refiner flying ship immediately appeared with a large number of powerful knights and mages standing on top. They were all looking down coldly at Mo Yang Chen Bai.

Mo Yang Chen Bai was actually the most important person in the apprehension and the strongest one amongst them. In order to prevent any accidents from happening, the Ancestral side dispatched a refiner flying ship immediately to capture him.

“Mo Yang Chen Bai, give yourself up!” A sound came from above.

.....

That afternoon, the entire Mo Yang Clan started its reign of terror, catching and slaughtering the culprits who almost brought about the extinction of their clan. Like the principal culprit – Mo Yang Chen Bai, many were interrogated that night and were sentenced to death! Although the founding members of the clan possessed combat power weaker than many, they were still skilled enough and had contributed much to the clan. The clan groomed them, and in return, they had served as advisors for the clan. Currently, they were all discussing how they could appease the fury of a Transcendent.

After all, even if they could survive this temporarily, any remaining hatred in Dong Bo Xue Ying’s heart may still guarantee the extermination of their clan.

Thus, they must think of a way to appease his fury!

\*\*\*\*\*

In the evening, after the sun had set pass the horizon and the skies started darkening.

Manor Lord Si An of Dragon Mountain Manor stood at the city gate looking upwards, waiting for someone.

“*Hua!*” A stream of flame appeared in the distant skies before stopping for a moment.

“It’s the Lord. Beside him, those two are... Dong Bo Lie and his wife?” With a



look, Si An recognised the three figures in mid-air.

Within the skies...

Xue Ying and his parents were looking downwards.

“Twenty years, we’re finally back.” Dong Bo Lie and Mo Yang Yu started feeling emotional.

“Ah, it’s our Lord.”

“Our Lord is in the skies, and beside him is... Ah, it’s the old Lord!”

Even though twenty years had passed, many soldiers and servants who were present at the establishment of the castle recognised Dong Bo Lie and Mo Yang Yu with a single look. At the moment, everyone within the castle felt fervent.

“Father, mother, let’s get down.” Xue Ying laughed, “I reckon Uncle Zong, Uncle Tong, and Qing Shi will be here soon.”

Dong Bo Lie and Mo Yang Yu started feeling more nervous and cowardly the closer they got to their home.

*Hu.*

The three of them descended outside the main city gates outside the castle. The drop-bridge had already been let down and the gates had opened. At the gates were Manor Lord Si An and You Tu along with a large crowd who waited for them.

“Dong Bo, Ah Yu!” Following that, an excited, trembling voice could be heard. Zong Ling, Tong San and Qing Shi appeared at the city gates. Among them, Zong Ling and Tong San were the most excited.

“Master.” Tong San looked at the white-haired Mo Yang Yu, before immediately letting out tears.

Zong Ling and Tong San both rushed out to hug the Dong Bo Lie couple.

“Ah.” Zong Ling immediately pulled the sheepish-looking Qing Shi over, “Dong Bo, Ah Yu, this is Qing Shi.”

“Pebble?” Mo Yang Yu looked at him.

At that time when they were separated, Dong Bo Xue Ying was already eight.

The contours and profile of his face were already present. Yet at that year, Qing Shi was just two. He looked so different now that he had grown up. Mo Yang Yu did not even recognise him at first sight..

Qing Shi's feelings were complex. He looked at how excited and happy Uncle Zong, Uncle Tong and his brother were, yet he himself did not have much impression of his parents' return.

"Pebble." Mo Yang Yu brought out her hands to hold onto his son. The more she looked, the more she felt the kinship.

"Pebble looks quite like Ah Yu." Dong Bo Lie laughed.

Slowly, son and parents became familiar with each other.

Xue Ying felt delighted as he looked at such a scene. At this moment, Manor Lord Si An walked over, saying softly, "My Lord."

"Manor Lord Si An." Xue Ying looked at him with a smile, "I feel ashamed. There was a delay due to things I've to settle, thus allowing me return at this time."

"My Lord has been quite fast in his travels. But there's a matter that I have to tell you, my Lord," Manor Lord Si An quipped, "Our Tranquil Sun Province's Dragon Mountain Manor's Head Lord Sir Zhu Yi Hong has been here since the afternoon. He is right over there."

Tranquil Sun Province's Dragon Mountain Manor Head Lord?

Xue Ying looked towards the direction. Behind Manor Lord An Yang and within the huge crowd of people, was a simple-looking, long-haired thin man smiling at him. At this moment, he walked towards him.

With a little probing...

"Pseudo-Transcendent?" Xue Ying made his conclusion.

"Greetings, Sir Dong Bo." The thin man laughed, "This one is called Yi Hong, the person in charge of the entire Tranquil Sun province Dragon Mountain Manor's trivial matters. This time, I came instead of the many Transcendents. In the future, do instruct us if you have anything you require."

---



## Book 4: Chapter 21 – Saint and Demigods

---

Yi Hong placed his stance quite lowly. Having been trapped in the Immortal Palace for six years, Xue Ying had been chatting with the Transcendent refiner organism Monkey and Little Bird and thus, he was quite clear about the circumstances amongst the many era. There would always be a unique organisation controlling the matters under the heaven like ‘Dragon Mountain Manor’! Ever since the Dragon Mountain Emperor established his empire, this organisation had been called the ‘Dragon Mountain Manor’.

Like before, the Xia Clan had an existence named ‘Emperor Lie Xiong’ who united the world and established an empire. That time, the organisation controlling the matters under the heaven was called ‘Lie Xiong Establishment’.

Even though the naming was different, they were still fundamentally the same!

They monitored the whole world in the service of the residing Transcendents.

This ‘Yi Hong’ was able to become the head of intelligence in the Tranquil Sun province and thus, had quite a special position. If Xue Ying, a true Transcendent, had killed some pseudo-Transcendent, then it would simply be a small matter! However, should he kill the head of intelligence of a province, that would mean that he was smacking the Dragon Mountain Manor’s face! Thus, endless trouble would come at him, with even the chance of him having to be escorted into the Infernal World for punishment!

“Manor Lord Yi Hong came quite quickly,” Xue Ying laughed, “Let’s go inside and have a chat.”

“I’m not in a hurry. Sir Dong Bo, maybe you should first accompany your parents?” Yi Hong replied.

“Haha... I’ll be at home for a few days and am not in a hurry for this period of time.” Xue Ying accompanied his parents during the flight from Bellfeather County of Eastfield province back home and had plenty of chances to chat along the way. Thus, it would be more appropriate for his parents to talk with his little brother.

Xue Ying and Yi Hong both began walking into the castle.

Soon, they reached a pavilion within the gallery. Nobody was near them.

“Having first heard of the news that sir Dong Bo survived from the Black-Wind Abyss, I felt shocked. An existence of only 28 years of age had stepped into Transcendence; it was a really rare event even in the entire Dragon Mountain Empire. The person possessing a talent comparable to yours is the Eternal Wind Knight, Sir Qiu Chi Bai, of our Tranquil Sun province.” Yi Hong said, “However, Sir Qiu Chi Bai was 31 when he crossed over into Transcendent and was slower than you by three years. Today, Sir Qiu Chi Bai is actually the number one within the Transcendent Saint ranking. I believe that in the future, sir Dong Bo would also become a famous character within the Saint ranking.”

“Number one within the Saint ranking?” Xue Ying was startled.

“Sir Dong Bo, you might not understand this but ever since the ancient times, there would always be two lists between Transcendents – the Saint ranking and the Demigod ranking.” Yi Hong explained, “The road of cultivation for a Transcendent is split amongst Sky, Saint and Demigod, these three big realms. Most of the Transcendents would remain at the Sky realm. If they are able to cross over to the Saint realm, they could be considered as the backbone of our Xia Clan. If one were to become a Demigod, then he would become a true peak existence amongst all.”

“There are thirty people within the Saint ranking including humans, beasts and native from the Transcendent worlds.”

“As for the Demigod ranking, there are ten of them.”

With a wave of his hand, Yi Hong brought out two different scrolls, “These are the two lists, decided by the Infernal World.”

Xue Ying received them.

He knew long ago about the Saint and Demigod rankings. These were there to encourage Transcendents to walk even further on their routes of cultivation! Yet Xue Ying did not think of the fact that... Qiu Chi Bai was actually the number one within the Saint ranking!

One must know that all the different races, human, beasts and aborigines from

the Transcendent World would all be included into calculation of the ranking and that usually, a beast had inborn talent in their fleshy body. Following this line of thought, most of the time, the number one expert on the Saint rankings would be from the beast race!

Xue Ying looked through the rankings carefully.

“Saint ranking number one: Eternal Wind Knight ‘Qiu Chi Bai’, Elder of the Water Daoist Faction. He started with the Wind of Myriad existences and comprehended the ‘True Meaning behind Void Cleavage’. When he moves, it will be hard to capture his figure, with him being able to appear at anywhere suddenly. Even Saints could not defy the True Meaning of Void Cleavage’. The crucial recorded battle: Defeating the Demigod ‘Ghost Deity Knight’ Feng Dong, killing the Aboriginal Demigod ‘Feng Hou Wang’.

“Saint ranking number two: Lord Beirut, Beast race, starting from Water of Myriad existences and comprehended the ‘True Meaning of Undying’. Has tyrannical fleshy body and is able to fully recover from heavy injuries instantly. Possesses terrifying close combat capabilities. Crucial recorded battle: Lasted for an hour of battle with Qiu Chi Bai before being defeated. He was saved by the Demigod from Sorcerer Palace.

“Saint ranking number three: Blood Devil, the highest-ranking leader from a small Transcendent World. Within the World of Blood Devil, he was able to receive the blessing from the power of the world. Until today, he is undefeated.

“Saint ranking number four...”

Every single person was scrutinised carefully.

As he looked through, Xue Ying felt extremely amazed.

Within the top five of Saint ranking, only one was a human! And he was precisely Qiu Chi Bai! And the main reason was that a human’s innate physique was too weak.

However, from rank six to rank ten, four of them were humans.

From number eleven all the way to number thirty, fifteen were humans.

“Within the top thirty rankers on the Saint rankings, twenty were humans,

with five being beasts and the other five being aboriginal beings from Transcendent Worlds.” Manor Lord Yi Hong said, “Those who had the capability to enter the Saint ranking were amazing experts with hopes of becoming a Demigods. That is especially so for Eternal Wind Knight Qiu Chi Bai... he is the brightest talent within our generation having comprehended the extremely frightening True Meaning behind Void Cleavage. Furthermore, he is just over three hundred years old now, and has an ironclad chance of stepping into Demigod! There might even be a chance for him to become the strongest Demigod within the Demigod ranking.”

Xue Ying looked towards the other scroll.

This was the Demigod ranking.

One must know that a deity could at most stay within the mortal world for ten thousand years. Ten thousand years later, he would be rejected out of the material world! As for Dragon Mountain Empire, it had been established for over nine thousand years. The Dragon Mountain Emperor became a deity when he was over a thousand years old. Having established the empire for so long, he had long been rejected out of the material world.

As of today, there were no deities under the heaven! Demigods would be considered as the strongest already.

“Within this scroll were the top ten strongest existences under the heaven,” Yi Hong said from the side.

Xue Ying looked at the Demigod scroll.

“Demigod ranking number one: The Mountain Lord of Black and White Mountain ‘He Yuan’, peak of Demigod realm, condensed the ‘True Deity Heart’.”

“Demigod ranking number two: Infernal Emperor, the highest-ranking leader of Infernal World, condensed the ‘True Deity Heart’.”

“Demigod ranking number three: Sorcerer Palace Great Elder Ao Lan, condensed the ‘True Life Spirit’.”

“Demigod ranking number four...”

Quickly, he was able to read through all of them.

On the Demigod ranking, there were a total of ten people, with four of them having condensed the ‘True Deity Heart’.

Yi Hong continued from beside, “Mountain Lord He is the number one expert under the heavens – the strongest Demigod with a combat power that is so high that it is incomprehensible and is currently uncontested. As for the Infernal Emperor... he is usually in his own Infernal World. At the very most, he would just send his clone into the mortal world and is not of a concern. Instead, it is this Sorcerer Palace Great Elder that is humankind’s most terrifying enemy.”

“The most terrifying?” Xue Ying was startled.

“Yes. Even though he had not condensed a True Deity Heart, he had condensed a ‘True Spirit’! And the one he grasped was the ‘True Life Spirit’, giving him the ability to transform into a human – a true human body that was indistinguishable from others!” Yi Hong sighed, “The reason why Sorcerer Palace had so many beasts hidden amongst our humankind all originated from this Great Elder.”

“His threat to us is too huge. We humans have always wanted to kill this Great Elder of Sorcerer Palace, yet his whereabouts are unpredictable. Coupled with him condensing the True Life Spirit, we could not kill him.” Within Yi Hong’s eyes were a sense of frustration, though he covered it with a laugh, “Of course, this task of killing this Great Elder is too difficult for us right now. He is after all, one of the top three existences in the world under the heavens. Let’s just leave that to the Demigods.”



## Book 4: Chapter 22 – The Six Great Transcendent Organisations

---

Within the pavilion.

The tea was still warm as Xue Ying laughed, “Ever since humans and beasts emerged, our Xia Clan’s history has had deities emerging as well. Still, within the Beast Clan’s long history, there were also terrifying, absolute, and glamorous characters appearing. Yet neither could exterminate the other! To finish the battle between the two races once and for all is too difficult.”

“Haha, that’s true.” Yi Hong laughed, “What Sir Dong Bo said is very true. Within the history, there are many characters from the Beast Clan that has caused us to suffer. The Great Elder of Sorcerer Palace is merely just the toughest opponent for this era.”

“I feel ashamed though. This struggle will go on for far too long. Demigods have a long lifespan, all of them chase after the dream of stepping into the realm of Deities to attain immortality!” Yi Hong said, “Oh yes, this Demigod ranking was decided by our Infernal World and might not be an entirely accurate representation! Those Demigods were all trying to become Deities, and who knows, some Demigod might display an untold and insurmountable combat power.”

Xue Ying nodded.

He already knew this information, having learned it during his time in the Abyss. All Demigods desired to become a true Deity! After all, a Demigod only had a lifespan of 3000 years! Deities were the true immortal beings.

“After this, let’s talk about proper business!” Yi Hong continued, “Among our humankind, we have six great Transcendent organisations and a hidden underworld Demonic Faction!”

“The six great Transcendent organisations are as follow: Temple of Earth God, Bloodshed Tavern, Black White Deity Mountain, Cloud City, Water Daoist Faction

and lastly, Sea Deity Palace.” Yi Hong introduced, “These six great Transcendent organisations represent Orthodoxy and the aegis for the entire Xia Clan, allowing our Xia Clan to continuously pass down our inheritance to the future! But ultimately, there are some Transcendents... who are quite self-centered! They do not care about the mortals nor their own Clans! They only care about themselves. Thus, they fall into the temptation of Demons... for the sake of treasure, for the sake of greater power, they decide to seek power from Demons, eventually establishing the Demonic Faction!”

Xue Ying lightly nodded.

Self-centered?

That was very normal. Transcendents themselves were, by nature, above mortals. Furthermore, on this road of cultivation, the final destination of a Transcendent was to become a Deity! Adding on to their long lifespan, most of them would have certain feelings for their relatives and clans of mortals. Though as their parents, children, and other relatives all began aging and dying, over a few hundred years, they would certainly not have many attachments towards their own clans.

Some of them would even decide to simply become independent.

An instance would be when reaching the bottleneck at the peak of the Sky Realm or the Saint Realm! For the sake of seeking resources, to breakthrough, or simply because of the all too strong allure of greater power, the number of people deciding to depend on the ‘Demonic Faction’ became quite numerous! Behind this Demonic Faction, there was actually an extremely powerful Demonic God, who was willing to find ways to send large amounts of treasures into this mortal world, attracting even more Transcendents.

“The six great Transcendent organisations and the Demonic Faction are the primary Transcendent powers of humankind. As for the ordinary Demonic God Cult and some of the small-scaled Transcendent organisations, I don’t even need to mention them. They do not have the qualifications to invite Sir Dong Bo!

“Because of your apparent skill, we can naturally expect the six great Transcendent organisations and the Demonic Faction to invite Sir Dong Bo. The Demonic Faction will contact you in the dark, so I hope that Sir Dong Bo will not

choose to join them.” Yi Hong advised. Xue Ying, was a devilishly-intelligent genius who stepped into Transcendence at 28. If he was hooked in and taken away by the Demonic Faction, Xue Ying’s defection would definitely be a huge humiliation for the six big Transcendent organisations.

“Rest assured. Many people are shouting for the Demonic Faction to be attacked, and I even still have a strong bond to my family. Certainly, I do not wish to enter the Demonic Faction,” Xue Ying said.

Yi Hong laughed, “Then I’ll just briefly describe the six great Transcendent organisations.”

“The Temple of Earth God holds faith to an extremely powerful Deity. Within the spirit world, it is said that his position is extremely high, with many Deities begging to become his underlings. They are the only organisation within our entire Xia Clan who are qualified to spread their faith. The rest who dare spread their faith would all be considered part of the cult of Demonic God!”

“With such a huge tree providing shade, there will naturally be plenty of benefits given by the Temple of Earth God. Should you enter, there are even more secret cultivation methods available compare to other Transcendent organisations. The Transcendents within the Temple of Earth God... could only be rivaled by Bloodshed Tavern’s Transcendents alone. Overall, the Temple of Earth God is stronger by a level than the other four big organisations!”

“As for the Bloodshed Tavern, supporting them is similarly, an amazing Deity. It is fortunate that this great existence does not care about faith. Otherwise, they would be battling against the Temple of Earth God and the outcome would be very unpredictable! Bloodshed Tavern’s Transcendents are all specialised in killing.”

“The aforementioned two big Transcendent organisations both have a powerful Deity backing them! The moment you join them, the advantage would be abundant resources and some powerful secret cultivation methods that you could not learn elsewhere! As for the shortcoming, there are a tad bit more regulations you have to follow.”

“As for the remaining four big Transcendent organisations, the Black White Deity Mountain, Cloud City, Water Daoist Faction and Sea Deity Palace, these

were established by the powerful experts from the past dynasties of our Xia Clan. Similarly, their foundations are quite firm, with many years of history. Because they do not have a Deity backing, these four big organisations naturally have more freedom.”

“At the same time, these four big Transcendent organisations have demarcated their territories respectively.”

“The five northern provinces are controlled by the Water Daoist Faction.”

“As for the middle six provinces, they are controlled by the Black White Deity Mountain.”

“The southern four provinces belongs to the Cloud City. Even though it is just four provinces, the southern weather is more pleasant, and they have more farmland, resulting in a greater population.”

“The entire sea, as well as the four provinces it borders, all belongs to the Sea Deity Palace! However, due to the huge area that the sea covers, which is much greater than land, the Sea Deity Palace is unable to control their entire territory. Thus, some small Transcendent organisations have also settled down within the sea.”

Yi Hong laughed, “Our Tranquil Sun province belongs to one of the five northern provinces! Of the many powerful Legend rankers in our province, only the Water Daoist Faction would send an invite to such powers within our province. Other Transcendent organisations like the Temple of Earth God and Bloodshed Tavern would ignore such powers within our Tranquil Sun province.”

“But you, sir Dong Bo, are different.”

“You are a Transcendent and do not currently belong to any single organisation. Furthermore, you are young... thus every single big Transcendent organisations will humbly invite you.

“Oh yes, Sir Dong Bo, since you became a Transcendent, the Water Rites Town will naturally become the territory of your Dong Bo Clan!” Yi Hong said, “If you, Sir Dong Bo were to join the Water Daoist Faction, then the entire Azure River County would naturally be governed by your Dong Bo Clan behind the scenes. If you do not join the Water Daoist Faction... then the Dong Bo Clan would not

have much authority in the Azure River County.”

Xue Ying nodded.

He understood this point.

Transcendents had special privileges.

The clan belonging to a Sky Realm or a Saint Realm would all immediately receive the territory of a town! This was their own clan’s territory, and they had absolute control over it.

As for Demigods, they would certainly be able to obtain the control of an entire county!

As for what was done behind the scenes, the Transcendent’s clan would certainly be able to control even more territories. For instance, the Water Daoist Faction had control over the five northern provinces. Thus, the Transcendents belonging to the Water Daoist Faction had a huge influence over those five provinces. Once Xue Ying join them, other than the Dragon Mountain Manor, he would have the power to send down immediate orders to any organisation within the Azure River county.

Other than nominally belonging to the empire, they would still have absolute control under covers. Furthermore, the Transcendent’s clan would have an expansion of power that could spread out to all the surrounding counties!

One must know that the Si Clan depended solely on Si Liang Hong, and they already controlled the entire Azure River County.

Much less, to say, the clan of a truly powerful Transcendent!

As for the royal clan?

Without the Dragon Mountain Emperor, the royal clan would not be able to contest against the firmly rooted six great organisations and thus, they could only simply give up their control.

“What I need to say has already said. Sir Dong Bo, you should think it through carefully and decide which organisation to join.” Yi Hong laughed, “Actually, it doesn’t matter even if the territory a clan controls is smaller. To Transcendents, their own combat power is more important.”

“I’ll think over it.” Xue Ying nodded.

“Then I’ll take my leave. Oh yes, to whom should I give the first Dong Bo Clan Marquis title to?” Yi Hong asked.

“My father,” Xue Ying answered.

An ordinary Transcendent Clan would have the title of Marquis to be passed down for a thousand years through heredity. A thousand years later, that position would be demoted to a Count.

If he were to become a Demigod, the clan would have the title of Duke for five thousand years.

If he were to become a Deity, then the six great Transcendent organisations would temporarily bow and surrender. He would become the emperor under the heavens, with his own family becoming the royal Clan... this would be passed down through the family until he, the Deity, ascended. Only then could the royal Clan be stripped of their royalty.

.....

Yi Hong and Xue Ying both chatted almost an hour, enjoying some simple snacks and drinks. After that, Yi Hong decided to temporarily reside within the castle.

That night, Xue Ying visited his parents and little brother.

The family was very lively. Today, however, the Dong Bo Clan had too few members. Because they controlled a large territory, more people were needed to help govern it.

“Hu~~~”

Late at night, the wind blew.

Xue Ying laid on the bed and was about to go into slumber. His mood was quite good.

Suddenly, he opened his eyes.

“Mn?” Xue Ying frowned. Garbed in loose pyjamas, he walked down the corridors. With just two flashes, he exited the Snowrock Castle, quickly reaching

the peak of a hill outside it.

On top of the hill, on a bare stone, squatted a man. The left side of his head was entirely shaved while the hair on his right side hung down.

He squatted in that position with drooping eyelids. Within his hand was a sword that he slowly ground against the stone. Despite the drooping eyelids... Xue Ying could still feel the breath of Qi from this man reaching him. Within this breath was a sharp Transcendent Qi and a surging physique Qi.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying. Who would have thought that even upon stepping into Transcendence, your physique would have already reached the middle phase of the Sky Realm. You awoke the Primordial Bloodline when you were just a mortal?” That half-bald man stopped with his grinding, raising his heads towards Xue Ying. Within his eyes, there was a murderous edge that made Xue Ying palpitate in fear. This was truly a frightening opponent.

## **The Saint Experts**

---

Within Xue Ying's senses, the breath of that man squatting on the big stone he ground his sword against, felt obscure. He could not determine this man's true combat power.

Unlike previously when he probed the Head Manor Lord of Tranquil Sun Province Dragon Mountain Manor, 'Yi Hong', Xue Ying clearly determined his opponent's aura of physical Qi and his aura of cultivation Qi then discerned he reached pseudo-Transcendent rank! But this half-shaven man... was someone whose power he could not examine, showing a clear distance between them. On the other hand, his opponent was able to clearly sense Xue Ying's cultivation and the breath of Qi coming his body.

"Right. I've awoken my Primordial Bloodline." Xue Ying did not try to hide the truth. To Transcendents, awakening their Primordial Bloodline when they were mortal was a small matter.

"I knew it. No wonder your body is so powerful despite your recent transcendence." The corner of that half-shaven man's mouth tilted up.

Body transcension would allow one's body to have a fundamental transformation.

Like those ordinary Legend rankers, their bodies would be very weak and many of them depended on their cultivation Qi! However, once they successfully became a 'pseudo-Transcendent', their body transcension would occur. After that, their cultivation Qi would remain the same, but their physical strength could reach the top 500 within the Dragon Mountain Book!

As for Xue Ying, even before his breakthrough, his body strength under ordinary conditions could enter the top 200 within the Dragon Mountain Book. Thus, when he underwent body transcension, his physique changed qualitatively, allowing his physical strength to reach the middle stage of Sky Realm. Should he activate his Power Bloodline, he could even reach the peak of Sky Realm in terms



of strength.

Sky Realm was divided into the early stage, the middle stage, and the peak stage!

“Which Bloodline?” The half-shaven man’s eyes brightened up, “Could it operate the World Energy? Or space, or maybe...”

“It’s just an ordinary power breakthrough.” Xue Ying shook his head.

“Such a pity, such a pity. If it could operate the World Energy, the space, or even the undead, your life ahead of this Transcendent’s road would be much simpler.” The half-shaven man lightly shook his head.

Xue Ying nodded.

He was quite clear about the limitations of his Primordial Bloodline.

The chances of a second awakening of Primordial Bloodline were too slim! Thus, his physical strength could be said to have reached its peak. Even after cultivating till the Saint Realm or the Demigod Realm, his physical strength would not have a huge transformation. At the most, he could just depend on resources to strengthen his physical strength by a bit. Forcibly raising his strength to the early stage of the Saint Realm would require so much it would even make a Demigod’s heart throb!

As for his cultivation Qi with regard to time, he could easily cultivate until the peak of Sky Realm! Adding on to the mystical breakthrough of cultivation Qi, he would acquire a strength far beyond his current level. Thus, the future he travelled was one where his cultivation Qi would leap ahead of his physical strength.

Amongst the many Primordial Bloodline users, some could use their awakened powers operate frost, and some could use their awakened powers to operate flame. Some could use their awakened powers to teleport, and some could use their awakened powers to control lightning...

Thus, after transcending, those who could control frost would have an even clearer understanding towards the power of frost, and an even easier time trying to comprehend the Profound Mystery behind Myriad Existences.

As for those who awakened a space-related bloodline, they would be even more heaven-defying! At the Sky Realm, they might even be able to teleport! This was something most Saint-Realm experts could not even achieve.

As for Xue Ying's power breakthrough, it would provide no aid in comprehending the Profound Mystery behind Myriad Existences! In the future, it would also provide no aid to his combat power, and thus, was such a pity.

"I still thought that you awoke some special Primordial Bloodline, making you more of an genius. Such a pity..." The half-shaven male casually grinned, "Whatever. Receive some moves of mine."

*Shua.*

The half-shaven male suddenly moved.

Xue Ying did not think that his opponent would simply attack him after speaking. Thus, he retreated furiously, shouting out, "Stop."

He did not want to fight.

That was because he still did not know the identity of his opponent. The six great Transcendents organisations were all orthodox and had been protecting the entire Xia Clan. Thus, they were more united with one another. Any conflicts would result in very few deaths. After all, with the Infernal World setting down the rules and regulations—Transcendents should not kill each other! If they were to kill another Transcendent, they would be investigated and punished accordingly! If it was serious, they might sentenced to death instantly!

Of course, this regulation was invalid in regards to the Demonic Faction, Sorcerer Palace and the aboriginals from Transcendent Worlds.

If the man before him was from the six great Transcendent organisations, he would not be placed in a dire situation. However, if he was from the Demonic Faction or Sorcerer Palace? They might simply kill him! But according to logic, even if there were spies from Sorcerer Palace and Demonic Faction, they would still react much slower than the six big Transcendent organisations!

"Do you think you can escape this?" The semi-bald man turned into an apparition, intercepting Xue Ying. Following that, a black-coloured streamer appeared.

“Such a fast sword.”

Xue Ying was retreating as fast as he could. Within his hands appeared the Flying Snow God Spear. He poured Transcendent Qi into it.

*Hu!*

The spear struck the black-coloured streamer yet that black sword ray casually evaded Xue Ying’s strike with ease.

“*Hua la~~~*” The Flying Snow God Spear varied its attack. Fundamentally, this spear twisted in a simple arc, which allowed it to envelop a large area in front of it. Surrounding the spear was a maelstrom of water. There was no way the black sword ray could dodge it. ‘*Chi*’, the water attack struck Xue Ying’s spear. A strange force surged out, causing Xue Ying’s spear to pause momentarily. But this pause was enough to allow that sword to penetrate through the defense and enter close combat.

At that moment, Xue Ying’s expression changed.

“Open!”

Xue Ying immediately activated his Power Bloodline. The spear in his hand abruptly swept across his opponent. Blazing flame appeared as it swept with an extremely violent speed. Coupled with the long reach of the spear, that half-bald man could only retreat. Yet he retreated so easily as if he floated off the ground. The spearhead whizzed past in front of him, sweeping across everything within it.

“*Hong long long~~~*” Xue Ying’s spear swept across with the entirety of his strength, causing the air to release a shockwave, flying to the side with a resounding boom. Everywhere it went, the mountain rock would burst apart and the huge trees would collapse, causing everything to be damaged within a radius of twenty meters. This damage was caused simply by the aftermath of the shockwaves from that attack!

“Eh, you could actually block my attack. How interesting.” The half-bald man’s voice resounded in mid-air.

*Hu.*

With a strange fluttering figure, Xue Ying could barely sense his opponent coming directly at him.

Xue Ying had no other choice but to rotate his spear, forming a gigantic water maelstrom in front of him as it became a huge shield to block off his enemy.

“*Chi~~*” similar to the previous attempt, as soon as the sword touched his spear, his spear would pause momentarily.

But this time... that sword actually stuck to the body of the spear, causing Xue Ying to have a hard time exerting his strength.

*Hua.*

The sword stuck along the body of the spear and the blade went right at Xue Ying.

At this moment, Xue Ying could only let go of his Flying Snow God Spear as he rapidly turned his body in an effort to evade the attack. But at the moment he turned, several Fusiform darts shot out from his hands, *Shua shua shua...* these overwhelming darts shot out under the operation of Xue Ying’s Power Breakthrough. Due to the close distance, the half-bald man could only retreat helplessly, parrying the incoming darts with a rotation of his sword.

Utilising this opportunity, Xue Ying regained hold of his spear.

“Brat, you dare to throw darts at me?” The half-bald man felt helpless, “It seems that to defeat you while suppressing my strength is quite difficult. I’ll need to use eight to ten more moves.”

“Compared to senior, Dong Bo Xue Ying is still quite a distance away.”

Xue Ying said.

During the previous exchange, his opponent was not as physically strong as him. Other than the explosive speed he used to entangle Xue Ying, his speed during the other bouts were suppressed. Other than the strange technique that made his movements unpredictable, his opponent had a higher comprehension that made Xue Ying feel the distance between their skills.

“I’ve already cultivated for over 800 years and have already the peak of Saint Realm. If I were to be your equal, won’t I be ashamed of myself?” The half-bald

man tilted the edge of his lips, “But who would have thought that you, brat, have not only comprehended the Profound Mystery behind the Fire of Myriad existences, but have also comprehended another Profound Mystery behind the Water of Myriad existences, with some interconnection between Water and Fire...”

Xue Ying felt startled.

This old guy’s vision was actually so acute.

“You are just 28 this year and yet your control of water and fire were complementary with each other. Who knows, in the future you might be able to control the True Meaning both Water and Fire!” The half-bald man turned over his hand, taking out a piece of paper before throwing it casually. That paper appeared like blade flying across the void. Xue Ying raised his hand to receive it.

“These are the conditions given by our Bloodshed Tavern. As long as you are willing to join us, everything within will be yours. Your comprehension is much better than what I expected, thus allowing me to make the decision myself! Everything on the paper will be increased by fifty percent!” The half-bald man said, “I’ll stay here in the Azure River County for ten days. Within ten days, if you choose to join our Bloodshed Tavern, just tear this piece of paper, and I will come.”

The half-bald man suddenly laughed, “Oh yes, I have not told you my name. I’m called Tu Liang!”

“Tu Liang?” Xue Ying became startled, recalling the information regarding Transcendents previously provided to him..

Saint ranking number ten: Dark Night Sword Devil ‘Tu Liang’, Bloodshed Tavern assassin. Comprehended the ‘True Meaning of Dark Night’.

When they exchanged moves previously, his opponent did not display his control of the Profound Mystery behind Myriad Existences, nor did he display his comprehension of the True meaning! The moment he decided to display it, there would be no way Xue Ying could defend himself against it. Just solely relying on the rotation behind his strange technique was enough to suppress Xue Ying.

“Little Water Mother~~ You’ve been watching at the sides for quite a while.

Isn't it time for you to appear?" the half-bald man mocked.

"You say Little Water Mother?" A roar could be heard from the darkness. A towering, robust figure suddenly appeared on the top of the hill. He was at least 2.5 meters tall, with a sturdy body, and wore a full-body bronze armour. There was even a stream of water surrounding his body. Such a mighty and fierce existence was actually called 'Little Water Mother', how could he not be angered by it?

"Hahaha, Little Water Mother is angry. Alright, time for me to go. If I were to continue talking, this Shrine Knight would become mad." With a flash, the figure of the half-bald man fully assimilated into the darkness, disappearing into nothingness.

## Book 4: Chapter 24 – They have come!

---

The big, tall knight who was wearing bronze armour had a face that looked similar to that of a sculpture. Looking towards the direction of Dark Night Sword Devil 'Tu Liang' who had already vanished, he coldly snorted before looking towards Xue Ying. Smiling, he said, "I am Wen Liang from the Temple of the Earth God."

Saint rankings number twenty-one: Water-Deity Knight Wen Liang, Knight of the Temple of the Earth God, comprehended the 'True Meaning of Water'.

Xue Ying was breathless.

Wen Liang? Yet another expert who was ranked upon the Saint rankings? One must know that amongst the entire human race, Transcendent World Aborigines, and beasts, only a total of thirty were ranked in the Saint rankings.

"My Temple of the Earth God has the richest resources. Many unique cultivation methods are passed down from the Deity world, with only those who belong to the inner circle of our Temple of the Earth God allowed to cultivate them." The Water-Deity Knight Wen Liang laughed, "Thus, if you look at this from a wider perspective, my Temple of the Earth God and Bloodshed Tavern's total combat power would be greater than the rest by a whole level. But of course, if you were to consider the number one ranker on the Saint rankings – Eternal Wind Knight Qiu Chi Bai, it was purely because he has a great innate perception. Yet the method that he currently cultivates could never be compared to those we have."

"This is the item list." Similarly, Wen Liang threw out a glowing-red paper towards Xue Ying, "Since you could comprehend both the Water and Flames of Myriad Existences... you are much more powerful than what our intelligence reported. Thus, the precious resources written on top can be decided by me, increasing by half of what it was initially."

"I'll remain here in the Azure River County for the next ten days. If you decided

to join my Temple of the Earth God, just tear that piece of paper, and I'll be informed."

Xue Ying took that piece of paper, looking at the conditions written on top.

"I'll leave first." Wen Liang lightly nodded, before suddenly rushing up and disappearing into the night sky.

"These two Saint ranked experts came quickly and left quickly as well." Xue Ying looked towards the two item lists. One was the conditions given by the Temple of the Earth God and the other by the Bloodshed Tavern.

On the list from Bloodshed Tavern—

1. One could freely choose any Transcendent weapon with a total worth of, at most, 15 kilograms of third-grade Origin Stones.
2. Pick one amongst the five Deity-Grade secret killing techniques.
3. Choose any Qi cultivation methods.
4. One hundred and fifty kilograms worth of third-grade Origin Stones.

On the list from the Temple of the Earth God —

1. One could freely choose any Transcendent weapon with a total worth of, at most, 25 kilograms of third-grade Origin Stones.
2. Pick one amongst the ten Deity-Grade secret techniques.
3. Choose any cultivation Qi methods.
4. One hundred and fifty kilograms worth of third-grade Origin Stone.

.....

Xue Ying went back inside the castle and sat upon his bed before lightly nodding as he looked at the papers, "It is actually a Deity-Grade secret technique! How desirable. What a pity that the regulations of both Temple of the Earth God and Bloodshed Tavern are much stricter."



As for Transcendent weapons, Origin Stones, ...

Xue Ying did not care about these!

To a Transcendent, Origin Stones were extremely important as it could help increase one's cultivation speed by a huge margin! For instance, cultivating from Sky Realm beginning stage all the way to Saint Realm beginning stage, not counting the possibilities of bottlenecks, just simply measuring the amount of required energy accumulation... if one were to only absorb the energy from the World, one would require approximately 700 years of time! Yet a Sky Realm Transcendent only had a total lifespan of 800 years.

But of course, in order to breakthrough, comprehending the different Realms would be more important!

“Origin Stones are indeed important, but Elder Lei Zhen had prepared a large amount of such stones that year when he tried to breakthrough to Demigod. Even though he used up a large amount, there is still over 1500 kilograms worth leftover.” Xue Ying thought, other than the Stone of Oceanic World and a protective inner vest, this Elder Lei Zhen exchanged all the treasures he attained over his entire life-time for more Origin Stones.

He exchanged up to more than 5000 kilograms worth for the sake of breaking through to Demigod, and despite using more than half, there were still many stones remaining.

One thousand five hundred kilograms of Origin Stones. One must know that to a Saint Realm peak expert, or an old freak who put his life in peril while spending a large amount of time trying to gather more stones, or the relatively powerful expert like Qiu Chi Bai, or the odd yet ordinary peak Saint Realm experts, usually, the worth of all their treasures pooled together would not be more than 1500 kilograms of Origin Stones.

Normally, the ‘Origin Stones’ one frequently saw would be classified as third-grade.

With so many Origin Stones with him, Xue Ying, of course, felt rich and powerful. Thus, he would attach a greater value to cultivation methods and secret techniques!

Bloodshed Tavern and Temple of the Earth God's Deity-Grade secret techniques were all passed down from the Deity World and were absolutely barred from being shared with outsiders. They were the strongest secret techniques under the heavens. Unless one joined these two organisations, or that one joined the Demonic Faction, one would never be able to learn any of these Deity-Grade secret techniques.

"But the rules and regulations are too strict, making me uneasy!" Xue Ying immediately decided, "I'll temporarily put these two organisations on hold."

The more proud a person was, the less likely they would like being bounded by rules!

Regardless of whether it was the number one expert on the Saint rankings, Qiu Chi Bai, or the number one expert on the Demigod rankings, 'Mountain Lord He', neither of them belonged to the Temple of the Earth God nor the Bloodshed Tavern.

How could these magnificent and peerless characters be willing to get shackled by rules?

\*\*\*\*\*

As the night passed.

It was dawn the next day. Tranquil Sun Province, Dragon Mountain Manor, Manor Lord 'Yi Hong' came to find Xue Ying.

Within the pavilion...

The two of them were seated face-to-face.

"Sir Dong Bo, you are making me suffer." Yi Hong said helplessly, "I just found out from a source yesterday night that you displayed both Flame and Water of Myriad Existences in the Eastfields Province, Bellfeather County?"

"Yes." Xue Ying nodded. He had utilised the flow of water in smacking a group of protectors up into the skies.

"You actually comprehended both the Flame and Water of Myriad Existences at the same time and did not tell anybody." Yi Hong helplessly continued, "You should know that the greater your combat power, the higher the conditions will

be given by the various Transcendent organisations. I've actually spent my entire night in transmitting this information to the various organisations."

"I feel ashamed. It's my fault on this matter," Xue Ying said.

"Are you still hiding any of your combat power?" Yi Hong asked, "Whatever power you have, just speak out."

"Is awakening the Primordial Bloodline when I was a mortal counted?" Xue Ying teased.

"It's definitely counted!" Yi Hong eyes widened, "Could it operate the World Energy? Or..."

"Power Bloodline." Xue Ying had a faint mocking smile.

Yi Hong was stunned, before he continued, "Alright, let's take it that I did not ask you this matter!"

Power Bloodline was of no use to the comprehension of the different Realms. Unless of course it was the secondary awakening... but Primordial Bloodline secondary awakening was too difficult. Even today, there was not a single Transcendent who could awaken his Primordial Bloodline a second time! After all, if it was awakened the second time, he would be able to rival a Primordial being.

"Yi?" Yi Hong gasped as he looked towards the distant skies. Seeing this, Xue Ying turned his head.

Amidst the skies, there were two figures walking shoulder-by-shoulder towards them. One of them was a white-haired handsome man, and the other was an orc, a lion-man.

"Eternal Wind Knight, Leftmound Knight." Yi Hong greeted in amazement.

"It's them?" Xue Ying was shocked, "The strongest humans within Saint rankings?"

Within the top five of Saint rankings, only one of them was a human, and that was Eternal Wind Knight Qiu Chi Bai!

Saint ranking number six: Leftmound Knight 'Tan Shi', Water-Deity Palace Elder, started with the comprehension of Profound Mystery behind the Great

Mountain, grasped the 'True Meaning of Leftmound', had immense strength, number one behind the Saint rankings middle category.

"Sir Dong Bo, it seems that everyone looks highly upon you, with ranked elders from the various organisations coming to invite you." Yi Hong marveled.

"Mn." Dong Bo nodded.

Including those two from yesterday, Dark Night Sword Devil and Water-Deity Knight, there had now been four who came, and all of them were ranked in the Saint rankings.

*Hu! Hu!*

Qiu Chi Bai and Tan Shi landed together.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying." Tan Shi grinned, "Your two uncles are of the beastman race?"

"Yes." Xue Ying nodded.

Tan Shi had a friendly look towards Xue Ying. Amongst humans, those belonging to the beastman race would usually have a lower status. Even though according to the law set down a long time ago, the beastman race had an equal status to others from the human race, there would still be cases of discrimination towards these people. Also, amongst Transcendents, there were even some who were quite discriminatory towards the beastmen. Adding on the fact that they were the minority in the group of Transcendents, the beastmen would naturally feel suffocated.

Due to the fact that there were two beastmen within Xue Ying's relatives, Tan Shi would naturally have a more pleasant feeling towards Xue Ying.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying." Qiu Chi Bai started with a gentler voice and a more introverted expression, "I reckon you've met with the people from both Temple of the Earth God and Bloodshed Tavern. Considering the secret techniques, our four great Transcendent organisations would definitely not be comparable to them. However, they have more rules, and are stricter about it! My Water Daoist Faction can remedy you in other areas. This is the list of items."

Saying that, he threw out a piece of paper. Similarly, Tan Shi who was beside

him threw out one as well.

Yet another two lists of items!

Xue Ying gave both lists a look. Good fellows. Indeed, the Water-Deity Palace and Water Daoist Faction gave a greater amount of treasures, with Water Daoist Faction having the most!

You are from the Tranquil Sun Province, and I am similarly from here as well.” Qiu Chi Bai smiled, “I hope that you can join my Water Daoist Faction. After all, the northern five provinces are under my Water Daoist Faction’s protection. As of today, there were already two Saint Realm experts from my Tranquil Sun Province. I hope for you to become the third.”

“Eternal Wind, he just broke through to Transcendent and you already believe that he will become enter the Saint Realm?” Tan Shi teased.

“I dare not guarantee.”

Qiu Chi Bai looked at Xue Ying, “Your innate talents are good. Stepping into Transcendent at such a young age. Furthermore, you even comprehended both Profound mysteries behind Flame and Water of Myriad Existences! I reckon that this time, all the experts sent out by the various big Transcendent organisations would belong to the Saint Realm. Why? That’s because everyone feels that you should have a high chance of entering the Saint Realm!”

“Estimating the conditions given by everyone, the Origin Stones given should be enough for you to cultivate until the initial stage of Saint Realm! As for the Temple of the Earth God and Bloodshed Tavern, I reckon they would directly allow you to choose a Deity-Grade secret technique?”

Xue Ying nodded.

Usually, the ordinary Transcendents from the Temple of the Earth God would need to undergo a trial and contribute to the organisation before they might obtain a Deity-Grade secret technique!

As for Xue Ying, he could immediately obtain one the moment he joined!

Like the 300 kilograms of Origin Stones the Water Daoist Faction offered, if Xue Ying did not absorb any energy from the World and simply absorbed the

energy from the stones, he would be able to breakthrough from Sky Realm beginning stage to Saint Real beginning stage! Clearly, all the organisations felt that Xue Ying was a good seedling with hopes of becoming the backbone of human race in the future. Thus, they would certainly put in more effort in grooming him.

“Haha, this little brat, you should certainly strive for a high goal.” Tan Shi gazed sideways at Qiu Chi Bai beside him, “During this last thousand years, initially, it was this guy beside me who was the youngest to break through to Transcendent, but now, you have surpassed him in that! If you do not become a Saint, Qiu Chi Bai would certainly feel very frustrated.”

Qiu Chi Bai smiled at that.

.....

That day, during the afternoon and evening, those of the Cloud City and Black White Deity Mountain were similarly, experts from the Saint rankings, showing clearly the high value placed upon Xue Ying.

All the big six Transcendent organisations had finally sent out their invitations.

Which should he join? The final decision was up to Dong Bo Xue Ying himself to make!

## Book 4: Chapter 25 – Joining

The rest of the Transcendents came and went away, with the exceptions being Qiu Chi Bai and Tan Shi. The two of them, one being the the strongest human expert within the Saint rankings, were temporarily living at Snowrock Castle. As for the excuse they used... it was for the protection of Xue Ying!

Early in the morning.

Dong Bo Lie and his wife, Dong Bo Xue Ying, Qing Shi, Zong Ling and Tong San were eating breakfast together.

“Father, I’d like hear your thoughts about this.” Xue Ying asked. He told them about the advantages and disadvantages of joining the various big organisations.

“Regarding the matter about joining the Transcendent organisations, why are you even wanting to listen to our suggestions?” Dong Bo Lie replied, “We are not that knowledgeable about Transcendent matters. Ultimately, you should just choose based on what you think is the best and appropriate for you. There’s no need to involve us in your decision.”

Mo Yang Yu continued, “That’s right. Our Dong Bo Clan only has this many people. We even feel the lack of manpower in managing the entire territory of Water Rites Town, much less to say about being in charge of Azure River County.”

“Be rest assured. I’m sure there would be enough helping hands on the side of Dragon Mountain Manor.” Xue Ying laughed.

“Still, as I was saying, you should just choose whichever organisation you think is most appropriate.” Dong Bo Lie quipped. Zong Ling, Tong San and Qing Shi all agreed with him. Clearly, they did not want their thoughts to affect Xue Ying’s decision... After all, the matters regarding Transcendents would be a matter of great importance.

Xue Ying lightly nodded, “If that’s the case, then I’ll be going with Water Daoist

Faction!”

“Water Daoist Faction?” Dong bo Lie had some doubts.

“Why?” Qing Shi asked curiously, “Brother, didn’t you say that judging based on the secret techniques an organisation has, Temple of the Earth God and Bloodshed Tavern would have the most powerful ones. And if it was judged based on the treasures given, wouldn’t the Black White Deity Mountain be dominant in that area?”

Xue Ying nodded in agreement.

The founders of Black White Deity Mountain... were two relatively powerful Transcendent mages! Thus, there would naturally be more mages within Black White Deity Mountain, leading to an attraction for even more mages to join them! Thus, there were large amounts of powerful Transcendent weapons and arrays refined by them, attracting even quite a few Transcendent knights. After all, they would be able to obtain many Transcendent weapons at a low price.

The Black White Deity Mountain controlled six provinces, with Mountain Lord He being deemed as the number one under the heavens.

“The Temple of the Earth God and Bloodshed Tavern have too many regulations, and that isn’t suitable for me.” Xue Ying laughed, “As for the other four great organisations, they did not have much disparities in terms of conditions. Since I hail from the Tranquil Sun Province, it would be more appropriate for me to join Water Daoist Faction! Furthermore, Eternal Wind Knight, Qiu Chi Bai from the Water Daoist Faction treats me quite well.”

.....

In the afternoon.

Xue Ying, Qiu Chi Bai and Tan Shi were all seated within the pavilion. As for Manor Lord Yi Hong, he was actually standing off to the side, busying himself with pouring tea for the rest. He was clearly used to serving Transcendents.

“You’ve chosen Water Daoist Faction?” That lion-man, Tan Shi widened his eyes, before slapping on his thigh, “What a pity. Truly a pity that you did not join our Water-Deity Palace.”



“Your Water-Deity Temple already didn’t have much hopes in the beginning right?” Qiu Chi Bai smiled as he was feeling quite good. “My Water Daoist Faction has never viewed you guys as our rivals.”

Tan Shi curled his lips, “Look at you, so proud right now.”

“Xue Ying.” Qiu Chi Bai called him quite familiarly, “From today onwards, we can be considered as brothers. You can just call me Brother Eternal Wind.”

“This...” Xue Ying hesitated.

This was because he understood the rules within the four great Transcendent organisations.

Legend rankers were disciples!

Sky Realm Transcendents were protectors.

Saint Realms would be considered as Elders.

Demigods would be considered as the peak. Even if they were not the head of the Transcendent organisation, they would still be a Great Elder, a Venerable Elder, a Deputy Mountain Lord, or a Deputy Overlord, and other positions of similar status.

Thus, in any ordinary circumstances, Xue Ying would still have to call him ‘Elder Chi’ or ‘Elder Eternal Wind’.

Calling him Brother Eternal Wind would be considerably arrogant on his part. After all, he was the top ranker within the Saint rankings! He had, after all, killed Demigods from the Transcendent worlds and defeated the Demigod Ghost Deity Knight ‘Feng Dong’!

“Don’t be so wishy-washy. The transcendents in the Water Daoist Faction mostly come from the five provinces in the north. As for us belonging to the same Tranquil Sun province, it is natural for us to be closer.” Qiu Chi Bai laughed, “Adding you, our Tranquil Sun province has a total of ten Transcendents! Amongst us, Old Peng and me are Saints. The rest are at the Sky Realm. I have a high expectation of you, or rather, I should say, everyone under the heavens has high expectations of you. As long as you do not slack off, stepping into the Saint Realm should not be a problem. When that time comes, our Tranquil Sun

province would have three Saint rankers. And for us who hail from Tranquil Sun Province, we are like brothers under the same family, thus there's no need to be so polite."

Demigod?

Nobody would dare to say who would become one. A demigod had a lifespan of three thousand years, yet within the history of Water Daoist Faction, there had only been two! Like that Elder Lei Zhen from before, he had quite the fortune with the Stone of Oceanic World treasure in his possession, yet he failed in the end, dying before he succeeded. Similar cases were too frequent.

Only those who were like Qiu Chi Bai, who could become the top ranker within Saint rankings at such a young age, would be considered as having a huge probability of stepping through to the Realm of Demigod.

"Brother Eternal Wind." Xue Ying still did not carelessly shout out Eternal Wind as his brother.

"You brat." Qiu Chi Bai laughed, before casually flipping his hands. Within it appeared three wristbands. One was black, and the other two were white. "This is a Transcendent refiner communicative wristband. I shall be giving you this black one! The other two white coloured wristbands are considered as ordinary communicative wristbands. You can leave them with your family, thus allowing you to communicate with them in the future! This type of white wristband is quite cheap, with just one-half kilogrammes of Origin Stones being able to exchange for five. If you need more of these, you can purchase them yourself."

Xue Ying's eyes brightened up as he received them.

The white wristbands were kept for the time being. As for the black wristband, it was easily refined with his Transcendent Qi. When worn on his arm, this black wristband could even assimilate into the skin.

"Mn?" Xue Ying tried reaching out with his senses.

The insides of the black wristband was akin to a three-dimensional space. A simple number was written: Water Tranquil Sun 29

"Your number for calling is Water Tranquil Sun 29'." Qiu Chi Bai laughed, "In the future, if you need to transmit a message, the recipient would naturally

identify you with the communicative number. Every single one of the communicative numbers... represents a Transcendent!”

“Mn?”

Xue Ying was startled suddenly.

Because he just received three messages through the communicative wristband, and what was mystical about this was that his consciousness was the medium receiving it.

As for the content of the three messages, they were as followed —

Water Tranquil Sun 16: I am Qiu Chi Bai.

Water Deity Extending Cloud 9: Brat, I am Tan Shi. This is my transmission number.

Dragon Mountain Tranquil Sun: Sir Dong Bo, I am Yi Hong.

“So interesting.” Xue Ying felt really mystified.

“Oh yes, there is still one special number called ‘Infernal Xia Clan’.” Qiu Chi Bai added, “This is the number that every single Transcendent knows. The moment you encountered some important matter or a life and death danger, you can immediately ask for help. You just have to provide your location, which can be obtained from the map function within the communicative wristband. After marking your own location on the map, you can then just transmit it to ‘Infernal Xia Clan’.”

Xue Ying nodded.

Due to all of these being depended on his thoughts to transmit, it could be shown that a Transcendent expert would have quite a powerful spirit. Thus, with just a blink of an eye, the message would be able to be sent out.

“We, the six great Transcendent organisations, have an absolute dominating combat power!” Qiu Chi Bai laughed, “Hence, the Demonic Faction and some of the other Demonic God-based organisations as well as the Sorcerer Palace, would not dare to come and assassinate you. Should they do so, just let us know and there will be some Demigod experts piercing through the void to reach you.”

“If the enemy is so powerful, then won’t he be able to kill all of us?” Xue Ying

asked.

“If the user dies immediately, this owner-less communicative wristband will automatically transmit its position to ‘Infernal Xia Clan’. We will then go over and slaughter the killers.” Qiu Chi Bai said, “Thus, within the mortal world and the Infernal World, usually, we wouldn’t meet any huge dangers. Unless of course, the enemy wants to take the risk of incurring the wrath of all six great Transcendent organisations to kill you! Such reckless actions are few and far between. I’ve not heard of them before.”

Xue Ying heaved a sigh of relief.

Based on his importance and position, Qiu Chi Bai was much higher than him in both. Thus, should the Sorcerer Palace or Demonic Faction decide to assassinate him, they would first have to fight against Qiu Chi Bai.

“However!”

“The communicative wristband is unable to transmit beyond the range of a world. There is naturally an effect of deterioration caused by the space between worlds.” Qiu Chi Bai reminded, “It was only after countless years of operation within the Infernal World that we finally succeeded in enabling the communication with the outer world. But if you are on one of the other Transcendent worlds, regardless of whether they are the major or minor worlds, you would be isolated from the outer world!

“The outer world has no way of reaching you. You will have no way of reaching the outer world as well.”

“Thus, entering a Transcendent world will always encompass danger. On one hand, it’s because of the hatred of aborigines from these worlds for us, and on the other hand, it’s because of the Sorcerer Palace and Demonic Faction who would utilise this chance to kill you! When that happens, and you can not communicate with the outer world, immense danger will arrive.” Chi Qiu Bai said, “Within the Transcendent world, because of avarice, some Transcendents from our six great Transcendent organisations might even backstab you! After all, with no forms of communication with the outer world, so long nobody present exposed the culprit, no one else would be the wiser.”

Qiu Chi Bai looked at Xue Ying, “It’s fortunate that for Transcendents, usually

before they stepped into the Saint Realm, they would be forbidden from entering other Transcendent worlds.”

“Understood.” Xue Ying nodded.

The six great Transcendent organisations had naturally considered thoroughly over the matter of safety issues.

“When will you come to our Water Daoist Faction?” Qiu Chi Bai asked.

“I’ve just escaped from the Black-Wind Abyss, and have only united with my parents recently. For now, I would like to stay with them a little longer, for an estimated period of one month, before I leave for Water Daoist Faction,” Xue Ying replied.

“Alright. Then I’ll not stay here any longer! The map attached within the communicative wristband contains an accurate location of our Water Daoist Faction. Until then.” Qiu Chi Bai rose.

Tan Shi smiled, “Dong Bo Xue Ying, take this opportunity to cultivate properly, and enter the Saint Realm as soon as possible. That way, we can team up together for adventures within the Transcendent worlds.”

“I’ll definitely put in my best effort.” Xue Ying rose up as well to bid farewell to them.

*Hu hu.*

Qiu Chi Bai and Tan Shi immediately broke through the skies, disappearing from the horizons.

Yi Hong who was standing beside, serving the Transcendents smiled, “Congratulations Sir Dong Bo. Since Sir Dong Bo decided to join the Water Daoist Faction, naturally, the Azure River County will belong to the Dong Bo Clan! Since there is a lack of manpower within the Dong Bo Clan, our Dragon Mountain Manor will provide some men for your command! Should any clans within the entire Azure River County, including the Si Clan or the Zhang Clan with Legend rankers within dare defy you, we’ll kill or capture them should we need to! There are many minions belonging to that Si Clan of Azure River County, with too many of them having governmental positions, and they would most likely bring about a great impedance to the Dong Bo Clan. Right now, we’ll

immediately arrange for these minions belonging to the Si Clan to be chased away! For now, our Dragon Mountain Manor will dispatch someone to control these positions. In the future, your Dong Bo Clan can succeed these positions at any time! You can see that our Dragon Mountain Manor is extremely crisp and succinct in handling orders.”

“Alright.” Xue Ying nodded. On the matters related to the mortals, the Dragon Mountain Manor did indeed handle them crisply, easily resolving any worries of the Transcendents.

## Book 4: Chapter 26 – Turmoil in Azure River County

---

“Then I will take my leave, Sir Dong Bo can use the communication wristband to get in touch with us anytime you need,” said Manor Lord Yi Hong.

“Sorry to trouble Manor Lord Yi Hong.” nodded Xue Ying.

“This is what our Dragon Mountain Manor should do. Regarding the Azure River County matter, I will immediately arrange it, and it will be complete within three days time. Later I will give the detailed report to Sir Dong Bo. Furthermore, we will build a branch of Dragon Mountain Manor on Snowrock Mountain, specially to cater to the Dong Bo Clan’s needs.” Manor Lord Yi Hong smiled.

“Good.” Xue Ying was very satisfied with how Dragon Mountain Manor handled this matter.

Yi Hong immediately changed into a streak of light and flew away.

.....

Noon.

Inside the dining room in Snowrock Castle’s main building, the whole family sat down for lunch. Xue Ying really enjoyed their happy family reunion. Since long ago, he had been wishing for and struggling hard for this day to come.

“Father, mother, from now on, Azure River County will be under our clan’s control,” said Xue Ying.

“Our control? Then what about the Si Clan?” Dong Bo Lie wasn’t afraid, after all he already undergone countless life and death situations and then neatly managed the whole Snow Eagle Territory. If he really needed to take care of it, he was still capable to do so.

“Yes brother, the Si Clan is already deeply rooted in our Azure River County. Their people spread throughout every organization and every level,” reasoned Qing Shi.

Xue Ying shook his head, “Deeply rooted? In front of Transcendents, they are all are nothing! Our Azure River County didn’t have any Transcendent before,

and because of this, the Si Clan could slowly expanded their influence and control over Azure River County. But now, I have become a Transcendent. According to the Water Daoist Faction's rules, naturally the Azure River County will now fall under our Dong Bo Clan's control."

"This is the Water Daoist Faction's rules! Other Transcendents are also unable to refute it," explained Xue Ying. " Within three days time, most of the Azure River County governmental position will be taken over by Dragon Mountain Manor. They will also establish a Dragon Mountain Manor branch at the foot of Snowrock Mountain to accept any assignments from father."

"Wait until our family has enough manpower. After that, you can assign people to take over those positions. Dragon Mountain Manor people are merely a stopgap" Xue Ying casually said.

For Xue Ying, this mortal power was meaningless.

Transcendents had a long lifespan. In the beginning, they may have many entanglements with mortal world, but these ties would become less and less in the future. Some Transcendents even selfishly didn't care about mortals in the slightest, and many of those chose to join the Demonic Faction!

Xue Ying did not really care about other people, but he still cared for his family. At least as long as his relatives were still alive, he would try to let them live in nice conditions.

"Haha, Dong Bo" Zong Ling on the side smiled, "At that time in the past when we went off adventuring together, did you ever expect things would turn out this way? To become the first generation of a Transcendent's thousand year long Marquis family?"

"How could I have imagined? I didn't even dare dream about it!" Laughed Dong Bo Lie.

Xue Ying suddenly looked outside the room.

Hong long ~~~

World Energy swoop down, closing the big door of the dining room.

Inside the dining room, the Dong Bo couple, Qing Shi, and the others were all



startled. Suspiciously, they looked at Xue Ying. Why did the door suddenly closed?

Xue Ying waved his hand, and then five big wine jars appeared beside him.

“Xue Ying, what is this?” asked Tong San curiously.

“This is a kind of Transcendent’s Spirit Liquid,” replied Xue Ying, “each wine jar is filled with more than a hundred and fifty kilograms of Transcendent’s Spirit Liquid. That amount is enough for a Transcendent’s drink for more than ten years. A mortal’s body is more feeble. With that in consideration, this amount should sustain a mortal for more than a hundred years!”

Mo Yang Yu was surprised, “Xue Ying, is it the same spiritual liquid you gave me to drink before?”

She drank it before, so she clearly knew the mystical effects of the spiritual liquid.

No matter how weak the body, the liquid could heal it. Both physical and soul injuries could be restored like before. How mystical was it? She estimated a pot of this spiritual liquid could sell for a sky high price.

“Yes,” conformed Xue Ying.

“This, this is too valuable. Xue Ying, for us to use it too... “Mo Yang Yu want to reject it.

“I still have a lot of it,” said Xue Ying, “This liquid can help your cultivation. I also do not lack this liquid. This liquid is indeed valuable, so to avoid any inconvenience, by all means, do not tell others. Especially Qing Shi, no matter how close you become to them, you shouldn’t leak the existence of this liquid to other people! If you really want to give some to other people, just tell them this liquid was granted by me. Definitely don’t allow other people to know you possess this much!”

“Bro, relax, I’m not an idiot.” smiled Qing Shi.

Xue Ying nodded.

Spiritual liquid could greatly help a Transcendent’s cultivation, it’s effects were even more astonishing for mortals! Actually, if a Transcendent consumed these

five big jars of spiritual liquid in fifty years, its worth was equivalent with seven hundred and fifty kilograms of Origin Stones! Even if his brother revealed the spiritual liquid and gave some to other people to drink a little bit, maybe that little amount itself would be valued at a maximum of around a half kilogram of Origin Stones. As long as Xue Ying's identity as a Transcendent existed, the source of this liquid would simply be a small matter.

In a small quantities, the Stone of Oceanic World spiritual liquid was nothing.

But in large quantities, people would be surprised. The Stone of Oceanic World produced enough liquid for a Transcendent to use for a thousand years. Its value was equivalent to fifteen thousand kilograms of Origin Stones! Compared with Xue Ying's saint-grade protective inner vest and that pile of Origin Stones.... The Stone of Oceanic World was much more valuable! It could make pseudo deities desire it. So before his death, Elder Lei Zhen laid down an array, preferring to destroy it than giving it to the beast race cheaply.

By giving the spiritual liquid to his family, Xue Ying hoped their lifespans would be extended a bit.

\*\*\*\*\*

Snowrock Mountain was very calm, but a severe turmoil was starting in the Azure River County City.

Top administrative staff and numerous military officers within the city guard were forced out from their positions.

"What is the Dragon Mountain Manor's meaning with this! Your actions are making our Si Clan and the Water Daoist who stand behind us your enemies!"

"City Lord Si, if you are still resisting, we are authorized to kill you."

"You what?"

"Go back and ask your Si Clan ancestor."

When Dragon Mountain Manor did the 'cleaning', the so called 'deep-rooted' was entirely uprooted. At the same time, when Dragon Mountain Manor performed their task, the Water Daoist Faction also transmitted an order to the Legend rankers in Azure River County, telling them, "Dong Bo Xue Ying has

become a Transcendent, and joined our Water Daoist Faction. Azure River County shall be under the Dong Bo Clan's control."

According to the seniority, Si Liang Hong and the other Legend rankers were all Water Daoist Faction disciples. Xue Ying position as a protector was higher by a level than them.

.....

County City's imperial refiner workshop.

This was the largest refiner workshop in the entire Azure River County. Many mages researched here along with numerous workers. It was simply a city within a city. A great amount of the army's formidable weapons were also produced here.

Inside one of the laboratories.

The elegant mage, Si Chen was conducting some experiment. Kong You Yue stood by, carefully watching him.

"Do you see it, You Yue? Your previous spell model problem was this. Too trivial, the so called world nature. The more perfect the spell matrices, the more it needs nature support." Guided Si Chen from the side, "Actually, when you're studying spell matrices, you can see it. Usually when you feel it is not natural enough, there's some problem in the spell. Even if you can cast it, the efficiency usually very low."

"Si Chen, you're awesome," admired You Yue.

"Ha Ha." Si Chen was satisfied, stroking You Yue's head, "You try it again."

"Mn." You Yue immediately fetched some magic material to use and immediately tried it again.

The Si Clan was capable of putting their people in the imperial army, they could also allow Si Chen, the genius mage, to work inside the imperial refiner workshop. This kind of large workshop was abundant with various experiment materials. With Si Chen's identity, he could conduct experiments as much as he wanted. If done with the Si Clan resources, the amount of material used would make their hearts bleed.

But using the imperial refiner workshop resources, there was no need to feel hurt or bleed. They could just use it!

With Si Chen's help, You Yue was also able to enter the imperial refiner workshop, experimenting to her heart's content, making her ability improved quickly. Two years ago she had already become a Heaven rank Mage.

But like before, You Yue and Si Chen's relation was still not clear.

Using You Yue words... we are still young, so let's research magic first!

Their relationship was always like this.

*Bang.* Suddenly the door opened from outside.

"We're doing experiments here!" Si Shen furiously looked out. It was taboo to disturb an experiment.

Two old mages came inside, one of them, wearing a black robe, spoke, "Mage Si Chen, starting from today, you will be leaving the imperial refiner workshop!"

"What?" Si Chen was stunned.

"No reason," the black robed old mage also looked at You Yue on the side, "Mage Kong You Yue, you also have to leave."

You Yue was confused.

Her days here were so comfortable.

She could use any kind of material, and she also became familiar with many amazing great mages in Azure River County. This was the place where most mages gathered.

"Hmph, so freely using the material, who do you think you are?" sneered the other red robed great mage. "You have to leave before the sky turns dark, otherwise we will banish you with force."

Quickly.

Si Chen, You Yue and the other twelve Si Clan's mages were forced to leave the refiner workshop.

If they really had the ability and could benefit the imperial workshop, they could still stay there. But Si Chen and the others took it easy. Like Si Chen,

although he was a genius, but to make refiner items, he needed experience, patience and also a long time to finish each item. Si Chen's objective was to practice his magic, with every experiment wasting numerous materials. He had no time to waste making refiner items.

In the past, he had the Si Clan help him. But now the Dragon Mountain Manor had ordered all of them to get out of there.

"Si Chen, what's wrong, how come this happened?" You Yue blankly asked, even Si Chen, the favourable genius from the Si Clan was also evicted, not to mention other mages from Si Clan. Perhaps the Si Clan lost their influence?

"Nothing," Si Chen somehow felt worried.

You Yue become more anxious.

After leaving this imperial workshop, the Si Clan could continue to spend some resources for Si Chen's sake, but her? Why would the Si Clan support her?

"The Si Clan controls everything in the Azure River County. What has happened so we were forced to be evicted?" You Yue felt nervous.

## Book 4: Chapter 27 – Little Brother's Decision

---

That same night.

News began to spread like a hurricane throughout the entire Azure River County and everywhere else.

The news was – the Lord of the Snow Eagle Territory of the Azure River County's Water Rites Town, 'Dong Bo Xue Ying' had become a Transcendent!

Many people were shocked by this news.

There were many people within the county who were celebrating this occasion, with people in the various restaurants and pubs discussing this issue. They felt proud over the fact that a Transcendent had appeared within their homeland! Regardless of the location, within the entire Dragon Mountain Empire, any news about a Transcendent would attract the attention of the masses.

A Transcendent once disguised himself as a beggar, and due to the dandyism of some powerful clan who bullied this old beggar... their entire clan was annihilated.

Another time, a person had a fortunate encounter with a Transcendent, who did not disclose his identity, actually rode on the Transcendent's shoulder, becoming a famous character.

And the conclusion!

Amongst the fables, anything that was related to Transcendents would be something miraculous like the involvement of a huge clan, a frightening and powerful evil-being within the abyss, or something related to deities, and so on.

"Our Azure River County has produced a Transcendent as well."

"I knew it. Dong Bo Xue Ying could match Xiang Pang Yun's abilities at 22. Should he survive, he would surely become a Transcendent. Guess what happened? The Black-Wind Abyss could never stop a Transcendent!"

“From what I heard, Dong Bo Xue Ying started training spear techniques like a devil at a young age, attaining a deep mastery over them. At 15 years of age, he already had the combat powers of a Silver Moon knight.”

“You look down on Dong Bo Xue Ying too much. He killed Xiang Pang Yun at 22 years! I’m afraid that he already became a Legend ranker at the age 15!”

.....

As the stories circulated, they gradually became more and more exaggerated.

But this was very normal. Stories regarding Transcendents were after all, ambiguous by nature.

\*\*\*\*\*

Before noon on the second day.

A Refiner Flying ship descended at the foot of Snowrock Mountain. After which, a group of people climbed out and started to ascend by foot. “We’re Legend-ranked knights and mages from the Azure River County, and are here today to meet Lord Dong Bo Xue Ying.” Six figures were standing at the gate to the castle. All of them were Legend rankers, with the beautiful and enchanting red haired woman, Si Liang Hong, leading them. Si Liang Hong had the body of a Blood Devil, causing her charm to reach a shocking level as all the ordinary guards at the castle gate flushed with excitement upon gazing at her.

After hearing the words of Si Liang Hong, they were startled.

All of them were Legend rankers?

Just a moment later, the six of them including Si Liang Hong were granted access.

“Our Lord is right over here.” A maidservant led the group.

The six of them looked towards the distant pavilion with two men sitting underneath. One of them looked handsome and extraordinary and had the makings of a dragon amongst men. As for the other young man who was dressed in a black robe... he looked ordinary. But the six of them had comprehended One with the World and could faintly feel the unseen suppressive force being emitted from this black-robed young man, which caused their hearts to palpitate with

fear.

“Greetings protector.” Si Liang Hong and the others saluted respectfully.

Xue Ying turned his head over, gazing at them, “What’s the matter?”

The leading Si Liang Hong respectfully replied, “We’ve received the orders from the Water Daoist Faction that from today onwards, the entire Azure River County will be managed by protector’s clan. We’ll all support you with our utmost efforts. Whatever the Dong Bo Clan requires us to do, we’ll put in our utmost effort to follow your orders!”

“I understand.” Xue Ying nodded.

“Protector.” Si Liang Hong suddenly lowered her voice, using the World Energy to transmit it beside Xue Ying’s ears, “Our Si Clan has this girl called Kong You Yue. I understand that the both of you were somewhat involved romantically in the past. I wonder how do you want to handle this girl?”

Si Liang Hong was extremely clear about Xue Ying’s past and future prospects!

In the past, Si Liang Hong did not care much about Kong You Yue. However, right now, Si Liang Hong did not dare to make her own decision regarding Kong You Yue – holding her or killing her.

“You Yue?” Xue Ying began recalling that insignificant woman.

You Yue was an opportunist, taking the most beneficial actions for personal gain. That year, she had made him so frustrated, and the reason being that Kong You Yue had acted like she was interested in him while staying inside the Snowrock Castle for over six years. He had watched this woman grow up from a young girl, and despite there never being any romantic love between them, there had once been some feelings of friendship. But who would have thought that it was all just a facade?

“Let nature take its course,” Xue Ying answered.

“Let nature take its course?” Si Liang Hong dared not to ask any further. She could only obey and let things move on their own accord.

Soon, the six of them left.

Xue Ying did not have much to say to the rest of them. They came this time



only to show their attitude of submission! As for the custom of gifting, what kind of gift would a Transcendent want? Attempting to gift Xue Ying would only cause them to be seen as foolish people!

“Brother, how old is that group’s leader, Si Liang Hong, from before?” Qing Shi softly asked. He felt kind of nervous and exhilarated in her presence earlier.

“Having turned her body into that of a Blood Devil, she has a lifespan of 800 years,” Xue Ying said; “Qing Shi, let me ask you once again, do you really want to go to the Eternal Wind Academy?”

“Mn,” Qing Shi nodded, “As a mage, I would still need a teacher to guide me. I really want to walk further down the path of a mage. Actually, when you fell into the Black-Wind Abyss the other time, I felt regret and remorse over the fact that I did not cultivate properly. That time, I understood that any external power brings only vanity. Only one’s true combat power is true strength. I want to become stronger.”

That feeling of helplessness was something Qing Shi would never want to experience again.

“That’s good.” Xue Ying nodded. He certainly approved of this, “Father and Mother just came back. For now, you should spend a few more months with them. Going to Eternal Wind Academy shouldn’t be too late by then. When the time comes, I’ll help you arrange your stay at Eternal Wind Academy, along with inviting a Transcendent mage to guide you.”

“Mn. Thank you brother.” Qing Shi nodded. He was not against someone finding a teacher for him.

After all, he was definitely willing to have a Transcendent guiding him.

.....

Soon, Dong Bo Lie and his wife knew about the matter regarding their son wanting to go to Eternal Wind Academy. Although they were sad about it, they understood since they were in many life and death situations before! They understood that it would benefit their younger son to go to the Eternal Wind Academy. Furthermore, he was not going immediately and would leave a few months later. In the future, they could similarly visit him at the academy itself.

If the distance was far? There was always a Refiner Flying Ship that quickened the journey.

Xue Ying gave the gold notes and treasures left behind by Xiang Pang Yun to his parents. That year, the gold notes within Xiang Pang Yun's storage treasure had actually piled up quite high. This beast disguised as a human had taken killing as a form of pleasure. He had received countless bounty missions from the Bloodshed Tavern, and thus, obtained a huge amount of gold pieces. After the many years of accumulation, even after being spent on other things, a full eight million was still left behind.

That sum seemed too extravagant! In the entire Azure River County, only some big clans like the Si Clan could compete in wealth.

As the time passed...

Xue Ying spent most of his time with his parents. After all, the moment he decided to leave for the Water Daoist Faction, he would find himself entering the Infernal World soon after, spending anywhere from a few years, to decades, before returning.

This made the Dong Bo couple extremely distressed.

The family had been united together just recently and yet both their sons would be leaving to chase after their dreams. At least their younger son would be at Eternal Wind Academy, allowing them to visit him at times.

But Xue Ying would be entering the Infernal World, and they had no chance of following him or visiting him!

“Hu~~”

A Refiner Flying ship descended at the foot of Snowrock Mountain, with a large group of people coming out from it. The person leading them was the silver-garbed female Mo Yang Qi! There were elders and various elites behind her, and all of them felt nervous.

Looking at the winding path up the mountain and the faint-looking castle at the peak...

Mo Yang Qi took in a deep breath.

The others could feel their hearts beating erratically.

“The moment that decides the fate of our Mo Yang Clan has arrived.” Mo Yang Qi tried her utmost to calm herself down, before sending out the commands, “Come. Follow me up this mountain.”

The rest obediently followed her up the mountain on foot.

## Book 4: Chapter 28 – Departure

---

In front of the main building of the castle...

The Dong Bo couple gazed upon the incoming group of people.

“Brother, how do you think our parents will handle this? Will they just let the Mo Yang Clan get off easy?” Qing Shi asked his brother softly.

“Since I’ve promised to let mother and father handle this matter, we do not need to be concerned with the issue any further.” Xue Ying looked upon the scene. Suddenly, he frowned. The silver-garbed female, Mo Yang Qi, was walking at the forefront. Behind her, within the group of clan elders, was a man wearing a gray robe. He was precisely the uncle whom he had seen when he was young, Mo Yang Chen.

“Mo Yang Qi and the elders have come today to apologise with Marquis Dong Bo and his wife!” Mo Yang Qi did not hesitate to kneel.

*Hua.*

The entire clan of elders knelt in an orderly fashion.

This very scene caused Xue Ying’s eyelid to twitch.

“Please don’t.” Mo Yang Yu’s expression changed as she rushed forward towards her brother, Mo Yang Chen, bringing him up, “Everyone please rise, please rise.”

Looking at that scene, Dong Bo Lie himself went forward similarly to help them up.

“Our Mo Yang Clan is indebted to both of you.” Mo Yang Qi did not stand up. The other elders remained in their kneeling position regardless of how Mo Yang Yu and Dong Bo Lie tried to raise them up.

“Hmph!”

A cold snort was heard.

A strand of tempestuous Transcendent Qi formed into a fan in mid-air,

sweeping across Mo Yang Qi and the other elders, yet at the same time, miraculously avoiding the Dong Bo couple.

*Bang~~~* Mo Yang Qi and the rest were fanned upwards, being hit by the wind. Some of them fell onto the ground, and some were struck against the wall, while those who were weaker physically vomited blood right there and then. Mo Yang Qi and the rest had a change in their expressions as they looked at the icy-cold expression of Xue Ying with terrified expressions.

“Atone for your crime? By kneeling down?” Xue Ying had a laugh of indifference, “Do you think there’s any meaning in using all these vain tactics?”

“This is the dossier!”

Mo Yang Qi’s reaction was very fast. She immediately took out a dossier, hurriedly stood up and brought it to Mo Yang Yu respectfully, “Marquess, please have a look.”

“Dossier?” Mo Yang Yu’s feelings were a mess as she looked upon Mo Yang Qi. This was the matriarch, a person of extreme status within the clan. Actually, among those who were present, Dong Bo Lie and Dong Bo Xue Ying had an extreme hatred towards the Mo Yang Clan. It was only Mo Yang Yu who had conflicting and complex feelings towards them.

She opened up the dossier and looked through meticulously.

“Hum hum, such a wonderful clan with a thousand years of history.” As Mo Yang Yu looked through, her expression became ugly, “These people from the different branches and of different bloodlines actually fought so ruthlessly against each other. So the origin for the early death of my father was because of so many different reasons.”

“Five thousand eight hundred and sixty nine were sentenced to death. Twenty thousand others were charged with felonies.” Mo Yang Yu flipped to the last page before becoming shocked.

“What!” Dong Bo Lie did not dare believe it.

“More than five thousand people were sentenced to death, and twenty thousand others were charged with felonies?” Qing Shi were similarly startled.

Even Xue Ying himself was shocked. This was so ruthless! Within the entire Mo Yang Clan, including the protectors and servants, they would only have around a hundred thousand people. As for those who could be charged... if they were servants or protectors, they would still be considered relatively closer to the clan. Ultimately, there would still be a large portion of protectors who did not blend in too much with the clan. Excluding these groups of people, the entire clan would only have at most, fifty to sixty thousand people.

Charging thirty thousand people with felonies?

Such ruthlessness.

.....

Actually, having strife occur within such a big clan was normal. The moment it was investigated thoroughly, many people would certainly be affected by it. This time, Mo Yang Clan did so to appease Xue Ying's fury and to strengthen their clan from within! They took this opportunity to remove those cancerous opportunists, which was something that no past patriarchs would've dared to do. Under the banner of 'appeasing the fury of a Transcendent', they would certainly make use of it to cut away all the weeds in their clan!

Out of those 5800 people who were killed, more than 3000 of them had no relation with Mo Yang Yu, or rather, it should be said that their relationship with her was extremely superficial.

As for those who were sentenced with felony convictions... those twenty thousand were actually thugs and protector-related people. They were the underlings of those purged clan members, and were directly taken away, sentenced to penal servitude.

"Here are ten million gold notes." Mo Yang Qi followed up by taking out a thick stack of gold notes. Every single piece had the value of an exorbitant sum of hundred thousand gold. In total, there were a hundred sheets!

"They are actually able to bring out such a sum." Xue Ying was startled. Xiang Pang Yun only left behind a total of eight million gold pieces. Although the Si Clan might be able to bring out a little more than that, their entire family inheritance should not be too exaggerated. But Mo Yang Clan had been started by a true Transcendent in the past. As a result, they had a more stable base to build on.

Yet that was a thousand years ago, and most of the inheritances should be of fixed assets instead, such as refiner workshops, territories, big castles, shops, *etc.*

Being able to take out a billion gold was indeed an arduous task.

Actually, the Mo Yang Clan had gotten rid of many tumors within their clan, seizing the property of these people. Most of these properties were actually mortgaged to the empire in exchange for gold. They then added up the remaining from their own clan's coffer, before finally gathering a total of one billion! This was approximately a third of the entire Mo Yang Clan's inheritance!

"Also, during the Clan's Elder gathering, they agreed unanimously that Mo Yang Chen will be the new Patriarch of the clan," Mo Yang Qi continued.

"Brother?" Mo Yang Yu fell in a daze.

The edges of Xue Ying's lip turned upwards.

This was truly ruthless.

Letting his own uncle become the new Patriarch, or killing and sentencing thirty thousand people from their clan, or giving a billion gold. His mother and uncle were after all, siblings related by blood. Naturally, their relationship was good.

\*\*\*\*\*

In the blink of an eye, it was time for Xue Ying to leave.

Early in the morning...

Within the martial field, Xue Ying was training his fist techniques. To him, a spear was simply an extension of his fists! Xue Ying loved training in his spear techniques, though similarly, he loved training in fist techniques as well, letting the power of his entire fleshy body be united as one... this power circulated within his fleshy body, move by move, it was either receive or discharge.

"Hu." Xue Ying stopped. He took in a deep breath.

The air around him vibrated faintly for a moment before silence replaced it.

"Xue Ying, come, drink some tea and have some snacks." Seeing Xue Ying stop,

Mo Yang Yu cried out immediately.

“Mn.”

Xue Ying walked over with a smile. He took up the cup of tea, drinking it in one gulp before taking the snacks, eating each piece in one bite. “Mother’s homemade snacks are still the best. I haven’t been able to eat such delicious snacks since I was eight.”

“There are so many professional chefs within the castle. How could it be that the snacks they make is worse than mine?” Mo Yang Yu laughed.

“I’m not lying. There is truly no one who could make them like you do.” Xue Ying finished the big plate of snacks swiftly, leaving not even a single crumb behind.

A month passed by comfortably.

Ever since he was eight, he had been spending all his time practicing spear techniques diligently. After that, he fell into the Black-Wind Abyss and stayed there for six long years. This one month was akin to being in a dream.

“You are leaving this afternoon?” Mo Yang Yu suddenly asked.

“Mn, that’s right. I’ll be leaving this afternoon.” Xue Ying smiled, “If I delay any further, I’m afraid I’ll become a spoiled son.”

“So what if you are dandy.” Mo Yang Yu felt distressed.

“I still want to walk further down the path of Transcendents.” Xue Ying laughed as he reminisced about his past, “Since I was young, I’ve always loved reading the memoirs of these Transcendents, looking at each and every one of them. I’ve even dreamed of flying high in the skies myself, drinking wine with deities and catching some demons just to have fun with them. Now that I’ve finally stepped on this road, I’d definitely put in all my effort to walk even further. To me, this road contains so much meaning.”

If one were to say that for the sake of saving his parents, he did not dare to slack off in the last twenty years...

Then right now, he was chasing after his heart-felt dreams.

That was also another reason that he did not speak of — Looking at how the Si



Clan and other clans lowered their heads, looking at how the entire Mo Yang Clan knelt down in front of him, Xue Ying swore that he would never ever allow his own clan members to reach such a state!

“Big brother Eternal Wind and the rest have great expectations for me. I’m after all, the youngest person to become a Transcendent in this thousand year period. If I do not continue on this path, I’m afraid I’ll become the greatest joke amongst the Transcendents of the entire Dragon Mountain Empire.

.....

Afternoon.

Having finished his lunch, Qing Shi, his parents, Zong Ling, and Tong San were all standing at the gates of the main building, bidding farewell to Xue Ying.

“There’s no need to follow me any further.”

“If any matter crops up, you can just transmit a message through the communicative wristband.” Xue Ying laughed, “That’s all. I’ll leave now.”

“Brother, I’ll definitely become a Transcendent as well!” Qing Shi suddenly shouted.

Xue Ying looked dazed.

Beside him, Zong Lin, Tong San and the Dong Bo Lie couple all laughed.

“Good ambitions.” Xue Ying laughed as well, “Qing Shi, I’ll be waiting for you then.”

“Mn.” Qing Shi nodded.

*Hu.*

Following that, Xue Ying became enveloped in a bright flame. Having one last look at his loved ones, he smiled before rushing up into the skies, flying northwards and disappearing beyond the horizon.

## Book 5: Chapter 1 – Entering the Water Daoist Faction

---

Enveloped in flames, Xue Ying flew north at top speed. Every now and then, he would look at the scenery below.

As he flew further north, the temperature started to drop rapidly. There were gradually fewer cities and villages left to be seen.

*“Hu~~~”*

It was white everywhere.

The vast Northern Snowy Plains appeared in his sight. In truth, the five northern provinces held these snowy plains as their border. This snowy expanse in front of him... was humongous. Spanning over fifty thousand kilometers, its inaccessibility was one reason why it was rare to find anyone within. Though, another reason might be the beasts scouring this snow-laden area.

*Hong long long~~~* A herd of gigantic beasts that resembled a hill darted around in the air.

“Snowy Plains White-Haired Elephants?” Xue Ying was flying high above them. Looking downwards, that herd of gigantic beasts was over ten meters high, with four thick limbs. Their entire body was covered in thick, long fur. Even if a Silver Moon knight desperately attacked it, he would have a hard time penetrating through the thick layer of outer fur covering! Much less pierce through the thick layers of fat and skin underneath. That was why to a Silver Moon Knight, it was almost an impossibility for them to kill a Snowy Plains White-Haired Elephant.

Furthermore, these elephants loved moving in a herd! Once a huge herd of Snowy Plains White-Haired elephants charged forth as one... even a Legend-ranking knight would not dare to face it head-on. Should any human mortal army come, they would all be trampled over.

“A noteworthy feature about these Snowy Plains White-Haired Elephants is that they are docile.” Xue Ying smiled. Due to this, they could be domesticated easily.

Within the snowy plains, those beasts who were aggressive had long been exterminated by humans.

.....

The further north he flew, the colder the wind bit like a dagger.

“Water Daoist Faction!” Xue Ying brightened up.

After flying for six thousand kilometers, he had finally reached his destination.

The Great Snow Plains had its own mountain range. Along these 500-kilometers long of continuous mountain range, there sat a daoist temple on one of its peaks.

*Sou.* Xue Ying flew like a streamer towards it, descending from the skies onto the entrance of the temple.

“Protector Dong Bo.” A heavy voice sounded.

Xue Ying looked around perplexedly.

The entire daoist temple was made from a single piece of dark gray metal. On top of the wall lay a serpentine carving. The left part depicted a bizarre flying beast, whilst the right was of a huge dragon. Right now, the origin of that voice came from the dragon sculpture, which could be seen from its moving mouth.

“Uh...” Xue Ying was stunned momentarily. This was clearly not a refiner organism. It was simply a carving.

“Haha, Protector Dong Bo.” A streamer flew out from within the temple. An unruly yet handsome man, carrying a divine sword on his back, appeared at the entrance. “Our entire Water Daoist Temple is actually a Demigod-Grade treasure! As for Ancestor Dragon and Ancestor Sparrow, they are actually the spirit residing within it. They have been around ever since the start of Water Daoist Faction.”

“Greetings Ancestor Dragon, Ancestor Sparrow.” Xue Ying saluted.

At the same time, he was internally shocked.

From his own understanding, under ordinary circumstances, only Deity treasures would have Deity spirits! Usually, there would be no spirits within a

Demigod treasure.

As for Deity treasures, they were extremely important to the entire Xia Clan, much more than the emergence of a Deity!

That was because a newly-born Deity would not know how to refine a Deity treasure. Every single piece of Deity treasure the Xia Clan possessed had been passed down from the Deity World or from the Dark Abyss.

“Little brat, focus on cultivating. I’ll gamble with this old Dragon here that you will enter Saint Realm within 50 years.” Ancestor Sparrow said.

“Don’t give so much pressure to this young man. As long as you achieve a breakthrough within 100 years, you will be someone capable already.” Ancestor Dragon said.

“These two Ancestors, I’ll have to first bring Protector Dong Bo around. Farewell.” The handsome man butted in before bringing Xue Ying inside of the temple.

It was relatively quiet within the temple. The mountain roads were winding and snow had accumulated on the surface. Occasionally, one could see a small courtyard on the side of the road where Legend mages and knights would stay at. They would salute respectfully whenever they saw Xue Ying.

“You can call me Gong Liang Yuan. I’ve just entered the Saint Realm.” That handsome man laughed, “This Daoist Temple is a quiet and peaceful location for cultivating. The majority of people over here are Legend-rank mortals. At any one time, it would be normal for a few hundred of these Legend rankers to stay here and cultivate. Only when one feel that he could no longer improve any further would he head home.”

“As for Transcendents, those at the Saint Realm and Demigod Realm will usually stay hidden in the temple to cultivate.”

“And as for Sky Realm Transcendents, you will not see them very often. They would either be within the mortal world or at the Infernal World. It is normal for Transcendents younger than 500 to have attachments to the mortal world. The older one gets, the less they will participate in matters within the mortal world.”

Gong Liang Yuan explained.

“Since this is your first time in our Daoist Temple, the matter of utmost importance for you right now is to choose a suitable Qi cultivation method, and a secret technique! There’s also the matter of your Transcendent weapon and Origin Stones.”

.....

As they walked through the peaceful temple, Xue Ying was first led by Gong Liang Yuan to collect his 300 kilograms of Origin Stones! Soon, he would be choosing a Qi cultivation method.

“Brother Dong Bo, in order to obtain Origin Stones, cultivation methods, secret techniques or weapons... a Transcendent would usually have to exchange them with Transcendent contribution points!” Gong Liang Yuan spoke in amazement, “I could still remember those times where I had to fight desperately in completing the Transcendent missions, and at times, I had to tread carefully between life and death in order to obtain enough Transcendent contribution points. After that, I still had to calculate carefully and exchange the most optimal combinations of cultivation methods and secret techniques. As compared to many other Transcendents, Brother Dong Bo, the resources given to you at the start is a lot more than them.”

“I feel ashamed.” Xue Ying answered.

“There’s no reason for you to feel ashamed. These resources were actually obtained by some Saint and Demigod Realm experts. It’s impossible for any ordinary Transcendents to get a large pile of resources freely. Want some? Then put in effort to exchange them with contribution points! Only a rare few of absolute geniuses like you, brother Dong Bo, will directly obtain a large amount of resources.” Gong Liang Yuan replied.

Xue Ying understood.

Origin Stones could only be obtained within the Transcendent worlds! And those who were willing to risk their lives within the Transcendent worlds were minimally someone with combat power equivalent to a Saint. Only the strongest Saint experts would be able to obtain a huge amount of Origin Stones.

.....

## The Qi Technique Pavilion.

Within an ordinary wooden three storey building, Xue Ying entered by himself in search of the most appropriate cultivation method.

A good and appropriate cultivation method was really important as it enabled one to efficiently cultivate oneself all the way to the Demigod realm!

Even if it might not be that important in some cases... every Transcendent would still definitely choose the best cultivation method. Under the situation where one lacked enough contribution points, it would be better to switch as one progressed. For example, first, obtain a Sky Realm cultivation method. After reaching the Saint Realm, one could then switch to a cultivation method more suitable for a Saint.

“A Deity-Grade Flame Qi cultivation method comprises of two different categories, Stellar Flame Qi and Fire Dragon Qi.” Xue Ying contemplated as he flipped through the methods.

He could ignore the restriction behind choosing one for his current cultivation realm and just looked for the best one for himself.

“Which should I choose?”

“Fire Dragon Qi is more ferocious while the Stellar Flame Qi is more balanced in all aspects.” Xue Ying was deep in thought, before finalizing his decision, “Let’s go with the Stellar Flame Qi.”

Choosing a Qi cultivation was relatively easy.

After all, a cultivation method was solely used for cultivating oneself.

As for the deciding factors behind a battle? One’s experience in techniques, one’s realm, weapon and secret technique were all factors that could not be neglected.

Experience in techniques and one’s realm of comprehension were internal and had to be accumulated over time.

As for weapons and secret techniques, they could be chosen.

The reason why so many people joined the Temple of Earth God and Bloodshed Tavern, despite its strict rules and regulations, was because of the

numerous Deity-Grade secret techniques they had!

“Brother Dong Bo, it is important to think carefully when choosing a weapon and secret technique.” Gong Liang Yuan advised, “You can only freely select one secret technique for yourself. In the future, any secret techniques you need will depend on yourself completing Transcendent Tasks for contribution points to exchange with! Thus, you must really think through this thoroughly, else you might really regret it in the future.”

“I understand.” Xue Ying was prudent in his selection.

“Weapon or special technique first?” Gong Liang Yuan asked.

“Let’s go select the weapon first. Selecting the appropriate weapon is easier. Following that, I’ll select the secret technique! After all, there are numerous secret techniques, and finding the right technique is more important.” Xue Ying answered. The decision of choosing the right secret technique had the greatest impact on one’s combat power, much greater than choosing the right weapon! A Deity-Grade secret technique would result in ten times the difference between two Transcendents of similar abilities in all other areas when compared to an ordinary secret technique!

One could even be killed in a single move!

Thus, one could understand how precious a secret technique was. Even though Xue Ying could not obtain a Deity-Grade secret technique, he would still want to choose the one that stood closest to it, allowing himself to stand on a closer footing in terms of secret techniques with those from Temple of Earth God, Bloodshed Tavern and the Demonic Faction.

Of course, a secret technique still had to be studied. Compared to someone who had just ascended and obtained a Deity-Grade secret technique, a person who had comprehended a weaker secret technique to the stage of grand completion could certainly suppress the other party who just obtained the Deity-Grade secret technique.

But of course, regardless of that, the stronger the secret technique, the better it would be.

## Book 5: Chapter 2 – Vice Head

---

Inside Water Daoist Temple.

Xue Ying and Gong Liang Yuan walked abreast, eventually arriving in front of a big pavilion that bordered a lake. On the lake, one could see a bald, skinny old man, who emitted vigorous breath, fishing in peace.

“He’s Vice Head Chao Qing.” Gong Liang Yuan expression slightly changed and transmitted his voice, “I planned to wait until you finished selecting your weapon and secret technique before bringing you to greet the Vice Head. I never thought we would meet him here. Vice Head is already more than two thousand eight hundred and sixty years old. His life expectancy is already nearing its limit.”

“Is he?” Xue Ying felt deep veneration for him.

Demigod ranking number nine, Chao Qing, Water Daoist Faction Vice Head, grasping the True Meaning of Thunder God, a single streak of lightning unhindered under heaven.

Demigods only had a maximum lifespan of three thousand years. But just like mortals, Demigods don’t usually reach that maximum limit. If a mortal had a hundred year lifespan, reaching ninety years was already considered pretty good. A similar analogy can be made for Meteor ranks with two hundred year lifespans, reaching one hundred and eighty years was considered good.

Only some formidable Transcendents were able to reach that limit.

Elder Lei Zhen had consumed the Stone of Oceanic World’s spiritual liquid as his main diet, cultivating and polishing his spirit body, so he was able to live for one thousand five hundred years. But without the aid of the Stone of Oceanic World spiritual liquid, his lifespan would have decreased by a hundred years. Most Demigods usually live until two thousand nine hundred years old. Of course, if they seriously injured themselves during battle, they could die earlier.

So...

Vice Head Chao Qing was already approaching the end of his lifespan.



“Vice Head,” Gong Liang Yuan respectfully said, “This is Dong Bo Xue Ying.”

“Xue Ying greets Vice Head.” Xue Ying also respectfully greeted him.

The bald old man turned his head.

His body was already very old with a face full with wrinkles and clouded eyes. But even though a long time has passed since he last fought and his strength was still unclear, no one dared to sneer at him. His formidable ‘Demigod ranking number nine’ had resulted from his last battle.

“Good.” the bald old man smiled and nodded, “This old man was really happy to see an extraordinarily talented genius in our Water Daoist Faction before my end arrives. I still remember the time when I was a Legend ranker, joining Water Daoist Faction with high spirits. How brother Zhang Chen guided me back then... But then I witnessed brother Zhang Chen’s death after his life of over two thousand years.

To live and to die.

This old man have seen too much life and death.” Vice Head Chao Qing laughed, “Not many people have lived longer than I have.”

Xue Ying and Gong Liang Yuan obediently listened.

A Demigod who had lived for nearly three thousand years, for the twenty eight years old Xue Ying, was a living witness to history!

“Dong Bo Xue Ying.” Vice Head Chao Qing abruptly said.

“Junior’s here.” replied Xue Ying respectfully.

“As a new Transcendent, you definitely have to make a trip to the Infernal World.” said Vice Head Chao Qing, “Sky Realm Transcendents will face cruel battles inside the Infernal Realm. Many Transcendents die there! A talented genius like you needs to be careful when you’re still weak. Don’t die young inside the Infernal Realm.”

“Junior understands.” Xue Ying felt moved by Chao Qing’s words.

He himself understood.

Sky Realm Transcendents were prohibited from entering other Transcendent

Worlds because of the danger. There was no danger inside the mortal realm for Transcendents, almost all the danger resided inside the Infernal Realm! For the sake of sharpening themselves and gaining experience, many Sky Realm Transcendents would be met with death. It was not as if the Transcendents willingly sought for death.

It was extremely difficult for Transcendents to advance if they solely focused on practicing. Like the battle between Xue Ying and the Shadow Leopard that year, battle allowed them to temper themselves and increase their combat prowesses greatly. That year, a single battle had allowed him to break through a rank. Similarly, Transcendents who sought to walk further had no choice but to seek progress through tempering.

Tempering themselves for ten years would give them better results than practicing for a hundred years.

“Newly arrived Transcendents in the Infernal Realm will go through the ‘Transcendent Life and Death Battle’ that has been specially prepared for them. Only newly advanced Transcendents are allowed to participate.” Vice Head Chao Qing smiled, “This Transcendent Life and Death Battle is relatively safe and will be watched by many Xia Clan members. This Transcendent Life and Death Battle has been held for countless years, some say since the beginning of Infernal Realm. History’s greatest Demigod from one thousand million years ago, the Purgatory Knight Jie Li, was , able to go until the eleventh match when he just ascended to Transcendent!

In the recent thousand years, the most accomplished one is that girl, ‘Dan Qing Yan’ with nine matches! It really is a pity that when she became a Saint Realm Transcendent, she died within a Transcendent World.

In the past, I also survived until the sixth match.” Vice Head Chao Qing looked at Xue Ying, “Dong Bo Xue Ying, you can light a new path for our Water Daoist Faction! Survive until ninth, no, tenth match!

Xue Ying inwardly groaned.

*‘Vice Head’s requirement was so high! Nine or ten matches?’*

After perusing Elder Lei Zhen’s memoir, Xue Ying clearly knew about the ‘Transcendent Life and Death Battle’.

This was a newly advanced Transcendent's privilege!

Battling arranged opponents in a fixed location, this was clearly an attempt to teach newly advanced Transcendents what Transcendent level combat was. The opponents were usually natives of Transcendent Worlds, and even Demigods may often come to watch. If a fight became dangerous to the point of lethality, the Demigod could make a move to save the participant.

In essence, the Transcendent Life and Death Battle was relatively safe, and also provided a rare chance to observe the various natives of Transcendent Worlds.

But...

A battle between Transcendent Life and Death Battle participants reached such speed that sometimes, even a Demigod is unable to interrupt and save the losing participant. On average, every two or three hundred years there would be one unlucky participant who died while participating at Transcendent Life and Death Battle.

Even Elder Lei Zhen only lasted until the fifth match.

"How many matches did Elder Eternal Wind complete?" asked Xue Ying curiously.

"Chi Qiu Bai? He also battled until the sixth match." Vice Head Chao Qing laughed, "Chi Qiu Bai wasn't that dazzling when he was a Sky Realm Transcendent. Although he was still young when he became a Transcendent, he had only comprehended the basic, most ordinary aspect of the profound mysteries of Myriad Existence. Afterwards, he abruptly rose, reaching the point where he could even comprehend heaven defying techniques.

One's potential also could be seen from their performance in the Transcendent Life and Death Battle."

As long as they were still alive, the higher their Battle of Life and Death result, the higher their future achievements will be." said Vice Head Chao Qing, "But there are always exceptions. Rarely, Transcendents with low results obtain high achievements later in life. Take for instance, Mountain Lord He, the number one expert under the heavens today. At that time, he only lasted until his third battle. Ha ha... but keep in mind, you are not Mountain Lord He. Being a Mage,

he loves to immerse himself in study. ”

“Moreover, the Battle of Life and Death is the only safe opportunity for you to become familiar with the natives from Transcendent Worlds. You have to properly use this opportunity.” Vice Head Chao Qing advised, “In the future, there will be no more opportunities like this one.”

Xue Ying nodded, “Junior understands.”

“Go, go pick your weapon. No need to accompany this old man.” said Vice Head Chao Qing, “Right, I see you have already awakened your primordial bloodline. When you’re choosing your secret techniques at Secret Technique Pavilion, you can go to the innermost bookshelf of the third floor and carefully look around.”

Xue Ying’s eyes sparkled.

The third floor of the Secret Techniques Pavilion? The innermost bookshelf?

“Thank you for Vice Head’s grace.” replied Xue Ying respectfully.

The old man peacefully returned to his fishing, eyes half closed..

Xue Ying and Gong Liang Yuan respectfully bade their farewell and then left.

“Brother Dong Bo, looks like Vice Head has a good impression of you,” whispered Gong Liang Yuan, “Actually before, when we talked about you, we also made a bet about your Transcendent Life and Death Battle. Most of us think the highest you can go is the sixth match.”

“I myself am not sure about my result,” replied Xue Ying nonchalantly, his heart only concerned with the third floor of the Secret Techniques Pavilion that the Vice Head mentioned. What did he mean by it?

## **Book 5: Chapter 3 – Weapons**

---

The two of them walked towards the Weaponry Pavilion.

“You can enter to choose a weapon. I’ll wait for you outside.” Gong Liang Yuan stood outside the door.

“Alright.” Xue Ying entered.

Similar to the Qi Technique Pavilion from before, this large, weapon-filled pavilion did not have any protectors within. As for the reason why... it was simply because the entire Water Daoist Temple was a Demigod-grade treasure. The spirits within, ‘Ancestor Dragon’ and ‘Ancestor Sparrow,’ were able to completely control this entire place. Thus, they couldn’t steal any treasures or take one by force.

“Weapons are essentially an extension of one’s limbs. They are the most important partner one could have in a battle.” Xue Ying understood that a good weapon could increase one’s combat power tremendously.

Xue Ying walked forward at a fast pace.

Soon, he reached the area where spears were placed.

“Racing Thunder Spear, Human low-grade, requires an exchange of 0.5 kilograms of Origin Stones.”

Xue Ying looked towards the azure spear stabbed onto the ground. A metal plate beside it gave a simple description. Plucking the spear from its resting place, he casually swung it. *Hu Chi!* The spear cleaved space as it moved. Yet, even when followed by a single-handed stab with rippling energy rotating around its length, the slightest damage could not be seen on the walls of the seemingly ordinary pavilion.

“Low grade human rank is one of the worst ranks of Transcendent weapons. The power it transmits isn’t as excellent as my Flying Snow God Spear, and despite being made with Transcendent materials, its refinement is atrocious.” Xue Ying silently shook his head. This spear was most likely the failed refining

experiment of some Transcendent.

Not every Transcendent weapon had to be better than a mortal weapon.

Among mortals, a third rank refiner weapon could cost more than a million gold. When comparing the value, it does not lose out to this Human low-grade Transcendent weapon. But to mortals, a third-order refined mortal weapon would be far more useful than a Transcendent weapon!

Except, even a recently ascended Transcendent would scorn a low-grade Human weapon. After all, those weapons could only be called the failures of Refiners. Most Transcendents would try their best to obtain a high-grade Human weapon! As for a top-grade Human weapon, that would certainly be highly expensive.

As Xue Ying walked by, he would occasionally choose a spear to experiment with.

“Mn, the transmission of power through this spear is perfect, but its body is too soft.” With Xue Ying’s physical strength reaching the middle stage of the Sky Realm, even his Flying Snow God Spear felt too soft for him.

“This spear, *tut tut*, is a bit too long for me.”

Xue Ying had spent more than twenty years training with spears. Naturally, his excitement and fastidiousness in his selection was akin to certain females choosing jewelry. He could feel the uniqueness in every single spear. This was the first time he ever had so much fun testing spears.

As the half hour mark passed, he had already spent most of his attention examining the Human top-grade spears.

Human top-grade spears usually cost between five to ten kilograms of Origin Stones.

*“The Water Daoist Faction gave me the freedom to choose any treasures and weapons up to a total value of forty kilograms of Origin Stones, which could allow me to gather an entire set of top-grade Human equipment.”* Xue Ying thought to himself. Forty kilograms of Origin Stones was more than enough to obtain a set comprising of an inner vest, armour, boots, weapon, and storage wristband, etc.

“However, if I were to procure them, I’d definitely want to get the best I can.”

Xue Ying turned towards the Saint rank weapons.

With most of them priced around fifty kilograms of Origin Stone, low-grade Saint weapons had an explosive increase in price! Although, this explosive increase could easily be reasonable when considering the gap between a Human grade and a Saint grade Transcendent weapon. A low-grade Saint weapon could offer an increase of combat power of three to four times when compared to a top-grade Human weapon!

“For an upcoming Transcendent like me, a low-grade Saint weapon would be more than enough.” Xue Ying decided then and there.

He already had a storage wristband.

As for his protective inner vest, it was a top-grade Saint inner vest left behind by Elder Lei Zhen, which was extremely suitable for him after he comprehended the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences.

Thus—

He could randomly select any Human grade clothing and rely on his excellent protective inner vest.

That left only a spear and a pair of boots, so Xue Ying definitely needed to select the best ones for himself.

.....

After a while, Xue Ying finally arrived at the decision of choosing his spear.

“*Hong.*” The black body of the spear was seemingly made of some special Transcendent wood. A faint crimson line traced along the surface of the wood, emitting a dragon roar when he tried sensing it. With just a casual flick, the spear would generate that roar.

“Black Dragon Spear, crafted with Dragon’s Blood?” Xue Ying smiled, “It weighs approximately six hundred kilograms. Definitely suitable with my spear techniques.”

Some spears seemed foggy when looked upon by the naked eye. Wielding those spears allowed attacks to become ghostly and ephemeral.

Other spears were more appropriate for stabbing – designed exclusively for lighting quick thrusts.

Xue Ying had taken other spears into consideration before stopping at this one. But since he had comprehended both the Profound Mysteries behind the Myriad Existences of Flame and Water, he could feel that his spear path was one that gravitated toward the balance of Yin and Yang. Moving to an extreme of Flame or Water might produce miraculous effects when battling those of a similar level; however, it sacrificed areas that could easily be exploited by those at a higher cultivation. At that point, let alone fight, he might even be defeated without effort!

“This spear has such a tyrannical name. Regardless though, the body of this spear is definitely excellent.” Xue Ying casually executed a few moves, adding a rotational force to his thrusts and creating rolling shockwaves in the air that struck against the walls. Although one could see the surface of the wall rippling, it was able to easily absorb the impact. After all, it was only natural to expect that those who came to select a weapon would want to try them out.

“However, this requires sixty kilograms of Origin Stones?” Xue Ying examined the marked price.

The value of this single Saint low-grade spear had already exceeded the limits of what the Water Daoist Faction set for him.

“I still have to choose another pair of boots.”

Xue Ying attached quite a bit of importance to finding a good pair of boots.

Some Transcendents might display leg techniques, but to Xue Ying, having a good pair of boots was more important in boosting his agility! After all, being nimble was extremely important during close combat fights. Those who were lacking in this area... Would become passive in the battle! As for those who were nimble, they could certainly play their enemies onto their palm. Even when they had to escape, their chances would also be greater.

“I’ll choose this.”

He had found a pair of dark-blue leather boots. The main component used was the skin of a Transcendent beast, and it was further refined with a mysterious



metal. The boots themselves sported dark inscriptions that gave it the ability to manipulate airflow around it. If one wasn't careful enough, it was easy enough to miss.

"Profound Boots of Fluidity." Xue Ying tried testing them after putting them on.

A transparent fluid force could be seen surrounding the boots.

The high speed airflow generated from his movement could even be guided by this fluid force, reducing the air resistance he faced by a huge margin. As a result of their speed, all Transcendent movement had the tendency to produce a large amount of air resistance. For example, the shockwave generated from a spear thrust was essentially the manipulation of the whiplash effect from air resistance. Thus, reducing Xue Ying's air resistance would definitely allow him to greatly increase his agility. To all Transcendents, as a result of being able to move quickly, any of their movement would definitely produce great air resistance. Like the high pressure shockwave created by a stabbing motion of the spear, it was actually generated by the whiplash effect caused by air resistance. Thus, being able to reduce the resistance one faced would certainly allow one to greatly increase his nimbleness.

"Cool."

Xue Ying was elated in joy.

Having chosen the Saint low-grade Black Dragon Spear and the Profound Boots of Fluidity, Xue Ying went on to select another Human top-grade black-coloured robe that could similarly reduce the air resistance he faced. After all, the Saint top-grade protective inner vest he was wearing already provided him with a huge defensive boost.

"Good. Gather!" Xue Ying was exuberant.

"Ancestor Dragon, Ancestor Sparrow, I've made my choice. I want these three." Xue Ying said.

"Little brat, the Water Daoist Faction has only sponsored you with forty kilograms of Origin Stones. These three pieces you selected would require 118 kilograms of Origin Stones instead." Ancestor Sparrow's crisp sound was heard

echoing from within the pavilion, “Even though you have many Origin Stones, those are still required to be used on cultivating Qi. Cultivating Qi is more fundamental than wasting too much on these external goods. Even though they might increase your current combat power significantly now, the moment you reached the Saint Realm, they could no longer provide any aid for you!”

“I understand” Xue Ying nodded.

After all, he still had over 1500 kilograms of Origin Stones! The Water Daoist Faction had also provided him with 300 kilograms, thus the confidence.

“Ancestor Sparrow, how much could I sell this spear for?” Xue Ying waved his hands, taking out a crimson-coloured spear. This was actually the Saint low-grade spear left behind by Elder Lei Zhen. Since it had no use for him, he might as well sell it to the Water Daoist Faction. Selling and buying weapons in one’s own organisation would be the most valuable course of action.

“Oh?”

An unseen fluctuation swept across the crimson spear.

“This Saint low-grade weapon, Haha, I’ll buy it for 50 kilograms of Origin Stones.” Ancestor Sparrow said, “It seems like you, little brat, encountered some fortunate opportunities. Including this spear into the transaction, you still have to cover the remaining twenty-eight kilograms of Origin Stones. Oh, every time one has a breakthrough into Transcendence, the Water Daoist Faction will provide 50 contribution points. Every contribution point can be exchanged for half a kilogramme of Origin Stones.”

Xue Ying nodded. This was something he knew. Usually, any new Transcendents would use this gift of 50 contribution points to exchange for weapons or even secret techniques! But it was such a pittance that it could not be exchanged for any good products.

“I’ll just have to pay another three kilograms of Origin Stones, right?” Xue Ying felt pleasant as he took out the required amount of Origin Stones before placing them upon the shelf.

*Hu.*

The stones and the crimson spear vanished in mid-air.

.....

As he walked out of the Weaponry Pavilion, Xue Ying was finally fully equipped in Transcendent treasures. The worst quality treasure he was wearing was the Transcendent top-grade Human robe. The rest were all low-grade Saint and top-grade Saint.

“Comparing with other Transcendents of similar cultivation, I would say that I have a distinct advantage in armaments.” Xue Ying smiled happily.

“Brother Dong Bo, it seems that your mood is quite pleasant.” Gong Liang Yuan noted.

“I’ve let you wait for quite a while. My apologies.” Xue Ying apologized.

“Choosing the right weapon is important, what is an hour or two for us Transcendents? Let’s go find you a suitable secret technique.” Gong Liang Yuan replied.

## Book 5: Chapter 4 – Magic Dragon Force

---

Even as the sky darkened, the Water Daoist Faction remained brightly lit..

Within the Secret Technique Pavilion.

Since the first floor was filled with ‘low-grade secret techniques’, the second floor with ‘middle-grade secret techniques’, and the third floor with ‘high-grade Transcendent secret techniques’, Xue Ying went directly to the third floor.

Even though there was an even higher tier of secret techniques, the ‘Deity Rank secret technique’, only the Temple of Earth God, Bloodshed Tavern and Demonic Faction had such manuals!

“Secret techniques are extremely important.” As Xue Ying flipped through a few manuals, he became increasingly aware of the gravity of his choice.

A Qi cultivation method would only allow him to cultivate his Qi.

On the other hand, secret techniques were methods on how to apply Qi!

An analogy would be to use a piece of paper as a rope after rolling it up. At its limit, it could only lift an object weighing a few kilograms. A heavier weight would simply tear the paper rope, rendering it useless.

However, slicing the paper into hundreds of strips and braiding it together would allow it to lift much heavier objects, even with a weight exceeding ten kilograms.

Just modifying how the material was applied to the task at hand could create such a stark difference in its lifting capability!

“Secret techniques allow for the exquisite integration between a person and their Qi.” Xue Ying took up a secret technique manual, reading the brief overview written within, “Some secret techniques would allow the Qi to have a compound effect when defending. Some would markedly increase a person’s attacking power. There were even techniques that could increase a person’s flexibility in his movements. Utilising the same amount of Qi would lead to a great increase in combat power after an exquisite integration of the Qi.”

Transcendents could cultivate several secret techniques simultaneously.

Utilizing multiple techniques during battle could vastly improve one's versatility!

.....

Seeing the countless rows of secret technique manuals stored within the pavilion made Xue Ying's heart feel an intense longing.

"It's not early anymore." Xue Ying looked at the colour of the sky. Even though many places within the Water Daoist Faction were still lit up, he reckoned that it was already late into the night. He really had become totally engrossed in reading all those secret technique overviews. Finding the right secret technique differed from finding the right weapon where he could just feel for its suitability through experimenting with a few moves. Instead... reading these technique introductions made him totally lose track of time.

"Oh yes, the Vice Temple Head said to visit the innermost bookshelves within the third floor." Xue Ying immediately went into the aforementioned location before starting to flip open the manuals, "The Vice Temple Head could see that I had awakened my primordial bloodline with a single look. I wonder if there might be books related to bloodlines here?"

"Mn?"

Suddenly, Xue Ying was startled. He picked up a gold coloured manual called 'Volume of Light'. Looking at the brief introduction, he realised, "This is actually a manual for cultivating one's physique?"

"Who would have thought that there is a cultivation method within the Water Daoist Faction specialised in cultivating one's physique." Xue Ying continued with his thorough search before finding another similar physique cultivation method called 'Magic Dragon Art'.

"'Volume of Light' and 'Magic Dragon Art' are actually manuals that the founder of the Water Daoist Faction, Patriarch 'Water Emperor', sent back from the Deity world?" Xue Ying was brimming with wonder as he read through the introductions. The Water Emperor was actually the creator of the Water Daoist Faction, and an ancestor from the Xia Clan who became a Deity over eight

million years ago. After becoming a Deity and entering the Deity world, he still held onto his homeworld deep inside his heart.

There were several Qi cultivation secret techniques and body cultivation methods that he tried sending back to his homeworld! Actually, there were many Transcendent secret techniques which were brought back by many Xia ancestors from the Deity world. After all, no Transcendents were capable of creating such formidable secret techniques.

As for Deity secret techniques?

Within the history of Xia Clan, even though many ancestors had entered the Deity world, none had been able to send back a Deity secret technique back.

It was due to the frightening existences supporting the Temple of Earth God, Bloodshed Tavern and Demonic Faction that gave them the opportunity to obtain Deity secret techniques.

“These are actually body cultivation methods.” Xue Ying felt excited.

Compared to Qi cultivation method, the amount of body cultivation methods were few and far between.

Under the heavens, the most famous body cultivation methods belonged to just two organizations – Demonic Faction and the Temple of Earth God!

“The hope of awakening of my primordial bloodline lies within these cultivation methods.” Xue Ying flipped through the two manuals.

It was really difficult for one to awaken his primordial bloodline the second time.

There were two methods for awakening.

The first method was through body cultivation. Absorbing the World Energy relentlessly to strengthen one’s body would increase the chances of a second awakening. According to the records left behind within the history of Xia Clan, those primordial bloodline awakeners who were able to cultivate their physique until the peak of the Saint realm would certainly encounter a second awakening! Of course, just by cultivating the physique to the middle stage of Saint realm would already greatly increase the chances of a second awakening.

As for the second method, it was entirely dependent on luck. Who knows, maybe one could awaken his primordial bloodline a second time during a life and death battle.

Those were the two methods.

The chances of a secondary awakening through the second method were too low. Not a single person had undergone that in the entire history of Xia Clan! Instead, it was someone from the magic beast clan who experienced such fortune.

“Depending on one’s luck instead of a manual.”

*‘There is greater hope in a body cultivating method.’* Xue Ying reflected.

Body cultivation and Qi cultivation were greatly different.

Every increase in the realm of a physique required an exponentially greater amount of World Energy to break through! Compared to Qi cultivation, the energy requirement was enormous!

Primordial bloodline awakeners would see their fleshly body improving to the middle stage of the Sky realm immediately upon becoming a Transcendent.

To reach the peak stage of the Sky realm through body cultivation, one would require 500 kilograms of Origin Stone! This was even greater than the amount required to cultivate Qi from middle stage of the Sky realm all the way till the initial stage of the Saint realm! This time around, to invite a monstrously genius talent like Xue Ying, the Water Daoist Faction had decided to give him 300 kilograms of Origin Stone.

Yet for the body to break through from the Sky realm peak stage to Saint realm initial stage, one would require 25,000 kilograms of Origin Stone! This was a greater expense than cultivating Qi all the way till the Demigod realm.

From the Saint realm initial stage till the middle stage, the amount required was approximately one million Origin Stone! Such number would make a Demigod’s heart tremble. After all, most of them could never obtain such a large amount in their entire life!

To reach peak stage of the Saint realm from the middle stage... the amount

required was just unimaginable! According to the words passed down by someone from the Deity World, even if every single Origin Stone from the Transcendent worlds within a material world were dug up, it still would not be enough!

That was why the moment the fleshly body reached the peak stage of the Saint realm, the cultivator would definitely undergo the second awakening of their primordial bloodline!

*‘The stronger the fleshly body, the greater the hope of undergoing a second awakening. As of today, I have many Origin Stones in my possession. Taking out 500 kilograms of it for cultivating my body till the peak stage of the Sky realm is still worth the effort.’* Xue Ying thought. In the future, when his combat power becomes stronger and he possessed more Origin Stones, he would take out another 25,000 kilograms of it to improve his body till Saint realm initial stage! With that, his chances of a secondary awakening would be much greater.

As for reaching the middle stage of the Saint realm? Well, it was still too far away!

.....

“Which should I choose, ‘Volume of Light’ or ‘Magic Dragon Art’?” Xue Ying looked towards the two body cultivating methods.

A few Qi secret techniques could be cultivated simultaneously.

But it was not the same for body cultivation.

Each body cultivation method would have a corresponding secret technique that must be cultivated together!

The supporting secret technique of ‘The Magic Dragon Art’ was the ‘Magic Dragon Force’.

‘Magic Dragon Force’ was a secret technique that minutely transforms one’s inner musculoskeletal structure!

This was quite similar to the birth of mortals.

Some were born weak, while others were born with great innate talent. Some even had huge innate physical strength the moment they were born. All of these



were caused by the differences in the musculoskeletal structure during birth.

The same could be said for beasts of the sixth rank. Some were fast while others had huge power.

‘Magic Dragon Force’ was a secret technique discovered through investigating the fleshly body of an enormous dragon within the Deity World. Pairing it with the ‘Magic Dragon Art’ was extremely appropriate – they could empower the tenacity of muscles and bones, increasing the amount of explosive power one could exert.

‘Magic Dragon Force’ was split into five different heavens.

The First Heaven increased one’s power by twenty percent. Any Transcendent experts could reach this level through self-realization.

The Second Heaven increased the power by a total of fifty percent. In order to reach this stage, one needed a high comprehension level.

The Third Heaven actually multiplied one’s power by a factor of two! Those who could cultivate until this stage were rarely seen, even amongst experts at the Saint realm.

The Fourth Heaven, multiplied power by a factor of three! Demigod body cultivators of this technique were usually at this stage.

The Fifth Heaven was an increase of six times of one’s original power! The grand completion! Extreme difficulty!

*‘This secret technique is extremely formidable.’* Xue Ying felt a great yearning as he gazed at it, *‘Reaching the stage of grand completion only allowed his strength to multiply by six! This could only be a Transcendent secret technique at most.’*

Regardless, what did the notion of six times his strength represent?

Activating his Power Bloodline merely doubled his strength at the expense of a large amount of stamina! Yet this Magic Dragon Force represented the idea of transforming the body’s fine structure such that one could have six times their original strength even at the normal consumption rate of his stamina! How miraculous was this? Of course, being a newly promoted Transcendent, it was

already quite impressive for Xue Ying to start on the secret technique of ‘Magic Dragon Force’.

.....

The Magic Dragon Art’s matching secret technique was the ‘Magic Dragon Force’. After cultivating it, one’s increase in strength would be clearly seen.

‘Volume of Light’s matching secret technique was ‘Light Glass Body’. After cultivating it, one’s speed would increase! The subsequent increase in speed could only be described as terrifying.

One must know that primordial bloodline awakeners had a quick physical restoration rate. The more one cultivated, the more their body would grow towards the state of ‘undying’. This was also the reason why many Demigods continued with body cultivation despite knowing that their chances of secondary awakening were unimaginably small. There were even many cultivators who still trained in their body despite not awakening their primordial bloodlines.

*‘It’s the ‘Magic Dragon Force’ that I’ll choose then.’* Xue Ying made his decision after some contemplation.

As to why he chose the ‘Magic Dragon Force’, firstly, it was because hidden within the secret technique ‘Magic Dragon Force’ were many Profound Mysteries behind Fire. As for the other ‘Light Glass Body’ technique, it was entirely comprised of the Profound Mystery of Light. Having comprehended both the Fire and Water of Myriad existences, naturally, Xue Ying would choose the one more appropriate for him.

The second reason was because he wanted to increase his physical strength! This coupled with his innate ‘Power Burst’ would be more appropriate.

The third reason was because his own primordial bloodline was none other than the Power Bloodline! Of course, choosing the route of strength would definitely increase his chances of a secondary awakening.

“Ancestor Dragon, Ancestor Sparrow, I have decided to choose this ‘Magic Dragon Force’ method.” Xue Ying said.

“Not choosing a Qi cultivation method?” Ancestor Dragon’s vigorous voice sounded.

“For now, I’ll not be choosing it.” Xue Ying laughed.

The Magic Dragon Force could usually be exchanged via two separate sections. However, seeing that he had the opportunity to freely select any single manual, Xue Ying would naturally take the entire manual!

As for a Qi secret technique?

His current Qi was only at the initial stage of the Sky realm. Even if he spent a long time studying it, his physical strength would temporarily not increase at all! Furthermore, he had a limited amount of mental energy. Thus, it would not be too late for him to cultivate after his Qi reached the cultivation of his body. After all, a ‘secret technique’... would become easier the higher one’s comprehension of the realms becomes.

.....

“Everything is finally completed.”

“Qi cultivation method, weapons and secret techniques are all acquired.” Xue Ying walked out of the Secret Technique Pavilion. Right now, the skies were still dark. There was even a crescent moon shining amidst the skies. “It’s time for me to enter the Infernal World!”

All new Transcendents had to visit the Infernal World as soon as possible.

## Book 5: Chapter 5 – Capital of Xia

---

“That is the world door that leads to the Xia capital of the Infernal World!” At the peak of an icy mountain within the Water Daoist Faction stood a door undulating with spatial ripples. Gong Liang Yuan said, “Let’s enter.”

“Mn.” Xue Ying had great expectations within his heart.

Knowing what was within the Infernal World made him naturally more eager to enter.

*Hu, hu.*

The two of them entered the door, side by side. At that moment, when they passed through the door, they felt as if their bodies had become immersed in water. That feeling stayed for a while until they exited to the other side and into the other world with a ‘*pu*’.

“This—”

Xue Ying was startled by what greeted him.

He was standing beside the world door at the peak of a high mountain. Even though it was late at night, moonlight shone across the entire world. He could see a domineering city towering above the land. Within the city, there were nine meandering roads, as if depicting nine different Deity Dragons. Mansions littered the sides of each road, some glittering in the moonlight and others in varying conditions of disrepair.

A majestic palace occupied the center of the city, emitting endless power and influence as misty flames wove around its towers. The light diffusing from the flames caused it to stand apart from its neighbors, a glittering spectacle amidst the night sky.

“Xia Capital” Xue Ying murmured.

“Yes. This is precisely the capital of Xia, the one true capital of our entire Xia Clan!” Gong Liang Yuan’s eyes were filled with blazing passion, “Even though our Xia Clan has met with countless dangers over the many generations, like the

Deity who emerged from the Beast Clan, or the invasion of demons, or even an attack by natives from the different worlds... The existence of Xia Capital in the Infernal World, this city, has allowed our Xia Clan to endure through all those trials.”

Gong Liang Yuan pointed towards the majestic palace that was emitting light from its misty flames, “At the center of the Xia Capital, there is a palace. That palace is the Infernal Palace! As for why it’s named ‘Infernal’, it’s simply because they follow the ideology of ‘passing down the flame’.”

“Many times, the material world would see battles that raged until the world itself fell to ruins. Wars that would tear kith and kin apart until almost all mortals were exterminated, nearly decimating the Xia Clan in the process.”

“Despite our temporary losses, we still have this Infernal World behind us!”

“There are a few billion mortals living in this Infernal World! Furthermore, the Xia Capital contains many important inheritances left behind by the Xia Clan. If the war is not in our favour, Transcendents would all safely retreat back to this Infernal World.” Gong Liang Yuan said, “Waiting for the right opportunity before going back to reclaim our world.”

Xue Ying nodded.

The power of a Deity surpassed every single Transcendent’s power.

Much like the time when a Deity emerged from the Beast Clan – the entire Xia Clan could not resist it. The six great Transcendent organisations did not hesitate in migrating their entire headquarters into the Infernal World! They preserved as much vitality as they could! As the Infernal World is a major Transcendent world, no Deities could enter!

During the initial period, the Beast Clan wantonly destroyed, butchering almost every single mortal in the entire world! The beasts rapidly reproduced until almost every single piece of land and sea were filled with them!

But ultimately, a Deity would still be rejected out of the material world!

That was when the Xia Clan started their retaliatory action of killing!

The Xia Clan possessed a deep heritage and deeper roots. Even without a

Deity, they could still suppress the entire Beast Clan!

Over time, the hatred between these two clans grew deeper and deeper. Whenever a Deity emerged from the Xia Clan, they would frequently exterminate the Beast Clan to the best of their abilities! Occasionally though, both sides would try to negotiate... such as when the human race belonged to the weaker side, that was when they would try to migrate as many mortals as they could into the Infernal World.

“The Beast Clan, the Demons from the Dark Abyss, the natives from the many different worlds...” Gong Liang Yuan continued, “There are dangers everywhere. But since the Infernal World was built in an impregnable manner, it persists until today. The laws and regulations upholding the Xia Clan are decided by the Xia Capital.”

The imperial palace in the external world...

Was merely a decoration!

As for places like Dragon Mountain Manor or the Imperial Army, these were powers directly controlled by the Xia Capital over in the Infernal World! Why else would there be so many Transcendents within the army?

.....

Xue Ying flew side by side with Gong Liang Yuan.

The Xia Capital had undergone countless years of development to reach its current level of strength. Terrifyingly powerful arrays were superimposed on top of each other, each one many time more stable than those back at the Black-Wind Abyss. After all, they had survived a diverse collection of attacks and invasions by Demigods of other Clans. Furthermore, those Demigods capable of invading this far would undoubtedly use powerful Deity weapons to launch their assault.

However, the weight of the Xia Clan’s history was enough to ensure that, regardless of whoever dared invade, they would only face defeat and retreat as the final conclusion!

“At any given moment, there will be many Legend rankers training at the Xia Capital.” Gong Liang Yuan pointed down to the many mansions below, “There

are, of course, many Transcendents within as well! Almost all the Sky realm Transcendents will be located here. Saints and Demigods have their own mansions! Sometimes, they will come to the Xia Clan.”

“If that is the case, why would the external world still have headquarters of the six great Transcendent organisations?” Xue Ying was bewildered.

The Xia Capital could become the assembly ground of all Transcendents.

“That’s because the mortal world needs protection.” Gong Liang Yuan replied, “The external mortal world could be considered as the most stable and perfect world. It holds the possibility of letting mankind reproduce easily, and is our Xia Clan’s foundation! It’s where our ancestors lived in the past. Whenever the six great Transcendent organisations discover any demons from the abyss, abnormal races, etc., they will be required to exterminate them!”

“I understand.” Xue Ying nodded.

The Infernal World was the safest location.

Similarly, The mortal world would be safe when there were no activities going on. However, should something big happen, the results would be beyond frightening! Historical records spoke of demons from the abyss bringing about unprecedented destruction when they invaded. That was why Transcendents must be present at all times, to guard against and respond to any circumstances!

*Sou sou!*

The two continued with their flight. Soon, under the lead of Gong Liang Yuan, they descended onto one of the many mansions.

The mansion’s doors were already wide open. There were guards standing at the door, and maidservants standing neatly in rows within. They had been waiting for close to a day already.

“This is your master from now on, Sir Dong Bo!” Gong Liang Yuan said directly.

“Greetings master!”

More than a thousand attendants and guards knelt as one as they showed their respect.

“This is?” Xue Ying was surprised.

“This is your very own mansion, Dong Bo.” Gong Liang Yuan laughed, “If you are not satisfied with it, we could always get you another one. However... I would guess that you are very satisfied with it. The mansions of nine other Transcendents belonging to the Tranquil Sun province are located around you.”

Xue Ying was taken aback as he looked around him, “Around me?”

“Look, that mansion belongs to Elder Eternal Wind, Qiu Chi Bai. Beside it is the mansion that belongs to Elder Devil Blade, Peng Shan.” Gong Liang Yuan introduced, “For the sake of welcoming you, these nine Transcendents belonging to the Tranquil Sun Province have been lingering around the Xia Capital.”

“Ah.” Xue Ying felt touched.

Nine Transcendents came here to wait for him, yet he had stayed behind at his home for a month. How shameful.

But through this, he could feel the unity between the Transcendents of Tranquil Sun Province!

“As for the guards, servants and maids belonging to your mansion? Hahaha, all the other mansions have the same thing. Even the mansions of Legend ranking mortals have up to a hundred servants. After all, they are here to experience a battle of survival. Any trivial matters would naturally be left for servants to complete them.” Gong Liang Yuan answered.

“Do they have salaries?” Being a Lord in the past, Xue Ying was naturally cognizant of the practical aspects of attendants.

“Ha.” Gong Liang Yun could not help but laugh at Xue Ying’s question, “Rest assured. They are being paid by the Infernal Palace! Actually, many servants are willing to come and serve Transcendents. The salary they get is secondary for them. More important is the opportunity for them to learn spells and obtain powerful Qi cultivation methods, and even chances to learn high grade and top grade Qi cultivation methods.”

Xue Ying blinked a few times, his own ‘Three Stage Flame Technique’ was just a middle grade technique.

“Alright. You should go and have a good rest. Accompanying you here marks the completion of my task!” Gong Liang Yuan said.



“I’ve troubled you this time, Elder Gong Liang Yuan. Does elder Gong Liang Yuan want to sit inside?” Xue Ying immediately asked.

He replied, “Tomorrow, Elder Eternal Wind and the rest of the Transcendents belonging to the Tranquil Sun province will take over in introducing the place. Right now, the skies are already getting bright. You should go and take a brief respite first. There are still many matters to be completed thereafter.”

Xue Ying felt startled after hearing that. With a nod, he did not ask any further.

There were indeed many matters that he had to deal with.

Other than meeting his fellow Transcendents, it was the forthcoming Transcendent Battle of Life and Death that he had to prepare for!

## Book 5: Chapter 6 – Gathering

---

After seeing off Gong Liang Yuan, Xue Ying went back into his own mansion.

It was quite luxurious. There were many more maidservants as compared to his Snowrock Castle. One of the white-robed females respectfully asked, “Master, I am Xu Qin, your mansion’s housekeeper! Please order us if you need anything, master.”

“A female housekeeper?” Xue Ying looked at her.

With elegant features and an entrancing figure, she could be considered a stunning beauty. Furthermore, by simply by observing her aura, this female housekeeper should be a Meteor mage! This kind of young female mage at the Meteor rank... would definitely be chased after by countless people in the mortal world. Yet here, she was just given merely the role of a housekeeper for a Transcendent.

A thought occurred to Xue Ying. Many maidservants inside the mansion did not cultivate Qi nor magic, yet just based solely on their figure and features, they would be considered as quite beautiful. Those few who were closer to the female housekeeper had features and expressions on a higher level than Kong You Yue. However, since they did not cultivate in Qi nor magic, their temperament was much worse off.

*‘So many beauties? The Infernal World sure is considerate to us Transcendents!’* Xue Ying thought to himself. He ordered, “Xu Qin, tell me the layout of this entire mansion.”

“Yes.” Looking at Xue Ying, Xu Qin felt relatively satisfied deep in her heart.

Initially, after being given the role of becoming the female housekeeper of a Transcendent expert, she had felt uneasy.

After all, mortals could never revolt against a Transcendent. Usually, those female housekeepers of Transcendents would naturally become the women of the Transcendent himself! Xu Qin could not go against orders and could only accept her situation. Ever since she arrived in this mansion, however, she had

heard that her house master was actually a young and highly intelligent genius. He had become becoming a Transcendent at the young age of 28 years.

Becoming a Transcendent at 28? At that moment, Xu Qin heaved a sigh of relief, at the very least, she would not get an old man.

The moment Xue Ying and Gong Liang Yuan flew down towards the mansion was when Xu Qin got her first careful look at her master.

Very young.

His temperament was extraordinary as well. Even though he was not extremely handsome, his face was still pleasing to the eyes. That made Xu Qin feel a sweetness in her heart.

“Master, this are where the guards outside stay.” Xu Qin walked with Xue Ying around the mansion. There were two maidservants following behind him as well, “this house is where the maidservants live.”

Walking to the middle of the mansion...

“This is where master lives. There is a welcoming hall, a cultivating ground, and so on. The maidservants are all stationed around you. As for me, I’m staying at the hall diagonal to master’s, thus you can send down any orders to me when you need.” Xu Qin thoroughly introduced the places. Her voice was gentle, showing clearly that she had undergone some fundamental training by the Infernal Palace.

Xue Ying silently praised her.

This female housekeeper and all the other female maidservants were well trained. Within the external mortal world, only those clans with a thousand years of history would be capable of grooming this many excellent maidservants. Even in his Dong Bo Clan’s castle, the maidservants were more similar to rural women than truly trained attendants.

“Alright, all of you can withdraw for now.” Xue Ying gave his orders, before going to take a break himself. He had long understood the layout of the mansion by sensing the World Energy permeating through it, he was just unfamiliar with the specific uses of each area. Now, he understood.

“Yes.”

The female housekeeper Xu Qin and the maidservants respectfully acknowledged, before retreating.

As Xu Qin left, a smile hovered at the edge of her lips. Even though this Transcendent ignored her, being able to live together for days and nights would naturally give them a chance to foster a closer relationship. As for her first impression, she was quite content with her current Transcendent master.

\*\*\*\*\*

Early the next day, Eternal Wind Knight Qiu Chi Bai sent someone over with an invitation for a feast in the afternoon. By that time, the other Transcendents would be there as well.

Afternoon.

Xue Ying walked out of his mansion. With another step, *shua*, his figure appeared at the entrance of Qiu Chi Bai's mansion. Yet those guards standing at the door were not startled to see a black-robed young man appear from nothingness. After all, being the door guards of Eternal Wind Knight's mansion, they had seen many Transcendents frequently travelling at such unimaginable speeds.

“Sir Dong Bo, please.” A guard immediately led him in.

The guard led him until a certain point, before the escort task was passed on to a maidservant.

When Xue Ying reached the inner main hall, he was amazed by its grandeur. At this moment, there were six Transcendents sitting on the floor, and a table was placed individually in front of each of them. This was actually the practice of Xia Clan, in the past, whenever they had a meal. Within the mortal world, only a few big clans who paid attention to such a practice... would employ such a method of eating! For clans like Dong Bo Xue Ying's, ever since the dangerous situations faced by his parents from before, they did not care much about such customs any longer.

Thus, whenever they had a meal, they would sit around a table on chairs instead.

For Transcendents, due to their long lifespans, they would prefer the old system. After all, they would naturally be on guard against other Transcendents. Sitting together would be stressful and tax their hearts. Instead, sitting apart would make them feel more at ease.

“Xue Ying is here!” The person sitting at the head table was precisely Eternal Wind Knight Qiu Chi Bai.

With long flowing snowy-white hair, Qiu Chi Bai appeared carefree and uninhibited as he ate and drank. However, there always seemed to be some sort of inexplicable sadness attached to him.

“Big brother Eternal Wind.” Xue Ying greeted him, before continuing to greet the other five Transcendents, “Greetings big brothers and big sister.”

“Big sister?” The only female Transcendent present laughed.

“Xue Ying is a new Transcendent. Furthermore, his age is the youngest amongst us. Is there any problem with calling us big brothers and big sister? Qiu Chi Bai asked. A man on his left, carrying a sword on his back laughed, “That’s right. However, this is the first time youngster sister Ling Shu is called as big sister.”

Xue Ying mildly noted the man carrying a sword on his back.

All Transcendents carried a storage treasure with them, and usually, they would place their weapons inside. A single thought could summon any weapon in their hands at a much faster speed than drawing it from one’s back! Thus, those who would carry their weapons on the back were rarely seen. As for the so-called reason of trying to get closer with their weapons... all Transcendents had reached Power Perfectly as One, and thus, did not need to carry a weapon with them at all times.

Those who would carry their weapons on their back would do so because of special habits, or for some special secretive reasons.

“I am called Cheng Ling Shu. Next time, just call me sister Ling Shu. Calling me big sister feels weird for me.” That female Transcendent mage said. Her features were quite ordinary, and her personality was quite open.

“Sister Ling Shu,” Xue Ying immediately shouted.

Cheng Ling Shu’s expression broke out in a smile.

“Xue Ying, you can sit first. I’ll give you an introduction. There will be three more who belongs to our Tranquil Sun province coming later.” Qiu Chi Bai said, “Having originated from the same province, naturally we should help one another! If being from the same province is not reason enough to help each, then being from the same Transcendent organisation should suffice. Otherwise, who else would there be to help you?”

“Mn.” Xue Ying nodded.

He could felt the cordial atmosphere within the group, with Qiu Chi Bai the leader! Xue Ying also sensed the innate leadership disposition within Qiu Chi Bai that allowed everyone to stand with him willingly.

Soon, the other three Transcendents arrived.

The ten Transcendents of Tranquil Sun province gathered together were: Qiu Chi Bai, Peng Shan, Cheng Ling Shu, Dong Yu, Wu Kui, Zong Tu, Ba Ming, Zi Che Gu Feng, and Hai Ru Zhen.

Three of them were Transcendent mages.

There were eight men and two women, with differing ages. The oldest amongst them was Devil Blade Knight Peng Shan, with an age of 1100 years old.

## Book 5: Chapter 7 – Preparing

---

The ten Transcendents sat together, chatting and drinking while slowly becoming familiar with each other.

Peng Shan set down his glass of wine and merrily said, “Xue Ying, as the oldest one, I will say a few more words. When you arrive at the Xia Capital... the most important event is the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death! Ha ha... in these last thousand years, you’re the youngest one who has become a Transcendent. There will be many people who will want to watch your Battle of Life and Death, perhaps even some Demigods would be interested.”

With such a long lifespan, Demigods rarely bothered themselves with the matters of ordinary Transcendents.

“Right, you have to let people watch a good battle. At least until the sixth battle! Otherwise it will be disgraceful.” Zong Tu continued, “But don’t think it’s easy to last until the sixth battle! Before, big bro Eternal Wind also had to stop at the sixth match.”

“Very difficult.” agreed Chi Qiu Bai, “Mountain Lord He also stopped at the third battle. The most important factor is that the higher you go, the more bizarre the Transcendent World’s natives the Infernal Palace sent will become! A little carelessness can cost you your victory! Moreover, your opponent’s strength also will become increasingly powerful. Although I had a commendable battle ability at the time, I was still stopped at the sixth match.”

Xue Ying nodded.

Chi Qiu Bai was known for his battle ability, always striving for self improvement. With just the ordinary Profound Mystery of Wind, he could exhibit an impressive amount of strength. Afterward, he comprehended the True Meaning of Void Cleavage, allowing him to truly shock the world.

“Little Brother Xue Ying, don’t be pressured. Just do your best. Although Demigods are allowed to intervene to save the Transcendent participant, the combat speed is extremely quick. One could lose their life in an instant!” advised

Cheng Ling Shu.

Xue Ying started to sweat slightly.

Call himself little brother Xue Ying?

But he was also unable to refute it. The youngest of them was Cheng Ling Shu, who was more than one hundred years old. That was already older than his grandparents!

“Just have an enjoyable battle. Xue Ying has already awakened his primordial bloodline, so his recovery ability is extremely good. He wouldn’t die that easily.” Peng Shan continued, “Additionally, this is a rare and valuable opportunity to get Transcendent contribution points, so be sure to use it well.”

Xue Ying smiled.

He really wanted to fight fiercely at this Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, to expose his brilliance! The first reason was because the more dazzling his performance, the more attention he would get from the Demigods. At that point, anyone who wanted to put a bounty on him would have to follow Bloodshed Tavern’s example and set an astonishingly high price if they wanted results. The second reason, was to improve himself. Where else could he find this kind of low risk battle with Transcendents? Finally, he could get Transcendent contribution points.

One contribution point was equivalent to half a kilogram of Origin Stone!

Winning the first match would award him with ten contribution points, the second match would award him twenty contribution points, the third would award forty contribution points... every match award continually doubled the previous one!

History’s most accomplished participant, with an eleven match record, received more than twenty thousand Transcendent contribution points! That was more than ten thousand kilograms of Origin Stones! Even the Origin Stones that Elder Lei Zhen left behind only amounted to around one thousand and five hundred kilograms.

Of course, that was incomparable to Xia Clan’s most accomplished expert. Ten thousand years ago, Dan Qing Yan, fighting until the ninth match, received more



than five thousand contribution points.

“This is the easiest way to accumulate contribution points. After the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, you have to accept life and death tasks one by one for just ten contribution points.” Peng Shan sighed, “so if you miss this opportunity, there’s no other one like it.”

Xue Ying slightly nodded.

“Xue Ying, after the Battle of Life and Death, you will likely head out to temper yourself in the dangerous regions of the Infernal Realm. At that time, remember to be vigilant towards the natives as well as the human Transcendents you meet,” warned Peng Shan.

“Be careful around them?” Xue Ying frowned, “Could it be that they are able to employ some underhanded schemes?”

“Transcendents have different temperaments and characters,” Chi Qiu Bai said gently, “There are many kinds of people; those who are sinister and selfish and those who are lunatics... Although the death of a Transcendent can be investigated by the Infernal Palace, and once the truth surfaces, the guilty party can suffer punishment or even death! But keep in mind, what if the Infernal Palace can’t uncover the truth? What can you do?”

Cheng Ling Shu also added, “It’s true. While there may be a few people who might openly state their desire to kill you, it is far more common to have people who betray you. If it happens, you have only yourself to blame about your failure to understand them.”

“Most of the Transcendents are restricted by the Infernal Palace, but there’s an exception. The Bloodshed Tavern.” Chi Qiu Bai spoke again, “If someone puts a bounty on your life through them, the Bloodshed Tavern can dispatch people to kill you. Even if you ask for help and we hurry over, if he has already killed you by the time we arrive, he has no crime since he accepted the mission!”

“Just let Bloodshed Tavern have their way?” Xue Ying frowned, he had always thought that Bloodshed Tavern was too tyrannical.

Chi Qiu Bai helplessly shook his head, “To tell you the truth, there are some extraordinary Deity World characters who stand behind Temple of the Earth God

and Bloodshed Tavern! With our Xia Clans' ancestors participating and the assistance from other Transcendent organisations, we can handle Temple of the Earth God. But that is far from the case if the Bloodshed Tavern steps in."

"Ah!" Xue Ying was startled.

Bloodshed Tavern's backing was so powerful!

"Bloodshed Tavern purely assigns assassinations. They also have their own rules, refraining from stirring up trouble that could lead to public outcry," explained Chi Qiu Bai. "To put a bounty on you, the more talented you are, the more astonishing the reward they have to offer. So it's rarely seen for someone to put a bounty on a Transcendent."

Xue Ying nodded.

Bloodshed Tavern's service was a shady one. Their asking price for a life was exceedingly high!

"Oh, right, Xue Ying, do you have any interest in becoming a teacher at my Eternal Wind Academy?" Chi Qiu Bai suddenly asked, "Rest assured, a Transcendent teacher only needs to put their name in and occasionally give some pointers. You can even meet some good seedlings and accept several disciples. Our Eternal Wind Academy already has four Transcendents, the best in Tranquil Sun Province."

"Eternal Wind" Peng Shan was unsatisfied, "You're really fast in scouting him, I've still not started."

Xue Ying smiled.

Chi Qiu Bai was the founder of Eternal Wind Academy; on the other hand, Peng Shan was one of the founders of the Phantom Blade Academy.

"Let's wait a bit, I just recently become a Transcendent and training is still my first priority. Perhaps, in the future, I can become a teacher," replied Xue Ying. "Oh right, my little brother, Dong Bo Qing Shi was interested in going to Eternal Wind Academy."

"Your brother? No problem. Promising young talents are welcomed at our

Eternal Wind Academy.” Chi Qiu Bai smiled, “Last time I went to your place, I met with your brother. He has a nice talent for magic. There’s three Transcendent mages in the entirety of Tranquil Sun Province. Two of them are at our Eternal Wind Academy – Zi Che and Old Hai.”

“Rest assured, I will observe your little brother. If he has enough talent or diligence, accepting him as a personal disciple is not a problem.” Said the white haired old man Hai Ru Zhen.

“Why you? Maybe he’ll be more interested in becoming my personal disciple,” said Zi Che Gu Feng.

It was easy enough to understand that if both of them felt his brother had no talent or diligence, they could give Xue Ying some face and accept Qing Shu as a common disciple.

After all, everyone at the table were Transcendents from the Tranquil Sun Province. It was normal to give each other some face. This was even more the case when it came to a genius like Xue Ying. There was a good chance that he would break into Saint Realm.

.....

The ten Transcendents continued to drink and chat until the sun went down before parting their separate ways.

Xue Ying also returned to his own residence.

“Master.” the female housekeeper Xu Qin was already waiting at the gate. “Master, we have a guest from the Infernal Palace that has already been waiting for more than two hours.”

“Oh” Xue Ying was surprised.

He immediately went to the great hall.

There was a youngster silently waiting inside the hall. When he saw Xue Ying enter the great hall, this youngster stood up and politely greeted Xue Ying, “Greetings sire. I was ordered to come and ask when you plan to carry out your Transcendent Battle of Life and Death?”

The Transcendent Battle of Life and Death had to be done within one year of

becoming a Transcendent! Delaying it for more than a year was considered to be giving up this event.

“En.” Xue Ying pondered for a moment then said, “Half a year. After half a year, I will participate in Transcendent Battle of Life and Death.”

“Very well, I shall report it as so. I will not disturb you any longer then. I’ll be taking my leave then.”

Xue Ying nodded.

This Infernal Palace messenger immediately departed.

The one year period for Xue Ying to participate in Transcendent Battle of Life and Death had started from the moment he left Black-Wind Abyss. As of then, one month had already passed. Since his breakthrough, Xue Ying had not started practicing any of the secret skills or cultivation Qi methods he had obtained, but he was still confident. Half a year was enough time to prepare!

“I need to prepare carefully for the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death.” Xue Ying decided. His training started from that very night.

## Book 5: Chapter 8 – Magic Dragon Divine Seal

---

Night.

Within the mansion's cultivation chamber, the shutters were pulled down, barring anyone from entering. This chamber was quite solid, with anyone below the realm of Demigod being incapable of shaking it. Even if it were a Demigod, he would require many attacks before destroying it!

This chamber was twenty meters long and wide with not even a single object found on the floor.

*"Chi."* Xue Ying placed ten fire crystal lamps down within the chamber, brightening it up with their incandescence.

He sat down cross-legged at the center of the empty chamber. The ground was smooth, giving him a chill..

With a wave of his hand, a smooth gray pebble-like Origin Stone appeared in his hand. It was about the size of his palm with a weight of 0.5 kilograms.

*"Hua—"*

Following Xue Ying's will, the primitive World Energy stored within the stone began slowly entering his body. When the heaven and earth first formed, energy was attributeless. Such energy was known as the primitive World Energy. Absorbing such energy would be less taxing on one's Dantian, increasing the growth rate of the Qi Sea in one's Dantian at a speed greatly surpassing that of solely absorbing the energy from the world.

Origin Stones were similarly important to all the Transcendents – from the lower end of the spectrum, the weak and small Sky realm, to the upper spectrum, the Demigods. Furthermore, using such stones did not have any drawbacks! Some Transcendent mages would try refining medicinal liquid or pills to increase their Qi cultivation rate. Yet such methods had drawbacks to them – increasing the difficulty of breaking through any bottlenecks in the future. As for those who had far-reaching goals... they either absorbed the World energy bit by bit, or they could utilise the Origin Stones!

If such an absolute talent like Xue Ying dared to use any medicinal liquid or pills, he would only be harming his own future prospects.

“Stellar Flame!”

Within his Dantian Qi Sea, the Transcendent Qi had agglomerated into countless undulations of Stellar Flame.

Layers of Stellar Flame began circulating.

At this moment, the primitive World Energy from the stone rushed inwards to his Qi Sea. A large majority of it was absorbed immediately by the outermost layer of circulating Stellar Flame Qi. The remnants were then absorbed by the next layer of Stellar Flame Qi... so on and so forth until the World Energy completely passed through the entire Stellar Flame layer. At that stage, the primitive World Energy had been converted entirely into Transcendent Qi.

Actually, even if there was no ‘Stellar Flame Qi’ cultivation method, it was similarly possible to force a conversion! However, that method would be too slow, and it would be taxing on one’s Dantian Qi Sea. Such a foolish method of absorbing the World Energy from the surroundings would not even be enough for one to enter the Saint realm even when one cultivated for 800 years straight without rest.

Thus, even though having Origin Stones was important, having a cultivation method was just as important.

.....

Qi began accumulating at frightening speeds, becoming thicker and thicker. Within the time it takes to brew a pot of tea, Xue Ying felt his Dantian Qi Sea had reached a state of almost ‘spilling over’. At that moment, he immediately stopped absorbing the energy.

“Just by cultivating Qi for a short time, I can feel that the Qi gathered right now exceeds the Qi I gathered in the past month of cultivation using the other method.” Xue Ying was startled. Of course, another reason he had previously gathered less Qi might be due to the lack of a good Qi cultivation method. Using the Stellar Flame Qi cultivation method would increase one’s absorption rate, regardless of whether it was done through the surrounding World Energy or the

Origin Stones... by approximately twenty times more.

“Next up, it’s time for me to study the secret technique.” With a wave, Xue Ying took out the *Magic Dragon Art*.

Many other top-grade techniques like the *Magic Dragon Art* that were passed down from the Deity World differed from Deity-Grade techniques by a single grade.

Opening the book...

Cultivation methods that described the strengthening of fleshy body through simply absorbing the primitive World Energy were easy to understand. However, secret techniques like the ‘Magic Dragon Force’ were extremely complex and difficult to understand. There were many such secret techniques in existence, for example, Bloodshed Tavern’s Deity-Grade secret techniques specialized in killing – all of them were terrifying. Practicing a Deity-Grade secret technique specialised in killing to the stage of Perfectly as One would mean a frightening God of Killing would emerge!

In reality, the conditions required for entering Bloodshed Tavern were hard to acquire. Furthermore, how many people in the world could possibly cultivate the Deity-Grade secret technique to the stage of Perfectly as One?

Simply talking about this book in his hand, reaching the stage of Perfectly as One in the ‘Magic Dragon Force’ would already be considered an arduous task.

*Omm.*

The golden book in his hand started emitting light. At the top of the book, a three-dimensional sigil appeared. This sigil was made up of over ten thousand densely interconnected strands of thread. Simply looking at it made Xue Ying dizzy.

“This is just the first Divine Seal of Magic Dragon Force?” Xue Ying was dumbfounded, “This should be something given for a mage to ponder, right?”

The secret technique Magic Dragon Force required the manipulation of World Energy in forming ‘Divine Seals’. By placing these seals onto one’s body, they would assimilate with the physique and eventually create a fundamental transformation to allow the fleshy body to be more proficient in generating

explosive power! Comparing beasts of the same rank, for instance the sixth rank, a mutated beast would be many times more frightening than an ordinary beast. This secret technique ... was precisely the technique that would transform Xue Ying's body into something more unique and powerful.

This type of Divine Seal was termed as the Magic Dragon Divine Seal. And the simplest of such Divine Seals was the sigil right in front of him.

As for the fifth Heaven Divine Seal, it was said to strengthen his fleshy body to six times his current condition! Even though the main characteristic of the Magic Dragon Divine Seal was used to increase one's strength, ultimately, with an explosive increase of one's strength, the speed, toughness, and other areas would similarly increase as a form of balance.

"Isn't comprehending this Divine Seal too difficult already?" Even though Xue Ying felt bewildered, he continued in studying it with concentration.

With more than ten thousand threads interconnecting with one another, the level of complexity was so high that it could even render Transcendent mage speechless.

The requirement of cultivating this secret technique required one to continuously let 'sigils of Divine Seals' assimilate into one's body. This meant that there was no time for one to slowly imitate and copy the seal. Instead, one must form the Magic Dragon Divine Seal with just a single thought in mind. As a result, it was mandatory for one to truly understand this 'First Heaven Magic Dragon Divine Seal' by producing sigil upon sigil without stopping. Only then could one say they had successfully reached the first heaven of the secret technique.

Seconds ticked by, then minutes....

Xue Ying poured his entire concentration into studying the sigil of the three-dimensional Magic Dragon Divine Seal. Slowly but surely examining the sigil, he became more and more excited as he realised that each strand of thread that formed this Magic Dragon Divine Seal had a profound mystery hidden in it – none other than the Profound Mystery of Flame! No wonder the book introduced this secret technique as one that was suitable to Transcendents who comprehended the Profound Mystery behind Flame of Myriad Existences!

"The Profound Mysteries of the World could even be used in such a way?" Xue



Ying was surprised. This sigil of Divine Seal in front of him gave him a world of new insights!

The First Heaven Magic Dragon Divine Seal had only contained a shallow profoundness within it.

But it was this shallow profoundness that allowed the Divine Seal to transform the fleshy body of humans! What kind of unthinkable concept is this? Xue Ying had comprehended the Profound Mysteries behind the Fire and Water of Myriad Existences, yet it remained easy to operate when it was done in a shallow manner.

However, he understood one thing.

Even after becoming a Deity, it would still be extremely difficult to come out with such a secret technique! Only those big and powerful existences within the Deity World could create a top-grade secret technique. Just by using a little Profound Mystery as the concept was enough to create a tremendously complicated First Heaven Divine Seal! Thereafter, as more and more Profound Mysteries were used, the Divine Seal would get more and more complex. After the First Heaven, there was still the Second Heaven Magic Dragon Divine Seal, the Third Heaven, Fourth Heaven, and the highest level, the Fifth Heaven!

*‘Even though I cannot compare myself with those powerful existences in the Deity World, I can still take these as a reference for my training!’* Xue Ying thought, *‘I can move forward in utilising the Fire and Water of Myriad Existences more efficiently to craft spear techniques that are more formidable!’*

These Divine Seals represented a brand new world.

And that world was something which Transcendents both looked forward to and desperately trained towards, inching closer bit by bit.

.....

Following that, Xue Ying decided not to have any additional stray thoughts . He began fully concentrating in studying this First Heaven Divine Seal. Even though he had wasted three hours in trying to understand the Profound Mystery used in how these ten thousand strands of thread were formed ... it did not represent being able to produce a sigil of Divine Seal with just a thought.

Xue Ying tried once in manipulating the external World Energy.

Even though forming the strands of thread with the World Energy was something that he could do with his powerful soul, subtly weaving the ten thousand threads together was really akin to separating his heart into more than ten thousand different maneuvers ... causing him to completely mess the entire thing up.

“I must use a single thought to assemble it.”

Mn...”

“I need to understand its essence.” Xue Ying continued pondering over it relentlessly.

As the days passed, Xue Ying would spend his time either relaxing in the mansion or practicing his spear techniques. Occasionally, he would go out to meet his friends. As for the bulk of his time, he spent it trying to study that sigil of Magic Dragon Divine Seal.

At the same time—

The Infernal Palace informed all the Transcendents that Xue Ying would undergo his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death in half a year!

“Dong Bo Xue Ying is going to undergo his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death in half a year?”

“This is the youngest person to become a Transcendent in the past thousand years!”

Several taverns and restaurants in the Xia Capital started spreading the news. When the many Legend rankers knew of this matter, they began spreading the news themselves through word of mouth! There were many Legend rankers tempering and cultivating themselves within the capital. Usually, any Transcendent’s Battle of Life and Death would be something these Legend rankers were extremely excited about and would definitely watch! After all, how often could one ever have the chance of watching the Battle of Life and Deaths of a Transcendent?

The news was broadcast far and wide.

Within one of the small mansions in the Xia Capital, lived a certain Legend ranker. From the size of the mansion, one could easily determine that the resident must belong to a Legend ranker.

*Gu gu gu* A green-robed Yu Jing Qiu was sitting in the garden, feeling slightly lethargic. Long hours spent studying had turned her face pale. With a gulp, she finished drinking a cup of water. The maidservant beside her refilled it immediately once it was emptied.

Yu Jing Qiu rarely drank wine. Instead, she loved drinking clean water.

“Master, master.” Suddenly, a young maiden ran in with excitement.

“This girl... What is making you so excited?” Yu Jing Qiu laughed.

“Master, I’ve heard from outside that in half a year’s time, a Transcendent expert, Dong Bo Xue Ying, will be undergoing his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death! This is the youngest person to become a Transcendent in the past thousand years.” That young maiden was so excited that her face was glowing red.

Yet Yu Jing Qiu just stood there in amazement.

Dong Bo Xue Ying?

He? Did not die?

## **Book 5: Chapter 9 – Cultivating in secret for half a year**

---

Yu Jing Qiu had thought that Xue Ying was already dead. However, the truth was now in front of her. He had not died, but had already become a Transcendent. He would now be undergoing his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death in half a year.

She had always held some special feelings towards Xue Ying. The moment when she was in absolute despair, that figure of a black-robed youth protecting her from the collapsing stone slate and giving her a sense of safety, was something that she could not forget. But she was an extremely powerful and intelligent mage, not a lovestruck child. She had not fallen head over heels in love with Xue Ying due to that event. Yet Xue Ying had long ago left a deep brand in her heart.

“You said Dong Bo Xue Ying? He did not die?” Yu Jing Qiu immediately clarified, “Did you hear wrongly?”

“Dead? He didn’t die.” The young maiden replied in a voice full of confusion.

“Is it Dong Bo Xue Ying from the Tranquil Sun Province?” Yu Jing Qiu asked again. She was afraid it might be another person with the same name! However, the accolade of being the youngest Transcendent in the past thousand years, according to logic, it was quite impossible for the world to give birth to two extreme geniuses at the same time.

“That’s right, he’s from Tranquil Sun Province. I’ve heard that he had escaped from the Black-Wind Abyss a month or so ago.” The young maiden said, “He is just 28 this year! Uwahh uwahh, he’s even younger than you, master!”

“You... this girl...”

Hearing that, Yu Jing Qiu knew in her heart that it was indeed the Dong Bo Xue Ying she was acquainted with.

“I’ll go out for a moment.” Yu Jing Qiu stood up.

“Do you want us to accompany you, master?” The young maiden hurriedly

asked. Her master would usually spend her time studying the spell matrices and rarely went out. Only when she was faced with some bottleneck would she occasionally go out to accept some tempering missions with decreased difficulty. As for the others – those Legend ranking knights would usually loved going to taverns and restaurants for merry drinking sessions.

“No need.”

Randomly selecting and putting on a cloak, Yu Jing Qiu left the mansion by herself. Within a few moments, she reached a tavern that was relatively crowded. Ordering a fruity wine, she sat at a corner listening to what the others say.

Those people in the tavern were either chatting with one another, resting after a dangerous mission, talking about some native creatures from some Transcendent World, or gossiping about Xue Ying!

“This Dong Bo Xue Ying is very formidable. He is the youngest Transcendent in the past thousand years. I believe that in this upcoming Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, at the very least, he should be able to complete six rounds!”

“He is indeed formidable. This year, he is just 28! How amazing!” “I feel that even if he wins just three rounds, it would be quite a good achievement.”

“Three rounds? Isn’t that too few?”

“This is something you would never know. Dong Bo Xue Ying is the youngest Transcendent in the past thousand years. What do you think that represents? It means that he has too little experience in combat! Or that he has too little time spent on cultivating.” An old man reeking of booze shouted, “By spending such little time on cultivating, I’m afraid that his achievement on the comprehension of Myriad Existences would be quite shallow! As for those old rankers who were stuck at the Legend rank for long periods of time, usually, they would be within the top ten ranking in the Dragon Mountain Book. I bet the top three old rankers would have a much more formidable comprehension and experiences as compared to Dong Bo Yue Ying.”

“What this drunkard said does indeed make sense.”

“Dong Bo Xue Ying might have had some sort of miraculous encounter that gave him the opportunity to break through! His comprehension of the realms and fighting experiences aren’t that great. Even the famous battle that he underwent before was just a single battle with Xiang Pang Yun! From what I’ve heard, Xiang Pang Yun is merely in the top 500 rankings of the Dragon Mountain Book.”

These Legend rankers continued gossiping.

Usually, those who could become Transcendents were ranked within the top 50 in the Dragon Mountain Book, with some even in the top 30!

Perishing together after a battle with Xiang Pang Yun, a person within the top 500 ranks, was not someone noteworthy towards these Legend rankers. It was only because he was 22 that year that made him such a devilish genius.

As for the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, it was something that did not take into account how young one was! The most important factor was still your combat power! Thus, being young could instead bring disadvantages to oneself. As for those hundred plus old men, it might be better for them to exert themselves after gaining more experiences!

*‘They look down upon Dong Bo Xue Ying far too much.’* Yu Jing Qiu felt some fury in her heart as she listened while drinking the fruity wine, *‘When the time comes, Dong Bo Xue Ying will definitely dumbfound them!’*

In her heart, she was standing entirely on Xue Ying’s side.

However, her own reasoning did tell her... these Legend rankers’ suspicions had some logic in it. That time when Xue Ying and she first met, that Demonic Emissary was merely an ordinary Legend ranker. Thereafter, Xiang Pang Yun whom he had killed was ranked at around the top 500 ranking!

Very quickly, Yu Jing Qiu finished her fruity wine and left the place.

Her main purpose of coming here was to verify the information. Right now, she was certain that Xue Ying was still alive and would be undergoing his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death soon!

“Half a year later.”

*'I'll be able to see Xue Ying by then.'* Yu Jing Qiu was secretly looking forward to that moment.

\*\*\*\*\*

Sitting at the back gardens in his own mansion, Xue Ying was eating some snacks while controlling the World Energy in attempting to assemble the First Heaven Magic Dragon Divine Seal.

*Hua.*

Numerous threads immediately assembled into a three-dimensional sigil suspended in front of him. This scene shocked the two maidservants waiting on him. However, being maidservants, they were still relatively obedient and did not dare to exclaim and disturb their master.

“There’s still many mistakes. Again.” Xue Ying operated with a single thought once again. Numerous threads began assembling into a three-dimensional sigil.

He continued attempting it again and again.

A few days ago, as he was frustrated over the matter whilst drinking in the tavern with Devil Blade Knight Peng Shan, he spoke of his problem in assembling the secret technique’s First Heaven Divine Seal. At that time, the Devil Blade Knight Peng Shan was surprised momentarily, before laughing, “You’ve already understood the structure of the Divine Seal? In that case, just follow what the secret technique said – ‘assembling with a single thought’. Go attempt to memorise it with one thought for many times and you will eventually get it!”

“Stuff like Divine Seals are created by Deities. As long as you understand the Profound Mystery behind its structure, try to make it again and again and you will eventually succeed! However, if you have no idea about the profoundness behind it, then attempting to assemble it blindly will be useless.” Devil Blade Knight Peng Shan’s advice enlightened Xue Ying.

As a result, Xue Ying decided to start assembling it!

Assembling for a thousand times, for ten thousand times ... the majority of his time every single day would be spent on assembling the Divine Seal with a single thought!

Since Xue Ying understood the underlying Profound Mystery, he could feel where the problems lay when he repeatedly assembled a little more than ten thousand threads into a three-dimensional sigil with a single thought. He need not compare thread by thread with the model since those threads where the problem lay did not conform to the 'Profound Mystery of the Flame of Myriad Existences', and instead, felt awkward.

It was precisely because he knew the Profound Mystery behind the sigil that gave him a knack of knowing which threads conform to the rules behind the Profound Mystery.

"It's still not right."

After attempting the sigil several thousand times, a clear picture was already forming within his mind.

Assembling the three-dimensional sigil slowly became something he could do instinctively.

First, he would try to understand thoroughly. Next, he would practice until he mastered it. Finally, he would assemble it until it becomes an instinctive move for him! Only then would he be able to assemble a Divine Seal with a single thought!

*Omm!*

Finally, during an afternoon, a single thought by Xue Ying propelled the surrounding World Energy into a little more than ten thousand threads which assembled immediately into a three-dimensional sigil. This was a perfect sigil of the Magic Dragon Divine Seal.

"Finally succeeded!" Looking at the suspended Magic Dragon Divine Seal in front of him, Xue Ying felt elated. He continued with his practice thereafter in forming the Magic Dragon Divine Seals again.

Sigil by Sigil...

He would occasionally fail.

After continuously assembling again and again, there was a period of time about the length taken for tea to brew, where the assembled Magic Dragon Divine



Seals continuously formed without any errors. The action of assembling the Magic Dragon Divine Seal had fully incorporated itself into his instinct!

Without waiting, Xue Ying went straight into the cultivation chamber.

Taking out a smooth gray Origin Stone, he absorbed the primitive World Energy stored within, using this energy to assemble the Magic Dragon Divine Seals that would assimilate into his muscles, bones, heart, blood, and every other areas within his body... slowly, a subtle transformation began to happen in his body.

Every part of his body, from inside to outside, assimilated the Magic Dragon Divine Seals. Every part underwent a subtle transformation.

When every single part of his body strengthened, his entire physique would indubitably become much stronger, and his power would increase by twenty percent! This augmentation included an increase in his speed, toughness, restoration rate, and many other areas.

After close to ten hours, he finally finished in transforming his body.

“First Heaven of Magic Dragon Force completed.” Xue Ying was exhilarated. He immediately opened the ‘Magic Dragon Force’ manual to look ahead at the Second Heaven of the Magic Dragon Divine Seal.

*Omm!*

A little more than twenty thousand threads assembled into a three-dimensional sigil that was suspended above the book.

Xue Ying began observing and studying it.

“How complex.” The more he studied, the more he realised how extremely difficult it was.

.....

After studying the Second Heaven of Magic Dragon Divine Seal for five days, Xue Ying vaguely understood that his own comprehension on the Profound Mystery behind Fire of Myriad Existences was not up to standard. Wanting to fully comprehend the Profound Mystery behind the Second Heaven was not a task he could complete within half a year! Without understanding it, there would

be less hope of ‘assembling with a single thought’. Every time he tried in assembling, it would come out a disaster.

“I’ll temporarily give up on this.”

*‘The Magic Dragon Divine Seal is a Deity’s understanding towards Profound Mystery behind the Flames of Myriad Existences’ subtle uses.’* Xue Ying thought, *‘I should try incorporating some ingenious uses of subtlety of the Profound Mystery behind Fire and Water of Myriad Existences into my spear techniques!’*

Spear techniques were extremely mysterious.

If one said that the Divine Seal could utilise a ‘sigil’ to represent itself, spear techniques during a battle would be something that could not be easily represented at all! Even when some senior Transcendents created his own spear techniques, it was entirely due to his own experiences and his own path. Should one read these senior Transcendent’s techniques when they were young and malleable, they would be easily pulled by the allure into taking an easy road.

The path of any Transcendent must be taken step by step in a firm manner, experiencing everything by themselves! Only after condensing their own ‘True Meaning’ with a firm foundation should they refer to other senior Transcendents’ spear techniques or sword techniques, or such weaponry techniques. This would ensure their own resolution was not shaken. Within history, there were even cases of experts who condensed their own ‘True meaning’, yet were misled to taking a fork-road by their seniors.

After all, these senior Transcendents would not be able to directly represent their own comprehension. Instead, whenever they displayed their spear techniques or sword techniques, through looking at them... one could only scratch the surface of the techniques.

Because of this scratching of the surface, it might even caused one to walk the wrong road. By then, it would be too late for regrets!

Thus, one must be fully rely on oneself in tempering and comprehending through experimenting. Even when one went down the wrong road, he would still be able to correct that mistake easily!

## Book 5: Chapter 10 – Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack

---

Time flew by quickly as Xue Ying completely consumed himself in his study of spear techniques.

The atmosphere of cultivation in Xia Capital was relatively excellent in view of the large amounts of Transcendents gathering there. Whenever Xue Ying wanted a respite from training, he would go to the taverns to drink with several of his good friends, or eat some rarely seen delicacies in the restaurants! Other than the few Transcendents from his Tranquil Sun province whom he was closer to, Xue Ying had acquainted himself with many other Transcendents. Over the course of several conversations, he gradually obtained more and more information.

Even though the Infernal Palace had dispatched people to send some books back containing general knowledge of the Infernal Realm, there was still much that that the book did not mention.

.....

Within the blink of an eye, five months had passed.

*Hu hu hu~*

The snowflakes fluttered down from the sky.

Within Xue Ying's mansion at the martial arts field, a thick layer of accumulated snow could be seen. Standing in the midst of the snow, Xue Ying was just like a swimming dragon, displaying his spear techniques with the Black Dragon spear in his hand.

His current mood was quite pleasant due to the snow.

Snow was a frequent occurrence when he was back home in Water Rites Town, since it was located in the north. However, within the Infernal World, the weather here was much more suitable for people to live in, and heavy snow was a rarity. Meeting such an occasion... was difficult.

Suddenly, Xue Ying halted. A blazing passion could be seen within his eyes.

“Water and fire must have a way to coexist together!”

“This move will definitely be conceived by me!”

Having gained some inspiration from the Magic Dragon Divine Seals, Xue Ying learned to more subtly use the Profound Mystery of Fire and Water. With repeated contemplation, Xue Ying’s proficiency in his spear technique increased by twenty percent. However, one day as he was practising, he suddenly had a feeling — *‘When the spear was stabbed outwards, it behaved just like a Water Flood Dragon, unpredictable and strange in its rotational force. But with the Profound Mystery of Fire of Myriad Existences, the spear could have an explosive outbreak! If I could possibly merge this rotational force as the leading force with the explosive outbreak of the Profound Mystery of Fire, then the power behind this move... will far surpass any other moves I have!’*

A single move that first utilised the Water of Myriad Existences, followed by the Fire of Myriad Existences.

And they could be used interchangeably at any time!

This was something difficult to achieve. Still, Xue Ying had a feeling that he would succeed. That was because the Fire of Myriad Existences and the Water of Myriad Existences had many points of similarity! When he was at the palace beneath the Black-Wind Abyss before he became a Transcendent, his own Water and Fire of Myriad Existences already had many points of similarity.

Three months passed as he continued experimenting. Each time he practiced, he felt himself improving, giving him a heart full of confidence.

Winning or losing one more match in the ‘Transcendent Battle of Life and Death’ was not a big matter. What was more important and fundamental is his own combat power. Hence, even though it was getting closer and closer to the day of his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, he remained calm and humble.

*Hong.*

*Hong.*

The body of the Black Dragon Spear was just like an enormous dragon. Both of

Xue Ying's hands guiding its power, the spear followed an arc, rotating into a forward stab! As the spear rotated, a turbulent stream of water weaved itself around it, until the very last moment. When the thrust was fully extended, water became fire! The rotational force of water converged together as one before the explosive outbreak!

At the very last moment when the spear was stabbed forward, flames began appearing ferociously all of a sudden.

"The transformation between water and fire isn't natural enough."

"The rotational force of water did not translate perfectly into the explosive outbreak of flames." Xue Ying shook his head.

Snow swirled around him, as the snowflakes continued falling downwards heavily.

Xue Ying remained at the martial arts field, continuously polishing his spear techniques.

*Omm!*

Unlike the previous violent outbreak, the most recent sound was extremely low-pitched instead.

The spear was just like a swimming dragon transforming naturally into an explosive attack. This was akin to having the swimming dragon breach the surface of the water – soaring high into the skies with a single stroke! The rotating spearhead had a penetrative force that generated a rotating wave that could be seen with the naked eyes! A finger-thick rotating airwave flew right into the surrounding World Energy which Xue Ying was enveloped with.

"It actually couldn't hold back the attack!" Xue Ying immediately controlled the World Energy, causing streams of water to form out of thin air to block off the attack.

This was merely the airwave produced by a single stab!

Furthermore, this was merely just a practice thrust where Xue Ying did not put in much power. Usually, the layers of World Energy would be able to hold back the airwaves, causing them to dissipate in power as it hit against the wall of the

courtyard. But this time, the strange rotating airwave... actually had such formidable power that its penetrative force was shocking. Xue Ying had to use the power from streams of water converted from World Energy to hold it back! Even still, the airwaves continued flying for more than a hundred meters before they could finally be intercepted completely.

“Good fellow.” Xue Ying was amazed, “The power is so formidable.”

“Whatever weapons or secret techniques one has does not influence one’s combat power as much as his comprehension towards the Realms of Myriad Existences.” Xue Ying was excited.

He finally succeeded.

After months of bitter and painful contemplation, he had finally succeeded in completing this move of his.

Even though having a good weapon was important, having a good secret technique would produce a greater impact! But what marked the true skill of a Transcendent? It was definitely one’s comprehension of the Realms of Myriad Existences!

In order to understand the secret technique deeply, one must have a high comprehension of the Realms of Myriad Existences!

In order to cultivate further ahead in terms of Qi, one’s comprehension towards the Realms of Myriad Existences must be high as well! For instance, the prerequisite towards stepping into the realm of Demigod was to comprehend and condense a True Meaning themselves!

At the same time—

By nature, the Realms of Myriad Existences would have an even greater influence in one’s combat power!

For instance, Eternal Wind Knight Qiu Chi Bai had an ordinary physique and Qi cultivation. His secret techniques could not hold against the Bloodshed Tavern, Temple of Earth God or the Demonic Faction. Yet regardless of that, he was still the undisputed champion within the Saint rankings. He had killed Native Demigods from the Transcendent worlds and had even defeated a famous Demigod within the human race in a direct match! All of these achievements

were because of his high comprehension towards the Realms of Myriad Existences! He actually wielded the True meaning of Void Cleavage.

At that time when Xue Ying killed Xiang Pang Yun, his comprehension of the Myriad Existences was considered as the most simple and shallowest level!

After that, during the six years underground, through the imprinting of both water and fire, his comprehension of Fire of Myriad Existences had risen! At the same time, he had comprehended the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences.

And right now—

His insights towards the integration of Fire and Water of Myriad Existences had become to the extent that he was able to create such a killing move.

“Let’s go test it out in the cultivation chamber.” Xue Ying immediately went where he could fully utilise his entire strength without holding back.

.....

Within the cultivation chamber, there were ten Fire Crystal lamps alight.

Xue Ying held onto the Black Dragon Spear. With a ‘*hong*’, a faint red stream of Qi appeared on his body – eruption of his Power Bloodline!

“Kill.” Xue Ying displayed his full strength.

*Omm~~~*

The resounding sound was still low-pitched as before. As he stabbed his spear outwards, it was akin to a Water Flood Dragon. The rotational force of the spear was able to accelerate the speed of the thrust! Naturally, all the forces behind the rotation traversed and gathered at the tip of the spearhead. At the moment when it was perfectly converged as one, the extreme Yin power turned into extreme Yang. Within the blink of an eye, the spear changed into a Flame Flood Dragon with frightening power. The spearhead that stabbed outwards produced an airwave the thickness of an arm.

Clearly, as the power of the attack increased, the vibration on the air would be much heavier.

This arm-thick airwave had a frightening power, rapidly passing through the air

to directly bombard the walls of the cultivation chamber. The walls rippled as the array redirected the impact.

“Judging based on how violent this move is, it is at the very least, thirty to forty percent stronger than my most violent spear technique using just the Profound Mystery behind Fire of Myriad Existences! As for the strange rotational force, I’m afraid it is actually stronger than my previous spear technique that utilises the Water of Myriad Existences by thirty to forty percent.” Xue Ying estimated.

His spear technique in the past...

Water of Myriad Existences contained the strange softness of the Yin domain, yet its power was not enough.

Fire of Myriad Existences had an extremely powerful attack, yet it was just fierce and awkward.

Today, this single move of his... contained the advantages of both Myriad Existences, and at the same time, the heightened the overall advantages from both individual Myriad Existences as well! This single move made Xue Ying’s entire combat power increase by a factor of two.

“I’ll call this technique...” As Xue Ying thought of the moment when he displayed the technique — it was akin to a transformation from a Water Flood Dragon to a Flame Flood Dragon, “Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack!”

Having comprehended part of the Profound Mystery of the World...

His very first killing technique was crafted during the first day of snow he experienced after coming to the Infernal World! Even though compared to the ‘Magic Dragon Divine Seal’, it was relatively simple, it operated on an ingenious use of the Profound Mysteries and was even an integration between two Profound Mysteries. This could be considered as quite extraordinary.

“Mn, I could still improve on this technique of mine.” After crafting the technique, Xue Ying realised this, “And that is through integrating both Fire and Water to perfection!”

The Profound Mystery of the World fundamentally contained everything.

All these Profound Mysteries belonged to the laws of the world!



As a result, even though the Profound Mystery might seem different, they could still be able to integrate together perfectly. Naturally, Water and Fire could integrate together perfectly, even to the extent of becoming a single entity! Right now, Xue Ying could only combine both Mysteries in a simple manner.

.....

In the Xia Capital, within the many restaurants and taverns, most places had a similar discussion going on — the upcoming Transcendent Battle of Life and Death!

“Geng Qing, you’ve actually come to the Infernal World? I reckon it has been close to a little more than a hundred years since you’ve come.”

“Haha, I’ve heard that the youngest Transcendent in the past thousand years is going to have his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death soon. How can I ever miss such an event?”

“I knew it! Even still, Geng Qing, how many rounds do you think this Dong Bo Xue Ying brat will pass through in this Transcendent Battle of Life and Death?”

“This is something very difficult to estimate. He is too young, but he should be able to get through three rounds. Maybe he might even reach round four or five. Round six will be too dangerous for him.”

Today, within the Xia Capital...

Many Transcendents whom would never meet each other, have come to the Infernal World. Most of them would talk about Xue Ying!

The youngest Transcendent in the past thousand years was going to start his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death shortly! This was something extremely alluring. Actually, even it was the normal ‘Transcendent Battle of Life and Death’, many people would still come. After all, even if they were Transcendents... they would still like to gather together and enjoy the liveliness of the crowd.

.....

Night.

At the back gardens.

Xue Ying was drinking wine by himself while looking at the bright moon

hanging in the sky. Currently, there were countless people in the Xia Capital looking forward to the event tomorrow – Xue Ying’s Transcendent Battle of Life and Death. At that time, many mortals like the female housekeeper Xu Qin would partake in the event as the audience.

“Tomorrow.” Xue Ying said softly to himself, before smiling, “I hope I’ll not embarrass myself.”

## Book 5: Chapter 11 – The Hall of Life and Death

---

Dragon Mountain Calendar, Year 9637, 18th of January, morning.

Qiu Chi Bai, Peng Shan, Cheng Ling Shu, Dong Yu, Wu Kui, Zi Che Gu Feng and the rest of the Transcendents from Tranquil Sun Province went down to Xue Ying's mansion.

"Brother Xue Ying, how are you still so calm? Drinking by yourself?" The burly man Ba Ming exclaimed.

"How am I calm? I am feeling so anxious." Xue Ying laughed, "If I cared less, I'm afraid that I would be sleeping all the way until this moment!" Actually, for Transcendents, sleep was not necessary! To them, sleeping would simply enable them to have the largest degree of relaxing and recovery of their mental fortitude. Thus, many of the Transcendents would still frequently sleep.

"Whether you are anxious or not, this Transcendent Battle of Life and Death is still something that you cannot avoid. Let's go, we'll accompany you to the Infernal Palace Hall of Life and Death." Qiu Chi Bai quipped.

Cheng Ling Shu added, "Little brother Xue Ying, I've won just two rounds in the past. During the third round, I'd lost the match. However, I firmly believe that you will win, at the very least, seven matches! Haha, you'll then become someone more formidable than brother Eternal Wind."

Peng Shan hurriedly added, "Xue Ying, little sister Ling Shu even specially placed a bet on you winning more than six matches!"

"Gamble?" Xue Ying was startled as he looked towards Cheng Ling Shu, "Sister Ling Shu, you are gambling?"

Mages were normally intelligent people governed by reason. As a female Transcendent mage, Cheng Ling Shu was actually gambling?

"I'm just playing around, just playing." Cheng Ling Shu added shyly, "Sometimes, gambling is still very interesting. I've bet on you winning more than six matches! You must at the very least, win seven matches before I can win

something.”

“At least seven matches? I do not have the assurance for that.” Xue Ying replied.

“Ai... I’ve no choice. The odds for the other bets are too low, and the risk of betting on the outcome of a single match is too high! Thus, I decided to just bet that you will win more than six rounds.” Cheng Ling Shu looked at Xue Ying with great expectations, “Little brother Xue Ying, I believe you will succeed.”

The group of them continued chatting.

“It’s about time. Let’s go.” Qiu Chi Bai said.

“Mn, let’s go to the Infernal Palace.” Each of them stood up, and walked out of the hall.

Xue Ying looked towards the female housekeeper, Xu Qin, telling her, “You just need to leave behind some people today to take care of the mansion. If the rest of the staff wants to go and watch the match, they may go.”

“Thank you master.” Xu Qin immediately replied excitedly.

“Let’s go.”

Xue Ying and the other nine Transcendents flew towards the Infernal Palace after exiting from the mansion.

.....

Flying high up in the sky, a single glimpse was enough to see that the closer they got to the Infernal Palace, the more crowded it got – dense groups of people were rushing towards the palace.

“Never even once in my daily life here in the Xia Capital have I ever seen so many people.” Xue Ying was amazed as he looked down at the crowd.

“There are many mortals.” Peng Shan answered, “I’m afraid that more than half of the entire population of mortals in Xia Capital will rush here to the Hall of Life and Death to watch this battle. For them, being able to watch the life and death fights of a Transcendent... is entirely worth the effort! Furthermore, their masters, either Transcendents or Legend rankers, would certainly allow most servants and maidservants to watch as well.”

Zi Che Gu Feng and the rest of the Transcendents were all full of smiles.

It was seldom that the place bustled with so many people.

“Outside in the external world, most mortals never even have the chance to see a Transcendent in their lives, so it’s an extremely fortunate opportunity for the mortals living here in the Xia capital. Not only do they see Transcendents frequently, they get to view battles between Transcendents as well.” Zong Tu appraised.

Xue Ying nodded.

Even if the Transcendent Battle of Life and Deaths were frequent, there would only be one usually in a few years. The shortest period was about once in two years, while the longest period one might have to wait would be more than five years!

“It’s only that this time, Xue Ying, you are the youngest Transcendent in the past thousand years. As a result, your battle will be extremely alluring. Even many Transcendents have come from the other worlds to the Infernal World, temporarily stopping their adventures! When those Transcendents make the decision to come to the Infernal World, many others who want to meet up with their Transcendent friends will also rush back here as well.” Qiu Chi Bai said, “I estimate that amongst all the human Transcendents, at least 70 to 80 percent of them will be coming back to watch this match!”

While they were having their conversation, Xue Ying and the rest had reached the Infernal Palace. The Infernal Palace was located at the heart of the entire Xia Capital, occupying a huge region and holding many halls within.

Within these halls, the ‘Hall of Life and Death’ was the location where Transcendent Battle of Life and Deaths were held!

*Hu.*

Being Transcendents, they could enter the Hall of Life and Death from the front door.

“Such a big battleground.” Having entered, Xue Ying could see the vast battleground in the middle of the Hall of Life and Death. The field was about one to one-and-a-half kilometers in radius, filled with undulating mountains and

streams flowing by in the surroundings.

Even with the middle battleground taking up so much space, there was of such an enormous area taken up by the palace...

The surrounding viewing platform was even more humongous, with the eastern viewing platform being especially spacious, since only Transcendents could enter this platform! The western platform was a location where mortals could sit and watch the battle. Many mortals were seen densely crowded as they sat. The two to two-and-a-half kilometers square platform was enough to hold up to a million people! But at the very least, these mortals could sit.

“Xue Ying, follow me.” Qiu Chi Bai led him onwards, “I’ll bring you to see the Faction Head.”

“Faction Head?” Xue Ying understood immediately as he followed.

Due to the eastern viewing platform having such a spacious area, and since only Transcendents could enter, the audience was quite sparse. Usually those who were closer in relation sat together.

Soon, Xue Ying saw the two figures sitting right at the front.

“Greetings Faction Head, Mountain Lord He.” Qiu Chi Bai bowed slightly, with Xue Ying following him from behind.

“It’s Eternal Wind.” The Faction Head glanced at Qiu Chi Bai, before casually turning to give Xue Ying a serene look.

Xue Ying could feel the unseen pressure.

Demigod ranking number five: Si Kong Yang, Water Daoist Faction Faction Head, condensed the ‘True Deity Heart’.

One must know that amongst all of the Demigods from the human race, the natives of Transcendent worlds, and the those of the Beast Clan, only four of them were able to condense the True Deity Heart! Faction Faction Head Si Kong Yang was one of them.

Si Kong Yang was someone that was similar to a sun, emitting out light and heat, and making it hard for anyone to look at him directly. As for the Mountain Lord He who was beside him... he was someone being termed as the number one

under the heavens. Mountain Lord He gave others a feeling of being unable to see the end of the mountain ranges, a distant feeling that did not produce an extreme pressure on the others.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying.” The Faction Head Si Kong Yang said, “The Demigods who came this time to watch the battle are aplenty. They wish to see how the youngest Transcendent in the past thousand years will fare in the upcoming battle. I, too, am curious about it.”

“I, Dong Bo Xue Ying, will put in my utmost effort.” Xue Ying replied.

“Go and prepare yourself well. You will be entering soon.” Si Kong Yang said. The Mountain Lord He beside him did not open his mouth, and had only give him a light smile.

Actually, for these Demigods standing at the peak, their focus on extremely talented geniuses was limited.

That was because a Demigod would live for three thousand years.

These three thousand years would be enough for many extremely talented geniuses to emerge! However, in reality, those who could become Demigods were usually Transcendents who had a low key identity. Becoming an extreme talent at the beginning... would only allow one to say that he would have a great certainty in becoming a Saint. As for the realm of Demigod? That would be too hard for one to say. Like Qiu Chi Bai, being the number one on the Saint rankings, he could even defeat Demigods from the human race.

Thus, his status would be extremely high. According to this reasoning, he need not treat Xue Ying so closely, but Qiu Chi Bai did not mind. He had a close relationship with all of the Transcendents from the Tranquil Sun Province. This was also the reason why the nine Transcendents from Tranquil Sun Province admired and respected him.

Qiu Chi Bai was only at the peak stage of Saint realm, and yet, he already had the combat power of a Demigod!

Many people considered him to be the number one figure under the heavens in the future.

.....

A large amount of mortals were coming in endlessly into the hall before getting seated.

Yu Jing Qiu and several Legend rankers whom she was close with similarly entered the field and seated themselves. They were all seated at the western platform, and due to a layer of invisible power blocking their vision, there were no possibilities of seeing the Transcendents of the eastern region.

“Sister Jing Qiu, Dong Bo Xue Ying is someone who’s a part of our Tranquil Sun Province. I’ve heard that he even hails from the same Azure River County as you.” The Legend rankers beside her commented.

“Mn.” Yu Jing Qiu smiled. She was quite nervous... waiting for the moment Xue Ying entered the battleground below.



## Book 5: Chapter 12 – Begin

---

Eastern Area, more and more Transcendents arrived at Hall of Life and Death. Demigods also came one by one.

A bald, skinny old man also strolled inside.

“Old brother Chao,” greeted Faction Head Si Kong Yang. When he spied the bald, skinny old man from a distance, he immediately came and greeted him. Although Si Kong Yang was the Head of the Water Daoist Faction, one of the three strongest Transcendents, but when he was still young and weak, Chao Qing had already become an almighty Demigod! Moreover, Chao Qing was quite supportive towards him. He also saved Si Kong Yang’s life before, so Si Kong Yang was filled with veneration for Chao Qing.

“Faction Head.” Chao Qing’s shriveled face smiled. He slightly nodded but did not approach Si Kong Yang. Instead, he walked in the other direction.

Xue Ying and the other Transcendents from Tranquil Sun Province were sitting and chatting together. When they saw Vice Head Chao Qing, all of them, one by one, stood up.

“Sit.” Chao Qing laughed, then looked at Xue Ying, “Lad, don’t embarrass our Water Daoist Faction. Whatever happens, you have to win the first three matches. Of course the best outcome was to win eight or nine matches.”

“Understood,” replied Xue Ying.

Chao Qing didn’t stop, he continue to walk into the distance.

A hunchbacked old madam sat in a corner of the eastern viewing platform. A layer of faint red mist hovered around the old madam. No Transcendents dared to stay within ten meters around the old madam, but Chao Qing went directly into the mist. The red mist automatically made a way for him, allowing Chao Qing to walk until he arrived and sat beside the old madam.

“Beautiful Ye, you also came,” chuckled Chao Qing.

It was indeed interesting that he called a hunchbacked, wrinkled elderly

woman beautiful.

But if you looked at this old madam carefully, you could faintly see that she was indeed a very beautiful lady when she was young.

She was the number ten in Demigod ranking, “Killer Goddess” Ye Mei, Great Leader of Bloodshed Tavern! The number one assassin, and also the only one that both the Temple of the Earth God and the Bloodshed Tavern, these two extraordinary powers, listed in their top ten ranking.

Being in the Demigod ranking couldn’t completely illustrate their strength.

For example, Ye Gui, her killing and slaughtering methods were extremely terrifying. Her fighting strength was ranked as tenth strongest, but her killing... everyone under the heavens trembled upon viewing her.

The Sea Deity Palace Empress was another oddity. Although she was only number eight in the Demigod ranking, her battle prowess within the ocean was unparalleled! No one could beat her in the ocean, even if the top three Demigods worked together. On the ocean, their combined power still wouldn’t beat the Sea Deity Palace Empress.

Because everyone had their own comprehension towards the nature of heaven and earth!

Because of the Deity treasure they wielded!

Every Demigod had their own specialty!

“You, this old rotten man also came?” snickered Madam Ye.

“This is my Water Daoist Faction’s young talent. Of course I’m coming,” said Chao Qing proudly.

“Yes, the youngest one.” Old Madam Ye sighed, “Looking at the young Transcendents and feeling their youthfulness, sigh, we’re already old. The friends we knew when we were young, have already died one by one. Some died young and some died old, but not many are left. Thankfully, there’s still you, this rotten old man that’s older than me.”

“You and I have not much different in age. You are the second oldest under the heavens,” replied Chao Qing.

“You rotten old man want to especially annoy me? Look at your proud self. Wait until your Water Daoist Faction young talent fails at an early match. Let’s see if you are still full of pride when that time comes,” sneered Madam Ye.

“Fail? At the worst, he will win six matches!” glared Chao Qing.

“Says you.” Madam Ye’s eyes lit up, “Let both of us make a bet. I’ll bet this child can’t win more than six matches!”

“You want to bet. Just bet. Who’s afraid?”

An old man and old woman bickered.

But no Transcendents in the distance dared to disturb them. Because the older the Demigod, the more frightening they became. These kinds of old people... no one clearly knew the limits of their strength. Just like how the Mountain Lord He, Faction Head Si Kong Yang, and the others venerated Chao Qing, they also venerated Madam Ye.

Of course, these two were the two oldest among humankind, not including the Beast race and Transcendent world natives.

Beast race and Transcendent world natives, because of their physical body structure, had different life spans from humankind!

.....

There was another Demigod who approached Faction Head Si Kong Yang and Mountain Lord He. Wearing white clothes, her appearance was extremely breathtaking. She floated down and then sat. Although she was a beautiful lady, she had a pair of sword-like eyebrows, making her have a heroic aura.

“City Lord Bu.” Si Kong Yang and Mountain Lord He politely greeted her.

The one who came was from one of the six great Transcendents organizations, Cloud Mist City. She was the city lord. Hailed as the most beautiful among Demigods, there were currently two Demigods pursuing her.

“Si Kong Yang, you’re looking very proud,” commented City Lord Bu after she sat down, “but young talent does not always represent formidability. Since ancient times, many young talents who become Transcendents when they were still young ... later all vanished. Maybe your Water Daoist Faction’s Dong Bo Xue

Ying will also be like that. Maybe he can't win more than three matches."

"What City Lord Bu said is true!" Si Kong Yang immediately echoed her.

Mountain Lord He also nodded.

Among these Demigods, who didn't know City Lord Bu's temper? She was hailed as the most beautiful Demigod, and was also a top expert listed within the Demigod ranking. But no human Transcendents could defeat her competitiveness and aggressiveness.

"Really boring." City Lord Bu took a cup of wine; she then sat leisurely while drinking, waiting for the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death to get started.

\*\*\*\*\*

*Hong Long Long...* The Hall of Life and Death's great doors closed slowly. At the same time, the whole Hall fell silent. Hundreds of thousands of Transcendents on the east side grew quiet, and everyone's gaze turned towards the battle arena.

"Xue Ying, it is starting." Chi Qiu Bai, Peng Shan, Cheng Ling Shu, Hai Ru Zhen, all of them looked at Xue Ying.

"This battle is your way to show your battle prowess in front of all the Human Transcendents." Said Chi Qiu Bai, "Infernal Palace will use this battle to assess your potential. Likewise, Bloodshed Tavern will do the same. If you have high potential and if someone wants to put a bounty on you... Bloodshed Tavern will quote them a high price for your bounty! The Infernal Palace also will pay attention to you, allocating some resources for you."

"Becoming a Transcendent at a young age does not guarantee that person to have a bright future."

"But a Transcendent that performs brilliantly at the Transcendent Life and Death Battle, not one of them is ordinary." Encouraged Chi Qiu Bai.

Xue Ying grinned, "I will try my hardest."

Suddenly

*Dong.* A sound resonated within the Hall of Life and Death.

Xue Ying already knew the Life and Death Battle rules. He knew this sound was

a signal for him to enter the arena.

“Everyone, I will enter now.” Xue Ying stood up, his body changing into a streak of flame and flying into the arena.

The battleground was enveloped by a magic array, completely separating its inside and outside.

But this magic array was controlled by the Infernal Palace’s staff. So when Xue Ying flew, he easily could pass through and land inside the battleground. No matter if it was the Transcendents that sat in the east part or the numerous mortals who sat in the west part, all of them cast their eyes at the black-clothed young man that stood inside the battleground!

At this moment, numerous people inside the Hall of Life and Death looked at the black clothed young man. Seventy percent of the Human Transcendents and eight Demigods had come to spectate! Strictly speaking, in the past two thousand years, this number of spectators was the most numerous. The spectators had their own thoughts. Some of them wanted to be surprised, and some of them wanted to see a joke.

If Xue Ying lost in the second match... it would indeed be a joke of a show.

All of them were waiting. Waiting for this young Transcendent named “Dong Bo Xue Ying” to show his strength.

.....

Wearing ordinary black clothes, Xue Ying walked barefoot to the weapon rack at the side of the arena.

Except for storage treasures, it was prohibited to take one’s own Transcendent items or weapons into the Life and Death Battle. Fighting boots, protective inner vest, clothing, and so on were also prohibited. The Transcendent Life and Death Battle was designed to depend on one’s own strength. Xue Ying only wore ordinary clothes and was also barefoot.

‘*These weapons.*’ Xue Ying looked at numerous weapons, swords, spears, rods, sticks, sabres, lances, exotics weapons, and also secret weapons. It seemed like all kinds of weapons were displayed in the weapon rack. Those weapons had nice material, but they were nothing special. A good weapon was fundamental in

allowing him to exert his full power, but he could only choose from these weapons in front of him.

‘*Hua.*’ With a wave of his hand, all the weapons from the weapon rack went into his storage treasure.

*Take them all first. If needed, use whichever one is appropriate when in battle.*

‘*Dong!*’

Another sound resounded.

Xue Ying knew this signaled his opponent to enter.

“Is it here? The first match?” Using World Energy, Xue Ying enveloped the arena, sensing his surroundings.

## Book 5: Chapter 13 – Revealing His Techniques!

---

The battleground was a few kilometers in diameter, with undulating mountains and flowing streams of rivers – painting quite a beautiful scenery.

*Hong!*

A relatively huge figure descended from the skies and entered the battleground with a ‘*bang*’, smashing into a mountain with enormous impact force. Yet that impact did not damage the mountain at all. Actually, Transcendent mages had refined the ‘mountains’ in the battleground. What appeared to be an actual mountain was, in reality, arranged scenery. As such, the tenacity of the scenery was, at the very least, something which no Sky Realm Transcendents could ever damage.

“Mn?” Xue Ying looked at that enormous figure. The mortals who were viewing from the western end of the platform all cheered in excitement.

This huge figure was a lizard-based Refiner Organism. Crimson in color, it stood about fifteen meters tall with a pair of golden eyes that stared right at Xue Ying.

Xue Ying’s face curved into a smile.

Actually, the opponents he would be facing in this Transcendent Battle of Life and Death had long before been arranged.

According to the rules, one would have three consecutive matches during the Life and Death Battle before an hour of rest to restore Qi and stamina. After that, he would have another bout of three continuous matches, before once again resting for an hour... and this would continue on and on, until the challenger lost a battle! That would then mark an end!

Many new Transcendents would usually lose in the first round of three matches, especially most mages due to their weakness in one-on-one battles. As for mages who were able to win three battles, most would be considered quite powerful.

Following this arranged plan, the first and second matches would pit the

challenger against Transcendent Refiner Organisms! Only during the third match onwards would one be pitted against a native of a Transcendent World! The further one proceeded, the more unique and powerful their opponents would get!

“Roar~~~” The big crimson lizard immediately strode forward, its pace heavy enough to create tremors.

Xue Ying gestured, causing a black-colored spear to appear within them.

He casually shook the spear a few times. Even though it did not have any power amplification arrays, his energy could still be transmitted through the body of the spear relatively smoothly.

*Hu.*

In a blink of an eye, the big crimson lizard reached Xue Ying, preempting the battle with a stomp with its huge hoof claws. This single stomp caused many of the mortals located in the west viewing platform to palpitate with anxiety as they dared not breathe. But Xue Ying easily evaded the attack with a single movement. Following that, his figure continued flashing here and there as he evaded the attacks of this big crimson lizard.

Seeing as how he could evade the attacks continuously without blocking once, he could definitely attack the lizard easily.

*‘My first opponent is really weak. I reckon that most Transcendent knights would win easily.’* Xue Ying did not have much experience in battling against other Transcendents. As a result, he would certainly utilize every single opportunity to learn and experience with these battles against other Transcendents.

“Scram.”

Xue Ying finally decided to retaliate.

*Hu.*

The spear abruptly erupted out in an enormous arc. Streams of water could be seen revolving around the spear. That big crimson lizard hurriedly used its hoof claws to defend against the attack. *Chi~* At the moment when the spearhead



touched the hoof claws, the strange rotating force embedded in the attack allowed the spear to easily bypass the lizard's defense before reaching the lizard's abdomen.

After that, Xue Ying exerted his power with a swipe upwards

*Hong~*

The force of the upwards swipe caused the entire big crimson lizard to lift off the ground. At that moment, when it was in mid-air, as it anxiously tried to right itself, Xue Ying followed up with a sudden whiplash attack!

This caused the big crimson lizard to be defenseless in mid-air. The spear turned into a blurry shadow as it explosively whipped against the lizard's body, smacking it away at high speed, before eventually smashing the lizard into a rocky mountain over tens of meters away. An enormous boom was heard. As the lizard rolled downwards, dropping to the side, it began stumbling about, revealing a helpless expression of defeat.

*Dong!* A deep beat of a drum sounded in the entire Hall of Life and Death.

Unseen power enveloped the battleground, enfolding the big crimson lizard before bringing it out of the location.

The countless mortals viewing from outside buzzed in excitement as they discussed the battle amongst themselves. Clearly, Xue Ying was just holding back in the beginning. When he decided to strike, he smacked his opponent away with a single move. A black-clothed young man being able to smack such a big lizard to more than ten meters away... was something shocking after seeing it visually.

*'End of the first match.'* Xue Ying was calm, *'This Transcendent Refiner Organism has a similar strength to me, yet its comprehension of martial techniques is too poor.'*

His own fleshy body was only at the middle stage of Sky Realm.

That big lizard should have a strength approximately at the level of mid stage Sky Realm as well! Yet judging on its fighting techniques, it could not even compare with Xiang Pang Yun. Today, Xue Ying's fighting techniques were a multitude times higher than what he was in the past, and it was at a level that could tyrannically oppress Xiang Pang Yun. Naturally, against this level of a

Transcendent Refiner Organism, his current strength was now something he could easily use to defeat such an opponent.

After merely ten breaths of time...

*Hu.* A figure descended once again, landing on the highest peak of the mountain in the battleground. This time, it was a scorpion Transcendent Refiner Organism. It had a low body and long scorpion tail. The scorpion was black with sharp claws on its limbs. There were even spikes on the joints of its foot limbs, showing that weapons protruded from different parts of its body.

This match was obviously going to be much harder than the previous one.

*‘This is my second opponent. Many Transcendent mages and weaker Transcendent knights were defeated in this round of battle.’* Xue Ying walked barefoot towards the big black scorpion, step by step.

Not all of those who had become Transcendents had comprehended the Realm of Myriad Existences.

Some were fortunate enough to step into Transcendence after merely comprehending the Realm of being One with the World! Many such Transcendents would thus be several times weaker and would be defeated in this second match.

*Hua hua hua~~~* The gurgling streams of water were akin to ribbons wrapping around the mountains.

Xue Ying stepped onto the water barefoot. Even without using the World Energy or his Qi, he could still step onto the surface of water without sinking, as if it was flat land.

Every step he took was filled with an aesthetic feeling of nature! There was an unseen rhythm hidden within his movements!

That was how he walked towards the big black scorpion ahead of him. The scorpion though was deeply entrenched at its current location, observing its opponent carefully, as it awaited the right moment to strike against Xue Ying.

.....

Amidst the crowds of mortals, Yu Jing Qiu watched that black-clothed,

barefoot Xue Ying inside the huge battleground as he walked, step by step, on the surface of the water towards the big black scorpion.

Somehow, she felt that he was very handsome!

That aesthetic feeling of nature quickened her heartbeat as she avidly watched the encounter.

“Somehow, I can feel that he is extremely formidable.”

“Why are we feeling his extraordinariness even as he is just walking?”

“What do you even know? This is because the comprehension he had of the Profound Mysteries of the Myriad Existences were embedded in his footsteps. Such comprehension could not only be found in his spear techniques, but even his normal movements could operate the Profound Mystery of the World. Casually raising his hand or making a simple movement could have a frightening force hidden within.” A Legend ranker explained, enlightening others who did not know.

At the very least, these Legend rankers could barely see the Profound Mysteries in Xue Ying’s movement. As for those weaker mortals, they were here to enjoy the atmosphere. Such Transcendent battles were indubitably beautiful and amazing to them.

.....

As Xue Ying walked towards the peak of that mountain in the battleground, the entrenched big black scorpion felt that Xue Ying was close enough and finally struck.

*Xiu!*

As fast as lightning, the big black scorpion’s steady tail strangely and unpredictably stabbed towards Xue Ying.

*Chi.* Xue Ying easily parried the attack with the black spear in his hand, with the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences weaving around the haft. All along, Xue Ying had been using the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences, as it was more suitable for defense. Regardless of how weak his opponent was, it would be better for him to be prudent.

*Chi chi chi.* The big black scorpion attacked wildly.

Using its tail, limbs, and spikes, the scorpion tried to overwhelm his opponent with furious attacks.

Xue Ying, though, constantly defended. Faint streams of water were seen revolving around the spear. Despite the overwhelming attacks, the scorpion could not even reach closer than two meters from Xue Ying.

*'Fighting techniques are ordinary. Its specialties are the composition of its fleshy body. Several Transcendent knights who merely comprehended One with the World would indeed be defeated easily. Transcendent mages do not specialise in close combat, and don't use any unique equipment. They can only utilise the simplest of staffs and would be easily defeated as well.'* Xue Ying concluded his analysis from his observations. The spear, that had been initially used to defend,...

Suddenly spun outwards.

The defensive rotation turned into a furious stab – filled with unpredictability and speed. This unpredictable stab by Xue Ying had a rotating force that was constantly twisted in arcs that made it hard to even block against from afar, much less to say, from those who were close to him.

The big black scorpion did not have the time to block against the attack. It was stabbed on its foot, limbs, and several joints on its body. *Peng*, it flew to the side.

“So fast, so unpredictable.” Some Transcendents on the eastern viewing platform were amazed. Indeed, when the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences was applied on the spear, it became unpredictable. Even though the Transcendent Refiner Organism could rely on its own body to barely resist against a straightforward attack, using such techniques, filled with unpredictability, would even cause them, and to a certain extent, a true Transcendent knight, to suffer losses. Thus, Refiner Organisms would have an even harder time to withstand such attacks. Xue Ying easily stabbed its vital points, causing it to fly and tumble to the side by more than ten meters, before it finally rolled to a stop.

Accompanying that spectacle was a drumbeat, *dong*.

That big scorpion flew upwards before being brought out of the battleground by an unseen force.

*‘The third match is going to start soon.’* Xue Ying understood the danger caused by the battles from now on, *‘Natives from Transcendent Worlds will be appearing from now on! Only after killing them will I win the battle! At the same time, these natives from Transcendent Worlds will be trying to kill me as well!’*

What was a Battle of Life and Death?

From the third match onwards, this conflict would finally entail the essence of Life and Death!

Opponents from both sides would gamble on their lives!

But of course, sometimes, at the most crucial moments when the challenger from the humankind was going to die, Demigods, given the task to protect, would react. In most cases, the challenger could be saved. But those who were more unfortunate would only have a single outcome in the end – death.

---

## **Book 5: Chapter 14 – Native Transcendent**

---

Within the western spectator area, countless mortals watched with great expectation. They were there... especially looking forward to the showdown between a human Transcendent and Transcendent world natives!

“This Dong Bo Xue Ying is really skilful with his spear techniques. He has a watertight defense using the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences. I think he should be able to win the third match.”

“That is not certain! native Transcendents have different innate talents. Who knows? Xue Ying might meet one who can restrain him.”

“Yes, it really boils down on his luck.”

The Transcendents were discussing as they watched the battle with a diabolical vision, analysing things as they went.

.....

Being watched by many hundreds of thousands of mortals and by the majority of human Transcendent experts, Xue Ying stood at the peak of a small mountain in the battleground and calmly sensed any possible movements. To him, he did not care about others as this Transcendent Battle of Life and Death was a rare opportunity for him to gain experience.

“Hu.”

A human figure descended from the sky and landed on the battleground.

The moment the figure reached the ground, an unseen killing intent spread outwards.

“Mn?” Xue Ying mildly frowned as he stared at his opponent about five hundred meters away. This native Transcendent figure was over three meters tall, and relatively thin! He wore loose, white clothing with two swords on his back. His skin was green, and his eyes were fiery red. His hair was similarly fiery red, standing straight out of his head.

“A native Transcendent!” Xue Ying did not dare be careless.

What was a native Transcendent?

They were actually lifeforms that were naturally born in Major or Minor Transcendent Worlds.

Just like those Primordial Beings who were born from the earliest period in the beginning of a material world and emerging from the World, all such beings had incredible powers and techniques. The peak most such lifeforms had powers that could rival a Deity!

The Material World was too close to perfection whereas the Transcendent worlds had simple natural laws. Therefore, lifeforms being formed from the World were weaker, with the strongest of any native lifeform coming from a Big Transcendent world being only able to reach the power of a Demigod! As for Minor Transcendent worlds, the natives emerging from them could only reach Saint realm.

Thus, to summarise this with a single sentence — native Transcendents were similar to the weaker versions of Primordial Beings!

They had many innate techniques that could not be looked down upon.

“Human!” The green-skinned native Transcendent stared at Xue Ying from the distance. His fiery red eyes were faintly filled with sparks. With an upturned mouth, he mocked, “The strongest existences amongst your kind captured me, tormented me, and now, they still want to use me to hone your skills... Yet sometimes, expectation and reality can be very different. You will die in my hands, and I’ll be rewarded with freedom!”

“I feel that it’s not me, but you who will die! And you can die a worthy death, being the very first native Transcendent to die under my, Dong Bo Xue Ying’s, hand!” Xue Ying stood on the peak of a mountain with a spear in his hand. He was calm beyond measure.

“Is that so?” The green-skinned native Transcendent sneered. He unsheathed the two swords at his back.

Wearing loose, white clothing, holding onto one sword in each of his hands...

He was similarly barefoot! The differences were that his legs were green in color and big.

*“Sou!”* He moved suddenly. Having a slight sparkle of electricity surrounding his body, his entire self was akin to a thunderbolt – flying in the shape of a ‘Z’, he flashed towards Xue Ying. There was originally five hundred meters separating the two, yet in the blink of an eye, he reached Xue Ying. Upon arriving, he slashed right at Xue Ying with his two swords, trailing an electrically charged path with his swing.

*‘So fast.’* Xue Ying was surprised. Moving the spear in his hand, he shrouded his front with a looping motion.

*Hu.*

The green-skinned native Transcendent’s electro-figure twisted slightly. Immediately, his entire body flashed towards the sides of Xue Ying. He slashed out with both his swords once again.

With a spin of his spear, Xue Ying immediately rotated towards the side, enshrouding a large area with his defense! The streams of water revolved around the spear... doing their utmost in defending against the onslaught.

.....

*Shua shua shua...* That green-skinned, three-plus-meter tall, native Transcendent appeared to mortals as more than ten images. He surrounded Xue Ying, slashing at him madly! Xue Ying, though, just stood at his original position, defending against the onslaught with just a spear.

In just the time of a single breath, the native Transcendent suddenly retreated back two hundred meters in a flash.

The countless mortals held their own breaths. It was too fast for them. They could only see an afterimage of a flickering assailant. But in actual fact, these mortals did not know that... the native Transcendent and Xue Ying had not even once clash with their weapons, at all, from the start to finish!

*‘So fast.’* Xue Ying made use of this moment for a respite. At the same time, he was speechless, *‘This native Transcendent’s comprehension of the Realm is very ordinary. His sword techniques are quite rough as well! My spear techniques are*



*much more mysterious than his by an unknown times more. But, his speed is too fast. Judging by the electricity surrounding his body as he moves, I reckon that his innate talent should be lightning-related, with his specialty being speed. With this kind of speed, the moment he initiated his attacks, I cannot even touch him!’*

Regardless of whether it was explosive speed or direction-changing speed, his speed was still twice that of Xue Ying’s! With twice as much speed... it was something more exaggerated than having twice as much strength since the opponent would be able to control and take the initiative of the battle.

And what notion did this bring?

That native Transcendent could use his ‘rough around the edges’ sword techniques to attack Xue Ying all by himself!

“Your defense is quite formidable.” The distant, green-skinned, native Transcendent sneered, “My weapons did not clash against yours from the start to the finish, allowing you to defend yourself to such perfection. But what if they clash?”

Xue Ying’s expression changed.

The moment they clashed, his spear would certainly be affected adversely.

“Haha, don’t you feel despair? Just die submerged in despair!”

The body of that green-skinned, native Transcendent had some faint electricity revolving around it. His speed became even more frightening. Once again, he flashed towards Xue Ying, slashing out with his two swords at an insane speed.

*Dang~*

Their weapons clashed for the first time.

Xue Ying tried his utmost to defend against the attack. The streams of water revolved around his weapon. Also like water, the snow-white light of each sword came again and again at top speed! It was clearly seen that defending against the attacks was taxing on Xue Ying. Along the clashes of ‘*dang dang dang*’, he began feeling even more fatigue as he strenuously defended with his spear, bringing with each clash greater expectations for that native Transcendent.

“The moment has arrived!” At that juncture when their weapons clashed, the spear in Xue Ying’s hand became like a python turning itself over.

The native Transcendent felt his swords being stuck to that spear when he slashed out against it. The feeling was like a strange, rotating force leading his swords, and the spear becoming like a dragon exiting from its cave, stabbing outwards explosively.

Based on the speed of the native Transcendent’s physique, Xue Ying could not compare with him. With regards to the movement of his weapon, however, he was much faster!

“No.” The native Transcendent tried his best to dodge the attack.

“*Pu!*” That spear pierced through the native Transcendent’s shoulder, forming a bloody hole. Following that action, this native Transcendent retreated ferociously backwards, avoiding a second attack by Xue Ying.

“You actually escaped with your life.” Xue Ying slightly shook his head.

“You are doing this on purpose in trying to act weak!” The distant native Transcendent growled. Based on his strange and unpredictable spear techniques, how would it be possible for Xue Ying to be suppressed by him? It was entirely on purpose in trying to act weak, allowing him to attack with indulgence. At the same time, when the opportunity arrives, Xue Ying will be like a poisonous snake, assaulting suddenly.

“Your speed is truly very fast and prevented me from striking at your vital points.” Xue Ying stared at the shoulder of that native Transcendent from afar – that shoulder hole slowly recovered by itself. Deep green colour blood flowed slowly downwards.

“You only have this trick?” Xue Ying looked at him.

The green-skinned, native Transcendent had a cold expression. He was aware that with the strangeness and unpredictability of his opponent’s spear technique, winning would be too difficult.

“Relying on your innate talent of having a frightening speed, it’s such a pity that your sword techniques are too rough around the edges and incomparable to even ordinary Legend rankers.” Xue Ying shook his head. This native

Transcendent's comprehension of the realms was truly too low. His sword techniques were too crude, and he had not comprehended One with the World, much less to say, the Realm of Myriad Existences. It was a waste of time and effort for him to let his opponent attacked with his frightening speed in vain. But through this, he could see the the extent of the threat brought by this native Transcendent!

Should this native Transcendent's comprehension of the Realms reach a greater level, he would assuredly become extremely terrifying!

"Since you do not have any powerful techniques, then this battle will come to an end." As Xue Ying finished his statement, *hong long long* ~~~ the surrounding seven to eight hundred meters in diameter of area were filled with turbulent waves of water! Actually, the entire battleground was merely one-and-a-half to two kilometers in diameter. At this moment, the enormous surging water maelstrom... completely covered most of the battleground.

"Wow!"

"This..."

The countless mortals widened their eyes as they saw this sight.

The gigantic battleground soon turned into a huge water maelstrom. Standing at the eye of the maelstrom was that black-robed young man. He looked just like a Deity amidst the water! The maelstrom was extremely violent, with a strange undercurrent hidden within, as the swirls constantly rotated. That green-skinned, native Transcendent had a huge change in his expression as he stood within it. That was because he could feel the undulating changes and unpredictability of power in the maelstrom.

"Do you think you can still escape from this?" Xue Ying moved so fast that he left an apparition behind as he went killing over.

"Escape, escape." The green-skinned, native Transcendent tried his best to escape, yet the surging waves of the water maelstrom were too hard to withstand against. If it was just merely some oppressive force, he would not care. However, these sort of undercurrent changes made him unable to bear the attack.

Actually, merely using pure strength to suddenly change the suppressive direction would still cause this native Transcendent who did not have Power Perfectly United as One to suffer!

Much less to say Xue Ying's integration of the Profound Mysteries of the Water and Fire of Myriad Existences. Within the softness was hidden some sort of explosive fierceness, and within the fierceness was hidden the vigor of softness! The undercurrent in this water maelstrom was constantly changing, making even those human Transcendents with higher comprehensions of the Realms to be at a disadvantage.

As he tried running, he would stumble every now and then, with his speed being only thirty to forty percent his usual. But what was more important was that even his 'accuracy' was entirely affected! Every step he took, he would either appear further away, much closer than his intended distance, or that he would suddenly be at an unexpected angle toward his destination.

"No!" The green-skinned, native Transcendent turned his head, looking backwards with his fiery red eyes wide and rounded. He was filled with unwillingness as he tried in defending with his swords.

*Pu.*

The spear was like a dragon as it stabbed into the place above his eyebrows before it was removed in an instant! There was a finger-shaped hole above the native's eyebrows, though his brains were already turned into a paste.

Native Transcendents were generally extremely powerful. Usually, only after they were beheaded, their hearts were pierced, or their brains were penetrated would they die. As for those who were 'undying', they would be extremely terrifying.

.....

The countless mortals looked upon the surging waves of water in the huge battleground. The black-robed young man stood on the waves, and beside him, the corpse of the approximately three meters tall, green-skinned, native Transcendent rose and fell.

The battleground arena was filled with silence for a moment. Then, the crowd

erupted in excited cheers!

Yu Jing Qiu was full of excitement as she, too, applauded.

“End of the first round of matches. After resting for an hour, the second round will begin!” A loud voice resounded in the entire Hall of Life and Death.

The endless waves of water dissipated.

Xue Ying headed towards an opened door in the corner of the battleground to take his rest for an hour in preparation for the second round of matches.

---

## Book 5: Chapter 15 – A Familiar Opponent.

---

*Hong long long~~~* The gates of the Hall of Life and Death opened slowly. Due to the one hour break, the hall gates would naturally be opened for everyone to walk around during that time before attendees went back to their seats for the next round of battles.

The many mortals felt their blood boiling with excitement after watching the battles.

As for those people located in the eastern viewing platform, they were either in groups of two's or three's, or they might be in groups of eight to ten. These Transcendents were just chatting with one another calmly. To them, they were here to watch the bustling crowds, and at the same time, take this opportunity to meet up with their old friends.

Winning three matches?

How did that even matter? It was too ordinary. If a mage could win three rounds, it might be worth getting excited about as mages would be at a disadvantage when they fought one-on-one battles while not using their own Transcendent treasures! However, a Transcendent knight would fundamentally be good at fighting such battles. As long as they could comprehend the Realm of Myriad Existences, and that they had a wealth of fighting experience, it would be a joke if they could not win at least three matches! And winning this first round of battles was considered as merely ordinary!

Only after winning four to five battles would he be considered as relatively powerful.

And winning six battles would mean that he was someone amazing!

Just like the Vice Faction Head Chao Qing and Qiu Chi Bai... they won six battles in the past, and were considered as amazing warriors already! Winning six battles under the conditions of solely depending on his own comprehension of the Realms and battle experience, while not awakening his primordial bloodline... was something worthy of admiration!

As for winning seven, eight or nine battles... those were usually existences who had already awakened their primordial bloodlines' unique talents!

Just like the recent ten thousand years, 'Dan Qing Yan' had awoken her primordial bloodline that was a unique talent relating to blood. Under the combustion of her own blood, she could raise her own power, speed and other attributes explosively, reaching a state where her body became undying! That year, based upon her own comprehension of the Realms and fighting experiences, she won six matches. After those initial six wins, she engaged her innate talent to increase her combat power explosively. With a body that was close to that of undying... she won the seventh, eighth, and ninth match!

Speaking of the person who set the historical record of winning the most battles, 'Purgatory Knight' Jie Li. His Primordial Bloodline innate talent was something even more mysterious. Even as a mortal, he could manipulate high temperature flames! After becoming a Transcendent, integrating both Profound Mysteries of the Myriad Existences and his Qi, the flame he could innately control became an extremely frightening flame that was termed by Transcendents as the 'Purgatory Flame'. That was why Jie Li was also named as the 'Purgatory Knight'.

This temperature of the Purgatory Flame was so high that it could burn ordinary Sky Realm peak stage experts to death!

The Purgatory Flames burned a fleshly body with such an intense pain. Even withstanding it temporarily, how painful would it be? Furthermore, the Purgatory Flame had an extreme suppressive force that could prevent his opponent from exerting more than half his usual combat power! With his own amazing comprehension of the Realms, borrowing his innate talent, he finally set down the incredible record of winning eleven battles. Up to the present time, nobody from the Xia Clan was able to match such a record.

Thus, in other words—

Those who could achieve great results in this 'Transcendent Battle of Life and Death', other than having great battle experience, one must also have a great innate talent from his primordial bloodline. Xue Ying's innate talent was merely just doubling his power... and amongst the many possible innate talents, it was

just a humble talent.

.....

Thus, right now, when Xue Ying won three matches, the Transcendents were more or less feeling calm, and were chatting casually as it was something quite ordinary.

\*\*\*\*\*

Within a garden in the Hall of Life and Death...

Xue Ying was carrying a flat-bottom flagon containing the spiritual liquid from the Stone of Oceanic World. He was sitting in the garden and looking at the plants and flowers around him. Due to the current season – winter – the garden only had a few white flowers and grasses with relatively strong life force surviving.

“*Gu gu.*” He casually drank a mouthful of spiritual liquid from the Stone of Oceanic World. This spiritual liquid had a nourishing effect to his body’s Qi and spirit. Thus, it made him comfortable after drinking it.

*‘The first round of three battles were not very difficult. It was only that native Transcendent who had quite a unique innate talent.’* Xue Ying praised, *‘His speed was actually double mine!’*

Given a choice of doubling one’s strength or one’s speed...

Almost all of the Transcendents would choose to double one’s speed.

*‘My primordial bloodline innate talent is actually something very ordinary.’* Xue Ying had a self-deprecating smile. Regardless of whether it was the Dragon Mountain Manor Head Lord Zhu Yi Hong or the other Transcendents like Qiu Chi Bai, after knowing that Xue Ying’s innate talent brought by his primordial bloodline was just a power outbreak, they did highly value such a capability.

“However, when I was weak, this primordial bloodline actually gave me a great help. I’m afraid that if I did not have this primordial bloodline, I would have died to Xiang Pang Yun’s hand.” Xue Ying did not care much about how ordinary his primordial bloodline was. After all, after transcending... the further one gets, the more important his comprehension of the Realms becomes. Other matters



would have a lower priority.

As he was drinking the spiritual liquid from the Stone of Oceanic World, Xue Ying became more focused.

He thought back to the three previous battles, analysing his own execution of each entire battle and learning something from it.

*'The second round of battles will be very difficult.'*

*'According to the rules of Infernal Palace, the fourth battle will be an Qi avatar The fifth match should be a lower ranking native Transcendent! As for the sixth battle, it should be with a middle rank native Transcendent.'* Xue Ying thought to himself.

A Qi avatar was only something a Saint Realm expert could create. Through this, the Saint expert could form a human with merely his 'Transcendent Qi' which he could transform freely! Furthermore, as a Saint Realm expert, his soul would be even more formidable to an extent that he could even place part of his soul onto the 'Qi avatar'. This way, the Qi avatar could move independently and exert a relatively strong combat power. Usually when one was adventuring, the Saint expert would use his 'Qi avatar' to explore the unexplored lands.

When such a Saint expert met a great danger, he would lose part of his soul when his Qi avatar died! However, at the very most, the Saint expert would lose some of his vitality which could be recovered eventually. If he were to bash onwards recklessly with his true self... he might lose his life easily!

How powerful the Qi avatar was would be determined by the amount of 'Transcendent Qi' and how much soul was imparted into it.

.....

The lower ranked, the middle ranked and the upper ranked native Transcendent were categories given by humans to the Transcendent world natives.

These native Transcendents were similar to a weaker version of Primordial Beings, and would thus have some strange innate talents.

According to the innate talents' uniqueness and threat, the humans would

categorise them into a lower, middle, and upper rank.

Actually, such categories were gleaned from how the Abyss Devils were categorized! The Abyss Devils would be categorized as lower, middle and upper ranking... based on their threat. These Abyss Devils had a threat much more frightening than the native Transcendents. After all, they were frightening existences that came from the dark abyss.

Of course—

Like the native Transcendent which Xue Ying exchanged moves with previously, that expert of similar level with double the speed would merely be categorised as a 'lower rank native Transcendent'.

A 'middle rank native Transcendent' was extremely frightening.

As for 'upper rank native Transcendents', they were rarely seen. Even the Xia Clan would have a tough time in capturing an upper rank native Transcendent. And after being captured, Demigod Transcendent mages would experiment on these native Transcendents., As such experiments would make them unable to battle, there was almost no chance of them being brought to the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death. After all, investigating the 'bloodline and fleshy body' was something many Transcendent mages would do! Just like the mortal 'Si Liang Hong' from the Azure River County, she was someone who specialised in understanding the bloodline and fleshy body.

\*\*\*\*\*

An hour passed in the blink of an eye.

The gate of the Hall of Life and Death was once again closed. The many mortals had long returned to the hall, waiting expectantly for the later matches. These matches promised to be even more remarkable, with the opponents becoming more and more unique!

Within the battleground...

Xue Ying stood by himself as he awaited his opponent to arrive.

*"Dong!"* the drum beat was just like thunder as it resounded across the entire Hall of Life and Death. Everyone quieted down.

*Hua!*

A streamer slowly descended upon a mountain rock. This was actually a white-robed, relatively handsome man. He carried a divine sword on his back. His entire body faintly glowed, showing that he was not a body of flesh, but was an avatar of Qi!

Xue Ying looked upon this white-robed man with consternation, “Elder Gong Liang!”

Even though the white-robed man was made up of Qi, he could recognise him with a glimpse that it was in fact, Elder Gong Liang Yuan, the person who led him into the Infernal World!

“Ah ah.” The white-robed, handsome man rubbed his nose, before giving a helpless smile, “I have no other choices. Your opponent in this fourth battle is me.”

---

## Book 5: Chapter 16 – Severing Wind: Fifteen Swords!

---

The white-robed, handsome Gong Liang Yuan helplessly said, “I’ve just become a Saint recently. Thus, my combat power will be relatively weaker. But precisely because of this, my Qi avatar will suffice in examining your combat power! Brother Dong Bo, even though I would really like to help you, in front of the many Transcendents – especially those Demigods with incredible power, I could not easily let you win.”

“Elder Gong Liang, please don’t hesitate,” Xue Ying replied.

“I’ll do my utmost to defeat and stop you,” Gong Liang Yuan said, “If you can’t even win against this Qi avatar of mine, the next matches – the fifth and the sixth – will bring your great danger of possibly perishing.”

“I understand.” Xue Ying nodded.

“Come.”

Gong Liang Yuan stood there.

In turn, Xue Ying was cautiously observing the distant Elder Gong Liang Yuan who had tinges of Qi streams moving on his skin. He thought, *‘Elder Gong Liang Yuan always carry with him a divine sword. If it isn’t because of his eccentricity, then I highly believe it must be related to the secret technique he trains in!’*

That time when he chose the ‘Magic Dragon Force’ at Water Daoist Faction Secret Technique Pavilion, he had utilised the opportunity to read through the huge volumes of mid and high grade Qi secret techniques. Even though he did not decide to learn them, at the very least, by reading more, he would gain more experience and broaden his horizons! Thus, he knew that there were actually many unique secret techniques that required one to carry a weapon on one’s back.

Furthermore, during this half year period which he chatted with the many Transcendents around him, he understood that one should be even more careful of those who carried a weapon on their backs.

*Hong~* Xue Ying moved at a thought.

At that moment, the power of Water from the World, within the entire battleground, started moving and accumulating into endless waves! These tempestuous waves of water engulfed about three quarters of the entire battleground, transforming it into a gigantic maelstrom with undercurrents surging within.

Gong Liang Yuan responded with a frown, before laughing, “Brother Dong Bo, you’ve just recently become a Transcendent, and yet I find the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences quite intriguing.”

After saying that, unseen power of wind revolved around him which easily separated the layer of undercurrent from his body. After all, he had higher comprehension of the Realms than Xue Ying!

“Brother Dong Bo, please make your move. Standing there foolishly is not enough to win against me.” Gong Liang Yuan did not move as he awaited Xue Ying to make his instead.

“Alright.”

Initially, Xue Ying did not want to move as he waited for his opponent to reveal a weaknesses.

But according to the rules, he could only win by defeating his opponent!

“Sou.”

Xue Ying treaded across the water. The moment he made his move, he did it lightning-quick! With the flicker of his shadow, he appeared in front of Gong Liang Yuan.

Strangely, Gong Liang Yuan, who was standing there all the time empty-handedly, had the divine sword behind his back suddenly appear in his right hand, as if he had been holding the hilt of the sword for a very very long time. But Xue Ying clearly seen that when he rushed forward, his opponent’s hands were still by the sides... and strangely, as if time slowed down for him, the hilt of the sword appeared on his right hand.

*Qiang!* The sound of the divine sword coming out of its scabbard rang out.

Following that unsheathing move closely, a cold and bright ray of sword-light, bringing with it streams of gale, flashed in front of his eyes.

*“Dang.”* Xue Ying’s expression changed. Immediately blocking the attack with the black spear in his hand, he retreated rapidly after that!

### Severing Wind: Fifteen Swords!

Apparently, Elder Gong Liang Yuan had trained in the high grade secret technique – ‘Severing Wind: Fifteen Swords’. This type of secret technique was especially suitable for those who comprehended the Profound Mystery of the Wind of Myriad Existences, and especially so for those who used swords as their main weapon! Xue Ying had previously seen this high grade secret technique within the Pavilion of Secret Techniques. Usually, Qi secret techniques were either specialised in attacking or in defending.

Even if the Qi secret techniques were specialised in defending, usually, there would be some attacking techniques associated within them.

But this ‘Severing Wind: Fifteen Swords’ was a kind of extreme, high grade secret technique that was used solely for attacking! Even if the technique did not aid in one’s defence or agility, the increase it would bring to one’s attacking power was extremely terrifying.

Training in this particular secret technique would require one to constantly nurture the divine sword. At the same time, the moment when he attacked with the sword leaving the scabbard, using the ability of wind, each incoming sword would be faster and faster! Like how waves superposed on each other, the might of the sword would constantly stack and increase. Of course, the demand for one’s comprehension of the Profound Mystery of the Wind of Myriad Existences was great... with only those who reached the great perfection being able to display all fifteen swords!

Of course, Elder Gong Liang Yuan had just become a Saint, and thus, he could not reach the Realm of Fifteen Swords in this particular secret technique. But even still, being able to release five or six swords would be terrifying already.

Escaping would be the best decision when facing such secret technique

Xue Ying could not let the opponent release the series of sword in one breath!

As long as the secret technique of his opponent had a momentary break in waves of swords, he would be required to start from the first sword all over again.

One sword after another came flying, there seemed to be no end in sight in this onslaught of swords.

“You can’t escape, Brother Dong Bo,” Gong Liang Yuan said. At the same time, endless gales appeared around Xue Ying, hampering his movement.

During the period when Xue Ying was rapidly retreating, Gong Liang Yuan had already released his second sword in the air.

And right now, the fourth sword had already appeared in front of Xue Ying, giving him no chance of evading it anymore.

Since he could not dodge, then he would face it head-on!

Against the ‘Severing Wind: Fifteen Swords’, using defending by attacking was one of the methods he could use to get rid of the layering of his opponent’s technique.

*Dang.* The spear in Xue Ying’s hand was surrounded in ferocious flames as it came stabbing right at his opponent. At the juncture, when it clashed against the divine sword, the divine sword borrowed the force in rebounding back smartly with an even more frightening fifth sword! This sword carried with it only a small amount of gale, yet it was faster and more concise.

The impact from the clash of weapons previously was very weak.

That impact made Xue Ying uncomfortable as he used a ferocious attack. Yet his opponent retreated after a light touch and then rebounded back with an even stronger force. This allowed Xue Ying to feel how it was like to be oppressed in Realm techniques. Even though Gong Liang Yuan was not as powerful as Xue Ying when he just became a Transcendent, he had already cultivated for many years after transcending, and becoming a Saint had further evidenced his prowess.

Under ordinary circumstances, only one out of ten Sky Realm Transcendents could enter the Saint Realm!

Fortunately, Xue Ying had long understood the principle behind ‘Fragility after

Hardness'. His Profound Mystery of the Fire of Myriad Existences contained within softness, allowing him to rotate his spear for an easy conversion from Fire to the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences – retreating with his spear while narrowing down the area of defence.

*“Pu.”*

The spear narrowly blocked the fifth sword.

The divine sword once again collected back its energy after touching, before following up with an even faster sixth sword... and it was so fast that Xue Ying could only see a vague blur of it. Gritting his teeth, he could only try his best to block the attack. He believed in his own spear technique's defensive ability in using both the Profound Mysteries behind Water and the Fire of Myriad Existences.

*Hua~* The spear moved in a circle, as if it was trying to seal and close off the space. Strands of water streams revolved around the spear tip.

*Hong!*

This single sword was not a light floating sword like before.

It was, instead, the accumulation of sword after sword and the release after building up its full might. Actually, honestly speaking, the speed of this Qi avatar could not even compare with the speed of that previous Thunderbolt native Transcendent! But right now, during the display of the sixth sword, it was so fast that Xue Ying had to parry against it with his instinct. Furthermore, the power of this sword was so forceful and frightening.

Xue Ying felt that his spear absorbed a strong impact force. He hurriedly rotated his spear in order to absorb and unload the force, yet that impact force still returned back and smashed on to Xue Ying's body even after rotating the body of the spear.

*“Pu.”*

Xue Ying flew backwards while spitting out a mouthful of blood.

Even though he had spit out blood during his flight, Xue Ying felt excited. He had blocked the attack! If he had not blocked that sword, and instead, it landed



on his body, Xue Ying would have most likely lost a limb from the impact. And even if he did not lose his life in this fourth match, he would still be injured too heavily, which would count as a defeat for him.

Following that last attack, Xue Ying landed on top of the water, looking at the distant Gong Liang Yuan.

Gong Liang Yuan did not chase after him?

When he was flying backwards, Xue Ying was always facing his opponent. He was on alert all the time to continue blocking any incoming attack. According to logic... this should be the best chance for his opponent to attack him.

“Mn?” Xue Ying realised that that white-robed Gong Liang Yuan’s skin was becoming more and more transparent, with the Qi stream becoming more conspicuous.

“Brother Dong Bo, congratulations. You’ve won! It’s such a pity that I can only use the most ordinary sword provided by the Infernal Palace.” Gong Liang Yuan stared upon the sword in his hand, “And that I have not interacted much with it. Thus, the power I can display is much weaker and the most is six swords.”

His true combat power lay at being able to display eight swords!

And that represented a small success within the Severing Winds: Fifteen Swords.

“Elder Gong Liang, I’d a hard time defending against your attacks previously. Why did you not make use of the chance to continue your attack?” Xue Ying asked.

“The Transcendent Qi this avatar has isn’t that much, and that I can only display up to the sixth sword.” Gong Liang Yuan smiled. The energy required to display every increasing sword within the Severing Wind: Fifteen Swords, exponentially increased. Due to the fact that the Qi contained within his Qi avatar was limited, he could only continue to display another one or two swords at the start. Such attacks were not threatening, at all, to Xue Ying.

“It’s such a surprise that you can even block my sixth sword at the first level of Myriad Existences.” Gong Liang Yuan laughed.

---

## Book 5: Chapter 17 – A Powerful Opponent

---

Finishing his words, Gong Liang Yuan's translucent body began flying upwards into the skies.

*Dong~* The drum beat reverberated through the entire Hall of Life and Death, and the many mortals understood that the fourth match was a victory! Actually, many of the mortals did not understand what happened – the Qi avatar's few and extremely quick swords were something that the mortals could not see. But what they saw was Xue Ying spitting out blood as he flew backwards, and yet he won?

But ultimately, they were here to watch the brilliance of a Transcendent battle. Thus, being unable to understand the battle, they could only regret that their scope of view was lacking.

"He can even block the first level of Severing Wind: Fifteen Swords at Myriad Existences!"

"This is getting interesting!"

"However, it is almost impossible for him to win the sixth match just by solely depending on unpredictability and defence." The eastern viewing platform's Transcendents were getting more interested in the battle as they sensed... Xue Ying was reaching his limits!

Enlightenment on the nature of the World meant achieving the 'Realm of Myriad Existences'.

The natural World was full of Profound Mysteries, and understanding them allowed the formation of Myriad Existences! After comprehending the Realm of Myriad Existences one's understanding became deeper and deeper, one's control of the World Energy would undergo a qualitative change. Following this qualitative change, the comprehension of the Myriad Existences could be split into three levels.

This represented the depth of one's comprehension of the Realms!

There were some extremely intelligent Legend rankers, like the top three within the Dragon Mountain Book... who had comprehended up to the second level of the Myriad Existences! Usually, reaching the second level of comprehension in the Realm of Myriad Existences would hasten one's ability in transcending.

And there were even some who had obtained spiritual transformation after transcending, allowing their comprehension of the World to become more formidable, and thus, reach the second level of the Realm of Myriad Existences.

Regardless—

Those who wanted to solely depend on comprehension of the Realms to win six matches were usually only those who had reached the second level!

The deeper one went in their comprehension of the Realms, the more difficult it would get.

The third level of the Realm of Myriad Existences... was something rarely seen amongst Sky Realm Transcendents. Usually, such Transcendents would have a sizable chance of reaching the Saint Realm.

After the Realm of Myriad Existences, would be the condensation of a True Meaning!

Only those who could condense a True Meaning could become a true expert amongst those of the Saint Realm!

.....

*'The pressure is enormous.'* Xue Ying could feel the pressure the battle was giving him, *'My comprehension of the Realms is still incomplete. The six years I had within the underground great hall allowed me to gain a deeper comprehension of the Profound Mysteries of the Water and Fire of Myriad Existences through the imprinting of both fire and water. The half year period I spent in the Xia Capital, of which I spent most of my time pondering about my spear technique, allowed me to have a similar increase in my comprehension of the Realms. However, a qualitative change has yet to occur.'*

His own understanding of the Profound Mysteries of Myriad Existences was many times deeper than when he killed Xiang Pang Yun.

But still, he could only claim to have attained the second level after a qualitative change occurred!

*‘It’s fortunate that the Myriad Existences of Water excels in defense. Otherwise, that fourth match would have been too dangerous.’* Within Xue Ying’s mind, a glimmer of expectation appeared, *‘Very good. The greater the pressure, the stronger the effect it will have on improving my spear techniques.’*

Within the half-year period after which he transcended, he had harvested many revelations in his spear techniques, and most of those required experimentation in battle!

*Hu!*

Xue Ying looked upwards – a figure descended from the skies, landing on top of a rock with a dull thud.

He was a human-like figure close to five meters tall with a dark red tone to his skin and fangs. He wielded a great shield in one hand and a frightening great axe in the other! His dark-yellow eyes were full of killing intent. Those native Transcendents who were thrown into battle utterly despised humans.

When mankind had caught them, they were initially forced into hard labor. After that, they were tossed into life and death battles against humans! Those who lost, would simply die. But if they were to win, they would regain their freedom! All of these native Transcendents had a deep longing for freedom, and they believed that since the Infernal Palace promised them this, the palace would not go back against their word.

Furthermore, how delightful it would be if they could kill a new Transcendent while regaining their freedom?

Killing a new Transcendent, with the Infernal Palace giving their word in not taking revenge, was the primary rule of the ‘Transcendent Battle of Life and Death’!

“It seem this native Transcendent loves battle.” Xue Ying was aware that the killing intent this native Transcendents was radiating was much stronger than such intent he had previously experienced during his third battle.

*Hong~*

Xue Ying started off with a thought in mind, forming the turbulent waves of water which became a huge maelstrom covering most of the battleground.

The undercurrent was constantly moving.

That native Transcendent, wielding a shield and a great axe, mildly frowned before giving a sneer of disdain. With large steps, he began his charge. Even though the constantly changing undercurrent pulled at him, this huge native was able to control his body's strength to counterbalance the maelstrom.

*'He has reached the realm of Power Perfectly as One.'* Xue Ying immediately concluded, *'The waves of water have a minimal effect on him.'*

“死吧，人类！”

“Die, human!”

The huge native turned sideways, his left hand holding onto the great shield as he utilised the entire momentum of his body thrusting his shield forward and bashing at Xue Ying.

The nearly five meters tall native's had a shield relative to his size. As such, it was likewise huge. The shield was like an enormous wall that rushed at Xue Ying. If the incoming attack was simply one weapon clashing against his spear, there might be some dependency how good one's technique was. But right now, the battle was simply a wall made out of a shield coming his way... and it was quite troublesome to deal with. Xue Ying did not have any good techniques to handle that wall of steel coming his way.

*'I'll use this chance to test his awareness of the situation.'*

Xue Ying immediately retreated before stabbing out with his spear – like a poisonous snake – touching against that huge shield.

*Hong~* A suppressive resisting force immediately transmitted itself onto the spear. It was fortunate that this was merely a feint, but even still, the spear vibrated with multiple layers of force as it tried to shed the impact, resulting in Xue Ying flying backwards.

“Such huge strength.” Xue Ying was startled.

“You cannot escape!” At the moment Xue Ying flew backwards, that huge man

came rushing forward, slashing out with his great axe with a power that seemed like even the heavens and the earth were going to be cut apart.

Xue Ying's spear was just like water, soft to an extreme. At that moment when the spear clashed against the axe, the unpredictable force caused the axe to change in its direction.

"Crush!" The huge native's shield immediately follow up after the attack, sweeping towards Xue Ying.

The great shield and great axe continuously swept at him.

Xue Ying was pressed to continuously defend himself. Between the huge native's rich fighting experience, and his techniques that reached Shield Grandmaster and Axe Grandmaster, this result was inevitable! This combination of both techniques were truly united as one.

*'This native is extremely powerful, and he uses a shield and axe, both heavy weapons, so fast and ferociously.'* Xue Ying was doing his utmost to defend while thinking at the same time, *'With him suppressing me head-on, even though my Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences has some unpredictability and softness, I can still do nothing against him.'*

There were many schools of fighting.

The soft and unpredictable spear techniques... faced against such an head-on suppression, had no ways of overcoming it!

It could be clearly seen that the Infernal Palace didn't leave the slightest possibility that luck could play a factor in any of these new Transcendent matches. From the third match, with the lightning quick Native Transcendent, to the fifth match, where this native Transcendent was both a 'Shield Grandmaster' and an 'Axe Grandmaster' who used an upright and suppressive technique! These battles were meant to test the new Transcendents in every possible area such that one would be defeated if he was vulnerable in any single area!

That frightening axe sliced through the air. Should he get cut by it, Xue Ying would certainly die!

*'If I insist on holding on as such, I will only be defeated in the end. I must find a way to retaliate!'*

At this moment when Xue Ying flew back, he suddenly sprang forward with his spear raised up high – akin to someone trying to split apart the skies – bringing with him endless valiance as he hacked downwards! As his spear arced downwards, flames appeared that were just like a meteorite landing.

Fire of Myriad Existences, explosive and ferocious, directly met with the crushing attack!

Judging based on its head-on power, it was a great increase compared to the spear technique utilising the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences! Even though it was not quite twice the power, it could be considered close. Furthermore, as one's comprehension of the Realms increased, the differences between spear techniques of different Profound Mysteries would become greater. The spear technique using the Fire of Myriad Existences would become fiercer and fiercer, while the spear technique using Water of Myriad Existences would become more unpredictable.

“You’ve come at the right time!” The huge native was excited. He immediately slashed down with the great axe in his hand! He wanted to chop apart the spear belonging to the human in front of him, cutting this human to death!

*Bang!*

A loud collision resounded out.

The clash caused Xue Ying to convulse so much that he flew backwards from the aftermath. That huge native was, similarly, impacted from the huge contact and his entire body trembled uncontrollably – preventing him from charging forward for the kill.

“Pu.” Xue Ying’s mouth was full of the smell of blood, yet his eyes were filled with excitement. From the start of the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, this was the first time where he felt the sensation he had felt when he fought with Xiang Pang Yun in the past! That pressure and anxiety of standing on a fine line between life and death! Even though the ‘Severing Wind: Fifteen Swords’ previously gave him a thrilling feeling – of the threat of death – that feeling had only been for a single moment.

“This Transcendent Battle of Life and Death is getting more and more interesting.” Xue Ying was exhilarated. This was finally the type of battle where

he could truly sharpen his body. Standing on the fine line between life and death, this sensation caused his entire body to tremble with excitement. The threat of death simulating his true life instinct and enabling him to enter a perfect condition for battle.

---



## Book 5: Chapter 18 – The Sixth Match of the Battle of Life and Death

---

The waves of water were turbulent.

The huge native was like a rock, unmoving. Furthermore, he was close to five meters tall. How big would his body be? Xue Ying's height did not even reach this native Transcendent's thigh. The huge native once again casually bashed at Xue Ying with his shield, like an oncoming rushing wall. Casually swinging his axe... Xue Ying found himself hardpressed to evade the attack. If instead of being large, this huge native was smaller but more agile, Xue Ying might have a better chance of overcoming him.

But this native Transcendent suppressed Xue Ying with his straightforward techniques, enjoying his advantage to his heart's content by utilising his huge body and strength.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying is in a dire situation. I'm afraid he is going to be defeated in this fifth match."

"Hmph. Relying on the unpredictability of his Water of Myriad Existences to defend against this giant's upright suppression is something totally useless! He has no further hope for this battle!"

"I've heard that he has an awakened Primordial Bloodline. Maybe after activating it, he might turn the tables around."

"The few of you should not belittle others. Who knows? Dong Bo Xue Ying might break through in the spur of the moment! That year, Qiu Chi Bai actually broke through during his fifth match in a life and death situation, allowing him to attain the second level of the Realm of Myriad Existences before winning the sixth match."

At the eastern viewing platform, some of these Transcendents were sitting ramrod straight, totally focused on the match.

"Xue Ying."

“Little brother Xue Ying.”

Qiu Chi Bai and the other Tranquil Sun Province’s Transcendents were filled with anxiety. From what they saw, without activating his Power Bloodline, Xue Ying would have a hard time winning this battle!

“What a pity that Xue Ying is still too young, and his comprehension of the Realms is lacking quite a bit,” Peng Shan commented.

.....

Xue Ying was, instead, not anxious at all. He fought in an exceptionally happy mood.

His spear whipped around, at times soft and unpredictable, while at other times, fierce and explosive! As for Xue Ying’s opponent, out of ten strikes, six or seven of the attacks were extremely aggressive, with most of them meeting force with force.

*Hong~ Hong~*

*‘A straightforward suppression seems to have no inherent flaws. But he is way too ferocious! The best fighting techniques would have both Yin and Yang, both soft and hard!’* That year, Xue Ying had comprehended the Fire of Myriad Existences first, before realising that something was wrong. He realised the meaning behind firmness and flexibility before comprehending the Water of Myriad Existences.

Whenever he pondered about the World...

He understood that everything had two sides – both Yin and Yang. Purely attacking with hardness and suppressing with an upright method might have good results, but if he could not win the match within the short period of time, there might be chances for his opponent to retaliate!

*‘He has tenacity.’*

*‘But I have both hardness and softness, thus granting me hope of winning the battle. He might seem to have no flaws... Then I’ll create some during the battle!’* Xue Ying was different from the usual Transcendents. Transcendent knights could be classified under two categories – those who had many life and

death battles right from the beginning and those who preferred to experiment and ponder. The first type used their battle experience to comprehend and constantly refine their techniques during these battles, allowing for greater comprehension of the Realms. Such Transcendents included Qiu Chi Bai. He loved battles, and every battle he fought made him even stronger, before finally, he had condensed the 'True Meaning of Void Cleavage'.

As for the other Transcendents, they did not participate in many life and death battles. Instead, they would spend long periods of time building a solid foundation before continuing to refine themselves and finally, reaching a higher comprehension of the Realms!

Xue Ying belonged to this latter group of Transcendents.

After becoming a Transcendent, he did not have many of these intense battles! He only participated in the battles within the half-month period at Mountain Range of Desolation, the battle with the Demonic Emissary, and with Xiang Pang Yun – these three battles that were the most intense.

Thereafter, within the valley of the Black-Wind Abyss, inside the underground great hall, the six years were spent by himself in trying to cultivate through self-comprehension. At the most, he would fight and learn with the two Transcendent Refiner Organisms. Other than that, there were no battles of life and death.

Maybe...

He had inherited the strong points from his mother – Xue Ying loved thinking, investigating and summarising.

It was the same during battles. While fighting with the huge native, Xue Ying did not feel anxious. Instead, during the short exchange, he immediately understood the weak and strong points of his opponent before planning out the battle according to his own strong points.

*Hong hong hong~*

The clashes from both sides were extremely ferocious and explosive.

Under the operation of spear techniques using the Profound Mystery of the Fire of Myriad Existences, even though it was weaker by a level, the huge native

was still affected by the vibration. His arms became numb, and his body staggered. Under the constant clashes, Xue Ying was keen to uncover any flaws in the giant's techniques with the goal of killing this huge native. But apparently, the native was indeed a Shield Grandmaster and would never give Xue Ying an easy chance to attack.

But defenses could be broken down after enough time passed as long as the right measures were utilised against such a defense. As long as one was patient, the chance would definitely arrive!

*Hong!* Following Xue Ying's horizontal strike against the shield, under the huge impact, the spearhead of the spear in Xue Ying's hand vibrated to the extent that he had to retreat backwards.

But Xue Ying had already devised a counter-measure. The spear rotated 180 degrees, with the tail of the spear becoming the head, and the spearhead at the end.

*Xiu!*

The spear in his hand instantaneously stabbed outwards!

Using the tail of the spear to stab!

This spear tail had also rotated as it formed an arc, bringing with it a frighteningly powerful and unpredictable power as well as allowing streams of water to revolve around it.

"Ah." The huge native was careless. After all, it was rare for someone to stab out using the tail of the spear. Even though it was not sharp, this stab... was similar to the stabbing principle of staff techniques – a terrifying power.

The shield did not have the time to block the attack. It was only through the use of that great axe, with a desperate sweep, that the native Transcendent could hurriedly parry the attack.

*Pu.*

The tail of the spear clashed against the axe head.

The tail was sleek, and did not have any sharpness. Furthermore, with an unpredictable rotating power in play, where even the naked eyes could not the

movement arc, and with just merely a touch and a rotate, the spear bypassed the axe.

*Pu!*

The rod hit the head!

The sleek end of the spear pointed right at the huge native's throat. With an unpredictable penetrative power, it instantly ran through. *Hong~* That thick spear tail was still rotating when it penetrated through, forcefully milling out a circular wound in the throat! After all, the neck of that huge man was thick, and if the wound was too small, he would not die.

"Kill!" The huge native's throat was run through with the spear until a huge wound could be seen. His eyes were still wide as he intended to continue attacking with his shield.

Xue Ying immediately retreated backwards.

*Sou sou sou.*

He increased the distance between them.

That huge aborigine stood with his eyes wide opened, before he covered his neck with one of his hands. But ultimately, it was futile. The hole was too big, and the huge lifeforce his body had was not enough to save him.

He stood there for two breaths of time, before finally falling down!

*Hua!*

At that moment, some of the Transcendents who were watching stood up. They were all watching in amazement as that huge native's body fell.

He won?

Xue Ying's method of winning was shocking to many of the Transcendents!

"This Dong Bo Xue Ying integrates both water and fire in his spear techniques during close combat, instilling both firmness and flexibility in it! When he is defending with softness, there are hardly any flaws. At the same time, when he is attacking fiercely, it is extremely ferocious. Furthermore, the transition from a hard spear technique to a soft spear technique... is very natural."

“That huge native originally had no flaws, but because he transitioned from hardness to hardness, flaws were eventually engineered.”

“So formidable.”

Many of the Transcendents praised Xue Ying.

Transcendents who walked down the two extremes might be very powerful, but their weaknesses would be extremely obvious!

For those like Xue Ying, focusing on both offensive and defensive, both firmness and flexibility... were people who are extremely tough! But in reality, Transcendents who chose to walk down this path were rare. That was because, Transcendents had a limited amount of energy. By walking down a single extreme path... they could easily raise their combat power! Even though Xue Ying's style of technique was perfect in almost all areas, too much energy would be needed.

.....

*Dong!* Following that, the drum beat reverberated in the Hall of Life and Death. Countless mortals were exhilarated, with many Transcendents standing up as well. Those who did not stand were still watching the battles thoroughly. It was only people like the Cloud City's Lord Bu, the number one assassin Old granny Shen Ye, and some others who were able to casually watch the matches at ease.

The sixth match was about to start.

The sixth match was the battle where Qiu Chi Bai won only after attaining the second level of his comprehension in Realms of Myriad Existences.

“The sixth match.” Xue Ying took a deep breath. This was a crucial match would be much more difficult than the previous few matches.

*Hua.*

A figure descended from the skies.

It was a green-haired, two meter tall man. He had a sturdy body, with an expression that looked like it was carved from stone. His hair was quite luxuriant. Even as he was standing, he gave out an inexplicable breath.

---

## Book 5: Chapter 19 – Evaluation

---

At the moment he descended onto the ground, turbulent water waves formed in the battleground and slowly transformed into an enormous maelstrom that surrounded the green, long-haired male.

“Water? You actually want to use water to play with me?” That green-haired male sneered. At the same time, a frightening chill immediately spread out around him, freezing the previously turbulent waves of water with a ‘*kakaka*’ sound. Even the maelstrom ripples froze in-place as the temperature of the entire battleground rapidly dropped.

“So cold.” Xue Ying could feel the biting chill as frost slowly covered him.

With just a thought, the Transcendent Qi around his body immediately moved, shattering the frost that formed on his body. Even still, however, the surrounding chill coagulated once again... Xue Ying could only depend on his Transcendent Qi to constantly expel and shatter the frost. The moment he stopped would be the moment he became an ice sculpture. He was even unable to of borrow strength from the fire of the world. Such an act would be futile as the frost was pervasive enough that the moment the power of fire start forming, it would be banished immediately.

*‘This is really so cold despite me having Transcendent Qi protecting my body! Furthermore, with the primordial bloodline awakening, my fleshly body has been strengthened, and yet, I can still feel the chill penetrating through my bones.’* Xue Ying was surprised. This sort of chill would instantly freeze ordinary Legend knights to death! And even an ordinary new Transcendent with a weaker body would shiver from the chill. It was mainly due to the fact that Xue Ying’s body was already at the Sky Realm middle stage when he broke through that led to him being able to deal with such a powerful opponent during the sixth battle.

Other than the feeling of coldness pervading into his bones, the endless chill even produced a powerful suppressive and binding force, as if it were a 5000 kilogram weight pressing on his body.

Chill, suppression...

All these factors reduced his own combat power to only about 60 to 70 percent of his usual abilities. This green-haired male in front of him could indeed be categorised as a 'middle ranking native Transcendent'.

"Human, come. Let me see how many ways you have to try and take me down." The green-haired man mocked. His body was surrounded by a silvery-white layer of ice, as if he had become an iceman.

"Hmph." Xue Ying's Transcendent Qi constantly revolved around his body, breaking the forming frost. With a blur of movement, he stepped on top of the frozen water waves and then appeared in front of the green-haired male.

*Hu!*

The movement of the spear became shadows – as unpredictable as ever.

The green-haired male wore a pair of silver gloves on his hands. He tried to grab onto Xue Ying's spear, but every time his fingers clashed against the spear, he felt how slippery and difficult it was to grasp. The spearhead utilised a rotational force before immediately stabbing out towards his body, *chi chi chi* ~ The black spear stabbed respectively onto the male's body, chest, and throat. However, the attacks only left white scars on top of that green-haired male's layer of ice covering his body. Furthermore, the layer of ice on his body even had some streams of light revolving around it. As soon as several of the white scars were stabbed, they were immediately restored back to their original condition!

"Such an unpredictable spear technique that even I could not grab hold of it. I was so frightened by how powerful I thought it could be." The green-haired male laughed.

Hmph.

Xue Ying's spear technique started transforming – mutating into a state of fierceness as his spear technique brought flames with it. This caused his attacks to skyrocket in both speed and power.

*Peng peng peng...*

The green-haired male easily blocked Xue Ying's attacks with his palms. Despite



the layer of ice coating his palms, the protection still cracked apart. Even still, the silvery-white gloves he wore could not be broken through. At the same time, he utilised this chance to rush inwards as he wanted to kill Xue Ying in a close combat match!

Xue Ying immediately retreated furiously.

*'Damn.'* Xue Ying's expression changed, *'This native Transcendent's comprehension has reached the Realm of Myriad Existences!'*

Having comprehended the Realm of Myriad Existences, this native Transcendent's fighting techniques would become formidable as well..

As for him?

If he depended on his understanding of the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences, the unpredictability would allow him to stab his opponent's body, but the his opponent's protective layer of ice could not be broken through.

And if he depended on the Fire of Myriad Existences, he could break through the layer of protective ice. However, such an attack was too direct. The green-haired male could easily defend against it.

Both approaches had their pros and cons.

Unless he displayed his 'Water and Fire Twin Dragon Attack'! This move was created by him after integrating both the Profound Mysteries behind Fire and Water of Myriad Existences, allowing the technique to gain both the advantages of fire and water, even to the extent of their power stacking and multiplying to give an even greater increase. However, this one move... was the final technique he had kept as a secret. This Transcendent Battle of Life and Death was a very precious opportunity for him to train and refine himself in a relatively safe environment.

Thus, he would certainly make use of every single opportunity. Only when absolutely necessary would he be willing to use the 'Water and Fire Twin Dragon Attack'.

Right now, he could temper himself in both the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire if he used his usual techniques. As long as his understanding of both the Profound Mysteries behind Water and Fire increased, his 'Water and Fire Twin

Dragon Attack' would have an even greater power.

"Hahaha, human, you will definitely lose." The green-haired male crazily advanced. Under the endless chill's suppression, Xue Ying's speed decreased to the extent that he could not escape.

He could only depend on his spear to parry against the attacks.

The green-haired male tried time after time to get close to Xue Ying.

As for Xue Ying, he could only use his spear technique's sweep, stab, burst, wrap, and cut, alternating between the Profound Mysteries behind Water and Fire, to block the incoming attacks.

.....

Everyone else could see that Xue Ying was absolutely on the losing end. He could not even threaten that green-haired native Transcendent, and was being entirely suppressed!

In the corner of the eastern viewing platform...

The hunchback old granny finally revealed a smile, "As I've said before. With how young this brat is, it's already amazing that he can win six matches!"

"Beautiful Ye, you previously said that this brat could not even win six matches." The bald and bony old man Chao Qing instead said in a proud manner, "Right now, even though Dong Bo Xue Ying is on the losing end, he hasn't released his primordial bloodline. I believe that the moment he releases it, winning this sixth match will not be a problem."

"Hmph. It's because he depends on the primordial bloodline! If he did not have it, I'm sure he could never win six matches." Old Granny Ye coldly snorted.

Chao Qing's smile became extremely crooked as he could not hold back his delight, "Hehehe... Beautiful, don't forget that our wager previously was only on whether Dong Bo Xue Ying could win six matches or not. You said he wouldn't, and I said he would! As long as he wins the sixth match, regardless of whether it's because of his primordial bloodline or not, I win this wager of ours. Your 5000 kilograms of Origin Stones are mine!"

"If it's yours, then so be it. I say, you old codger, you are already dying and yet,

what use will these 5000 kilograms of Origin Stones have?” That Old Granny Ye unhappily said.

Such a big wager was rare, even amongst Demigods.

It was only these two old people who were nearing their end of lifespan who dared to have such huge gamble, as after all, treasures had lost meaning to them! Once they died, their treasures would still be left behind for their descendents.

“Of course, they are of great use for me. I can always give them to the talented disciples of my Water Daoist Faction, can’t I? For instance, I can give some to this Dong Bo Xue Ying. *Ze ze ze*, this is the 5000 kilograms of Origin Stones won over from Bloodshed Tavern’s number one assassin Beautiful Ye! Just casually giving them to my juniors will still make me happy.” Chao Qing was extremely joyful.

“Hmph hmph, count yourself lucky. It’s just that I’ve calculated wrongly only.” Old Granny Ye looked downwards, “This Dong Bo Xue Ying brat’s primordial bloodline is merely a Power Outbreak and is something very common. It might not be of great help in the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death. At the most, he will win one or two more matches! Initially, I’d thought that this brat was too young, and has just stepped into Transcendence with just the first stage of understanding in the Realm of Myriad Existences. Who would have thought that he could combine both the Profound Mysteries behind Water and Fire to such a degree of perfection, allowing him to kill his way to the sixth match!”

The vision of Old Granny Ye was sinister, and her original estimations were not wrong.

It was just that Xue Ying’s understanding of the Profound Mysteries behind Water and Fire was constantly on the rise. Even though he was still at the first stage of comprehension, it was on the higher end of understanding within the Realm of Myriad Existences. Furthermore, his integration of both Profound Mysteries was done in such a perfect manner.

That was why he could kill his way through to the sixth match without depending on his Power Outbreak!

“Losing means losing.” Chao Qing teased.

“It was just me being careless.” Old Granny Ye was still trying to justify herself.

“Losing means losing,” old Chao Qing continuously struck back.

“You shut your mouth!” Old Granny Ye stared back.

“Losing means losing.” Chao Qing was smiling to the extent that his lips were crooked.

“You, you old codger. Do you still dare to have another wager!” Old Granny Ye gritted her teeth.

Chao Qing was startled.

“I bet that this brat will not win the eighth match! At the most, he will stop at the seventh!” Old Granny Ye stared at him, “Do you dare? The bet will still be 5000 kilograms of Origin Stone!”

Chao Qing became silent.

Under his estimation, Xue Ying would need to release his Power Bloodline to win the sixth match, and even the outcome of the seventh match would be uncertain! Winning the eighth match would be entirely hopeless by then!

But... having lived for a lifetime, he was nearing the end of his lifespan. Sometimes, being wilful was just that – being wilful!

“I dare!” Chao Qing said.

“You really dare to wager?” Old Granny Ye was startled.

“Haha, I’ve already won 5000 kilograms from you. At the most, I’ll just return them to you!” Chao Qing laughed out loud.

“You are sure wilful.” Old Granny Ye was full of smiles as if she had bloomed into a flower.

“Too many Origin Stones have made me wilful.” Chao Qing delightfully said.

.....

Mountain Lord He, Faction Head Si Kong Yang, and City Lord Bu were the true overlords of today’s human race. They were more peaceful than the rest.

The City Lord Bu was still in her reclining position as she casually watched the

match while drinking wine, “Not bad. He could even make it to the sixth match. However, from these circumstances... he will have to depend on his primordial bloodline – Power Bloodline to win this match! At the very most, he will win the seventh match before being defeated in his eighth.”

“What City Lord Bu said is true.” Mountain Lord He and Faction Head Si Kong Yang agreed smilingly.

---

## Book 5: Chapter 20 – It Was Merely a Small Surprise

---

Other than those Demigods with incredible power, Transcendents who had cultivated for a certain period of time could figure out what was happening, “This Dong Bo Xue Ying is almost out of techniques! He will most likely have to use his primordial bloodline.”

During this half-year period before the battle, Xue Ying had gone to taverns and restaurants, befriending some of the Transcendents. These Transcendents had then sensed the additional power emitting from his fleshy body, thus allowing them to conclude that Xue Ying would most likely have already awakened his primordial bloodline! During the battle, as the audience discussed the contest among themselves... they would naturally talk about his primordial bloodline. Just by this word of mouth, the news spread out to most of the Transcendents present.

.....

Indeed, everything had gone according to what they hypothesized.

This native Transcendent’s combat power was so formidable that he could entirely suppress Xue Ying. If Xue Ying does not activate his primordial bloodline, then he would certainly lose after some inestimable period of time!

*Hu.*

*Hua.*

The spear whipped about in the air.

At times, it was unpredictable and strange, as if it were a huge python trying to attack. At other times, it would roll in a forceful manner, before hacking downwards. There were even times when the spear was swept out in an overbearing manner, wanting to sweep across a thousand soldiers, and times when the spear shaft was being used to smack outwards...

Xue Ying had long become one with the entire spear as he displayed the spear technique to his heart’s content.

*'Exciting, so exciting.'*

This acute feeling of contentment brought euphoria.

Xue Ying was battling with vigour from the bottom of his soul. Ever since his youth, he had madly trained his spear techniques. Other than the desire to save his parents, he had developed a passion for the spear! Only when he was enjoying the battle from the depths of his heart... could he ever reach the rare situation during a life and death battle of achieving something amazing! To him, chasing after the pinnacle of spear techniques was the ambition he had set deep within his spirit.

Even after becoming a Spear Grandmaster, he could still not see the end of spear techniques!

Ever since achieving mastery, he had comprehended more of the natural world, absorbing the Profound Mysteries behind it, before bringing them to perfection with his own spear techniques. He understood the Fire of Myriad Existences first, and then the Water of Myriad Existences! All these understandings allowed his spear techniques to reach a state closer to perfection.

Right now, he was under the pressure of a life and death battle!

This pressure allowed him to display his spear techniques to the fullest extent. Along the way of joyfully displaying his skills, he would utilise this chance to understand and refine his spear techniques. The battle provided a chance for him to see the power of every move and style he had! Only during an actual battle could he better understand and experiment with his own spear techniques. The fifth battle's opponent was someone who used an upright suppression on him. As for the sixth battle, it was an opponent who specialised in close combat! Different battle styles allowed him to test his own spear techniques from different directions.

*'My spear techniques are still lacking, especially in close combat. The spear must become even softer!'*

*'The power is lacking as well, especially during explosive attacks!'*

The way Xue Ying cultivated was different from many others.

The others would feel and sense the wind, or the water...

But for Xue Ying, it was practising his spear as he chased after the perfection in its techniques! The Profound Mysteries behind the World were like elements to him. He would merge these elements into his spear techniques, just like how he felt when his spear techniques were too hard and rigid, too fierce and lacking tenacity and coherence. This eventually led him to comprehend the Water of Myriad Existences, to the extent of integrating those two Profound Mysteries as one. All of these were side rewards he gained during the process of chasing towards the 'Perfection of Spear Techniques'.

.....

As the battle went on, Xue Ying began to reflect more and more s regarding his own spear techniques. He temporarily placed these thoughts in his heart until the moment when he was free and at peace. Only then would he bring them out to understand those reflections further.

*'No wonder so many people love to refine themselves during life and death battles. Indeed, this battle has greatly aided the development of my spear techniques.'* Xue Ying felt the aura in his mind start to flicker relentlessly. He realised that his own spear techniques had many areas for improvement, and these areas would provide him guidance on where to direct his cultivation, *'This single life and death battle brought to me a reward greater than a hundred days of cultivation.'*

*Hong hong hong~*

Becoming one with the spear, even though Xue Ying was entirely on the back foot, he was still filled with tenacity as he proceeded on with firmness and flexibility. He continued holding on under the suppression of that green-haired male for the time taken to brew a cup of tea.

*Pu.* The green-haired male forced Xue Ying's spear shaft up against his chest. Xue Ying continuously retreated backwards. At the same time, he vomited out a mouthful of fresh blood.

Under this period taken to brew a cup of tea, the green-haired male suppressed Xue Ying the whole time to the extent that he incurred heavy bodily injuries. At the same time, Xue Ying had used up much of his Transcendent Qi.



*'I might not be able to hold on any longer.'* Xue Ying understood clearly about his situation.

Die.

That Transcendent green-haired native was exasperated. He had not expected that even under his absolute suppression, his opponent could still hold his ground for the time taken to brew a cup of tea. This made his attacks fiercer and fiercer as he tried getting closer to his opponent, madly attacking his way forward! Furthermore, under the terrifying chill in the environment, Xue Ying's speed slowed along with his flexibility. He had no chance of escaping.

"Die!" His palm unexpectedly penetrated through Xue Ying's spear defence as it headed towards the Xue Ying with the aim of penetrating through his chest.

"Mn?" The Demigod of Infernal Palace in charge of overlooking the battle had a change in his expression. He was prepared to intervene at any time.

*Ka!*

Xue Ying's suddenly rotated his spear's shaft. The tail of the spear moved like a meat grinder as it gripped the green-haired male's incoming arms. That native Transcendent sneered in disdain. Such a move was beneath his consideration... Xue Ying's spear technique would require the full power utilised with the Profound Mystery of Fire before it could even break through the icy layer protecting his body. Just a mere stab with the tail of the spear could even be blocked with a defence not as great as his icy layer of protection. Thus, knowing that his body could completely withstand Xue Ying's move, the native continued on with his palm attack towards Xue Ying's chest!

*Hong~* Coldness flashed in Xue Ying's eyes as a faint blood-red Qi stream enveloped his body.

Power Bloodline outbreak!

*Hong!* Suddenly, with that single move, a *ka cha* resounded out! The green-haired male's sturdy right forearm became twisted entirely, with even the bones seen protruding from it.

"Ah." The expression of that green-haired male instantly changed as he retreated! A broken arm was a small matter. After all, Transcendent natives had

fast restorative power. But, Xue Ying's power actually became so formidable within such short period of time. He was now even stronger than the native Transcendent to the extent of even breaking his arm?

At the same time the green-haired male retreated furiously...

The spear in Xue Ying's hand moved in a frightening arc as it stabbed towards the green-haired male. That green-haired male used his left hand to block the attack, but with the unpredictability of the Profound Mystery of Water, he could not block the attack. The spear bypassed his hand. The green-haired male tried his best to evade the attack, but with a '*pu chi*' sound, the spear stabbed into the right part of that green-haired male's chest.

He retreated at an extremely fast speed, pulling out the spear as he backed away. This movement created a hole in his chest. However, without stabbing through the heart, such an injury was considered fairly light for the native Transcendent.

"Die for me." At the same time when Xue Ying's spear left the body of that green-haired male, he immediately chased upwards before chopping down fiercely with his spear.

Xue Ying's spear techniques were too fast.

First, it was a close combat attack. Following that, a stab before finally chopping down fiercely with his spear! One was chasing forward while the other was retreating backwards. Of course, the one who was retreating backwards would have a great decrease in his speed. And the reason why he was retreating backwards... was because that green-haired male needed to continue to face Xue Ying's attacks. Under the situation of such a close quarters chase, how could he leave his back to such a frightening opponent?

*Hong!* Chopping down fiercely, the spear brought with it endless power which could only be blocked with a single usable hand by that green-haired male. Following that, an enormous sound resounded as the spear broke through his guard before chopping downwards on the head of that green-haired male.

*Boom!*

The green-haired male's eyes became wide-rounded. At the same time, he was

chopped downwards with a force that firmly entrenched him within the ice below, albeit with a difference – fresh blood dripping down from his head. Everything within his head had already become paste.

.....

“Good.”

“Brilliant.”

“Exciting, exciting.”

“So formidable, so formidable. The moment he wants to make a comeback, he can make it! Within the blink of an eye, that native Transcendent is already dead.”

The countless mortals within the western viewing platform were all excited. Even the Legend knights and mages trembled with excitement. Before, Xue Ying was actually being suppressed entirely for the time taken to brew a cup of tea. However, when Xue Ying decided to explode, with just a close combat attack, a stab, and a fierce hack... he killed the native Transcendent.

How fast was Xue Ying’s movement? Only mortals of the Star levels could barely see the faint shadow of Xue Ying’s retaliatory spear technique.

Regardless, they still felt excitement from experiencing it!

“So formidable.” Yu Jing Qiu was extremely excited. She was happy for Xue Ying.

Before the battle started, she had understood that Transcendents who won at least six matches within the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death were all amazing experts! According to legend, the Saint rankings number one Eternal Wind Knight ‘Qiu Chi Bai’ had won six matches that year when he participated the battle. Furthermore, Xue Ying was even younger than him, and he had already won six matches. As a result, she felt really happy for him, as if she won the battle herself.

.....

“This Dong Bo Xue Ying has indeed used his primordial bloodline.”

“It seems that his combat power has reached his limit, and thus, he has to use

his bloodline. I estimate that the seventh match would be inconclusive. Maybe if his luck is good, he might win the seventh match. But the eighth match will be one where he will definitely be defeated.”

“Mn, the moment he uses his primordial bloodline is the moment he is almost out of means.”

“Even still, he is quite formidable. How old is he? Without even using his primordial bloodline, he killed his way through the sixth match! It is something to be proud of.”

Transcendents had their own evaluation from the battle.

Even the Demigods, including the Vice Head Chao Qing, the Faction Head Si Kong Yang and Mountain Lord He, and the Demigod of the Infernal Palace had all made their evaluation of Xue Ying.

They greatly appreciated him.

They understood that the moment he first displayed his true combat power produced a situation much better than what they expected! Xue Ying’s understanding of both the Profound Mysteries of Fire and Water was already relatively good, and that they could even be combined together to such an extent. But it was just merely a little surprise, that’s all!

---

## Book 5: Chapter 21 – A Big Surprise Instead!

---

“End of the second round of matches. After an hour break, we’ll continue with the third round!” A loud voice reverberated throughout the entire Hall of Life and Death. Hidden in that voice was a slight hint of delight as the majority of new Transcendents would not even have the qualifications to start a battle among the third round of matches. Even as the emissary in charge of the Infernal Palace’s matters, such words were rarely spoken.

“*Hong long long~~~*” The gates of the Hall of Life and Death were once again, opened.

Countless mortals and even Transcendents were still excitedly talking about Xue Ying. After all, any single Transcendent who could kill his way through to the third round of battles was someone worthy of admiration.

As for Xue Ying, he went through an opened side-door in one of the corners of the battleground.

.....

Within a pavilion in the gardens.

Xue Ying stood around thoughtfully while absorbing the Origin Stone in his hand to replenish the energy used previously. Still, the previous battle did not consume too much of his energy reserve. With the outbreak of his Power Bloodline, he had instantly eliminated his opponent. As for the injuries on his body that had been incurred, more than half of them had long been recovered! Within the time taken to brew a cup of tea, Xue Ying had absorbed the ‘Primitive World Energy’ within the Origin Stone, reaching an optimal condition in both his state of mind and physique!

With a flip of his hand, Xue Ying took out his spear and started training.

*‘The spear techniques I’m currently using are still too weak in power. At the time of attack, the explosive power isn’t clean enough.’* Xue Ying stood where he was, and with a turn of his wrist, the spear traversed through an arc before stabbing out! Flames accompanied the stab, bringing out quite a frightening

explosive power with it. The waves of air produced from the after-effects smashed into the distant walls in the garden, though no damage could be seen.

*‘I need to make the explosive attack even cleaner! Executing it sloppily will only lessen the explosive power.’* Previously in the battle, Xue Ying had sudden inspirations that led to the discovery of a multitude of problems in his spear techniques. Even after the battle ended, he was still thinking about how to refine his spear technique.

“Pu.”

“Pu.”

As the spear was stabbed outwards, some occasional slight changes could be seen.

Xue Ying was pondering and finding the right move that would be suited to his theory. Drifting flames surrounded him as he extended his senses to feel the endless Profound Mysteries hidden behind the World Flame. He searched for an answer.

Half an hour later.

“This time, I’ll succeed.” Xue Ying’s eyes brightened as he, once again, stabbed out with his spear.

The spear was just like a flaming meteor, thrusting out explosively at a speed akin to lightning. Traces of flames were left behind in the air from his attack.

Clean stab!

Even though it was seemingly ordinary and with an even weaker momentum as compared to his previous attack, the current power was much more focused. This change allowed the attacking power to become even more fearsome!

*‘I was too foolish in blindly chasing after the explosive power of flames previously. In reality, completely condensing the explosive power into a single point would have an even greater power.’* An expression of joy broke out on Xue Ying’s face as he stabbed out with his spear once again, *pu pu pu*... Vestiges of the spear were seen. The resounding echo from the attack became softer. Instead, traces of flames from the meteor-like attack were seen staying in the air

for a long period of time.

Having condensed the explosive attack completely to a single point, its power became even greater.

*Hu~~~*

With a single thought, Xue Ying controlled the power of World Flame in the surroundings. Clearly, his control of the World Flame had increased greatly. Countless Flame started gathering before condensing into one that burned hotter! There was a great increase in the suppressive power of this current flame!

*‘Realm of Myriad Existences second level!’* Xue Ying laughed, *‘I’ve finally reached the second level of the Realm of Myriad Existences in my understanding of the Profound Mystery of Fire!’*

Having a breakthrough in comprehension of the Realms, there would be a qualitative change in his control of the World Energy!

When he was at the underground Great Hall for six years, the comprehension of Profound Mystery of Fire had increased greatly! Half a year after becoming a Transcendent, his understanding became even deeper. With the accumulation of even more understanding during this life and death battles, Xue Ying finally saw the light and stepped into the second level of the Profound Mystery of Fire.

*‘Who would have thought I would have a breakthrough now. Usually, the others would breakthrough instantly after enlightenment, yet it was only after an hour of rest did my understanding of Realm breakthrough.’* Xue Ying was spontaneously laughing as he shook his head silently, *‘I have reached the second level of understanding in the Realms of Myriad Existences for Profound Mystery of Fire, but the third round of matches is going to begin now, leaving no time for the Profound Mystery of Water. It’d be better if I try perfecting my ‘Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack.’*

The Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack was in fact, Xue Ying’s first killing technique after transcension.

Fusing both the Profound Mysteries behind Water and Fire led to the creation of such a frightening technique.

Xue Ying kept it a secret. The power of such a move was too great. He would rather first use his own Power Bloodline before that! Only when his understanding of the Profound Mysteries behind 'Water and Fire' increased would the 'Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack' technique become even more formidable.

*'Right now, the Profound Mystery of Water is weaker than the Profound Mystery of Fire. This might lead to some problems with 'Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack'.* Xue Ying immediately displayed his move.

*Omm—*

Just like a Flood Dragon coming out of water, the power rotational power of the spear gathered at the spearhead. Extreme Yin becomes extreme Yang. That attack suddenly became a Fire Dragon! This time, the Fire Dragon was even fiercer than previously, with its power being more focused. Arm-thick waves of air became even clearer as they shot straight towards the distant walls, forming ripples on it.

*'The explosiveness is even cleaner and focused, allowing its power to greatly increase.'* Xue Ying smiled. He did not expect that he could execute the Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack the first time he tried after improving.

*'It seems that this time, I, Dong Bo Xue Ying, am going to scare the daylights out of everyone.'* He felt extreme elation.

Following the original plan, Xue Ying would refine himself in these life and death battles. When he was suppressed to an extremity, his power would definitely shoot upwards! And if he could not win after an increase in strength, he would utilise his killing technique 'Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack'! Following his previous estimation, just by using the killing technique... he should be able to win the eight match easily, with the ninth match being inconclusive!

Right now, with an increase in his comprehension of the Realms, achieving the second level of Profound Mystery of Fire, the Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack would become even more powerful! As such, he was quite confident of winning the ninth match, and even the tenth!

*'Winning nine matches?'* Xue Ying was amazed at himself, *'I bet the record in the past ten thousand years was someone winning nine matches.'*



His own primordial bloodline was very ordinary and yet, he could still win nine matches! How dazzling would that be?

And if he could win the tenth match, that was something extremely shocking!

*'This is the first time I'm revealing myself in front of all of the human Transcendents!'* Xue Ying silently thought, *'I must do my best! Use my full strength to show them who I am!'*

The more devilish intelligent and genius he was, the higher the Infernal Palace would regard him. According to his own understanding of the history of the Xia Clan... humankind had always met dangers from different areas. Thus, if he was talented enough, he should be able to have greater care and cultivation! Furthermore, whoever wanted to set a bounty on him with the Bloodshed Tavern would have to pay an even more hefty sum!

In conclusion, the more talented he displayed himself as, the more benefits he would get.

*'Mn, secure nine and rush to the tenth!'*

*'I'm really looking forward to it.'*

Xue Ying had always been calm throughout the battle of Life and Death. However, he had a loathsome interest at the same time – he looked forward... to the situation where all Transcendents would become dumbfounded at his prowess.

.....

Soon, Xue Ying entered the battleground once again.

He was extremely calm as he stood in the battleground. Looking upwards at the eastern viewing platform, he saw Qiu Chi Bai, Peng Shan and the other Transcendents from Tranquil Sun Province. They were all good friends of his, and were smiling at him. Some of them even raised up their fists.

*'I'll give all of you a big surprise.'* Xue Ying extended his control of the World Energy throughout the entire battleground. Ever since achieving the second level of the Realm of Myriad Existences, his confidence had greatly soared!

---

## Book 5: Chapter 22 – Magic Golden Peacock

---

*Dong!* A deep drum sound reverberated.

A huge figure descended from the skies above. It was actually a black ape about ten meters in height. Within its hand, there was a huge mace spanning more than ten meters long!

“Transcendent Refiner Organism,” Xue Ying murmured.

The first match of every round would be relatively safer than the following matches.

Regardless of whether it was the Qi avatar of Gong Liang Yuan or this Refiner Organism in front of him, at the very most, they would heavily injure Xue Ying, but not kill him! However, the eighth match and ninth match thereafter would be true life and death battles.

Even though it was relatively safer compared to other matches, the difficulty was still very high.

He did not have an easy win over the Qi avatar! As for this Refiner Organism... it would be harder!

*Roar~* The black ape rushed forward as it waved the mace in its hand. Anyone would be appalled just by looking at its ferocity,

Xue Ying immediately used his Power Bloodline, causing faint blood streams to surround him as he moved forward to match the attack.

*Hong hong hong...*

They exchanged tens of moves within the blink of an eye, causing Xue Ying to feel helpless, *‘This Transcendent Refiner Organism has immense strength and is indestructible... I cannot win with just the Profound Mystery of Water!’*

The spear technique imbued with the Profound Mystery of Water was too soft and not fierce enough! Even under the influence of his Power Bloodline, Xue Ying could not affect this big and powerful Transcendent Refiner Organism.

*Hong~*

Turbulent flames suddenly pervaded the surroundings. This flame had an extreme temperature. Coupled with an unseen pressure formed from the power of that flame, it suppressed the Transcendent Refiner Organism.

“Realm of Myriad Existences second level?”

All the Transcendents in the viewing platform stood up in shock, including those powerful Demigods.

“Fall.” Xue Ying’s battle techniques clearly dominated the Refiner Organism. With a flash, he swept out his spear, bringing with it the turbulent flame as it struck the left knee joint of the ape... at the same time, the black ape’s body tilted sideways, which Xue Ying followed up with a fierce hack right to its face!

*Peng~* The black ape rocketed onto the ground!

Being a Refiner Organism, its level of battle techniques could never be compared to human Transcendents. It only had an indestructible body and a powerful strength that made it hard to be defeated. Softness and unpredictability had no meaning to it. It could only be hurt with a strong enough power.

.....

“He actually won!” A faint red light appeared in City Lord Bu’s beautiful eyes as she looked downwards. With a slight upturn of her lips she said, “Who would have thought that this little brat has actually reached the second level of the Realm of Myriad Existences at such a young age.”

“Si Kong, congratulations to you.” Mountain Lord He said from beside him.

“Haha...” Faction Head Si Kong Yang laughed and replied modestly, “He is still very young. Even though his current talent is quite good, that does not mean that he will certainly be an outstanding expert in the future!”

Mountain Lord He lightly replied, “Being able to comprehend the second level of the Realm of Myriad Existences means that he will definitely step into the Saint realm.”

“But if he cannot become a Demigod, that would become a laughing matter,”

Si Kong Yang added casually.

Only becoming a Demigod would one be a true overlord of this world.

The rules and regulations of this world were decided by the many Demigods. With the human race having taken over most of the advantages of the world, it could be said that humans were the true rulers of this world.

Of course, even though all Transcendents of the Sky realm and the Saint realm held onto that hope of becoming a Demigod, only the most talented ones had a chance of succeeding.

Thus...

The Infernal Palace would allow these Sky Realm Transcendents to have the chance to refine themselves through life and death battles! As for the Saint Realm Transcendents, they would have to risk their lives and adventure in the many minor and major Transcendent worlds! Only through these adventures would more Demigods emerge from amongst the Saint Realm Transcendents.

.....

Xue Ying had understood this simple logic. That was why he needed to display his own prowess in this Transcendent Battle of Life and Death! Only when his prowess was magnificent enough would the Infernal Palace regard him highly and groom him! That would lower the chance of dying along his road of being a Transcendent.

After all, most Sky Realm Transcendents actually died within the Infernal World.

As for those who died of old age, only a very few Transcendents fell into that category!

*Dong~* A deep drum beat sounded.

The eighth match started.

Many mortals anxiously watched the matches with excitement.

“The eighth match. It’s actually the eighth match! Even after living in the Xia Capital for more than 80 years, this is my first time seeing the eighth match in the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death!”

“Me too. I’ve not seen one before.”

“This Dong Bo Xue Ying is so young, and yet he could fight his way through to the eighth match.”

All the mortals softly discussed this topic as they watched the battle nervously. They wanted to see who Xue Ying’s opponent was in this eighth match.

Even Transcendents were all excited and anxious at the same time. Many people were viewing the battle standing up!

*Hu.*

A beautiful figure descended.

It was a beautiful golden peacock of about four to five meters tall. A red eyed female, this was actually the ‘Magic Golden Peacock’ from the legends and was an extremely powerful beast, usually of the sixth rank. As for this Magic Golden Peacock... she had transcended to the peak of Sky realm!

*‘My opponent in this eighth match is actually a Transcendent beast!’*

The opponent in the seventh match was a Transcendent Refiner Organism with an extremely low level of inherent danger in combat.

As for the eighth match, it was actually a Transcendent beast caught by humankind! The Beast Clan and Human Clan had a long history, with both sides killing each other for countless ages. They had massacred each other in the past, brewing a hate that was impossible to be removed – a hatred inborn between the races.

As for the opponent he would face in the ninth match, it was an Abyss Demon from the legends! A demon that was caught by humankind.

Due to the rarity of Abyss Demons that were caught, they were placed at the ninth match! Many Demigods might not even see a ninth match occurring at the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death! After all, only by winning the first eight matches would one have the qualifications to battle in the ninth match.

*‘After killing this Transcendent beast, my next opponent will be a demon.’* Xue Ying was honestly looking forward to it.

“You are just at the middle stage of Sky Realm and your human Demigods

decided to use me as your opponent?” The Magic Golden Peacock had a sharp voice. A pair of narrow and long blood-coloured eyes stared at Xue Ying. She closely observed Xue Ying as she spoke. The Beast Clan did not lose out to the humans in terms of intelligence. She was currently trying to find a vulnerability in Xue Ying.

*Hong~* Invisible flames began forming as it enveloped the surroundings. This flame had a strength that suppressed the Magic Golden Peacock.

The Magic Golden Peacock had a layer of golden light surrounding her, separating her from the flames. However, she was startled. Clearly, this human had a higher comprehension of the Realms than her. Her comprehension had only reached the first level.

As she looked on from afar, the peacock did not take the initiative to attack!

“Receive my attack!” Xue Ying began his attack.

Only after killing his opponent would he win! Thus, if his opponent did not move, he would have to be the one to take the initiative!

*Hu.*

In a flash, he reached the side of the Magic Golden Peacock with his Power Bloodline activated! Right now, every battle he fought would require him to release his Power Bloodline! That was because the moment he relaxed, there might be a chance of losing his life.

A spear just like a Flood Dragon stabbed outwards at Xue Ying’s opponent.

*Shua.* The Magic Golden Peacock flapped her wings once, causing her figure to swiftly dodge the attack.

‘*So fast.*’ Xue Ying was startled.

*Xiu xiu xiu...*

As the spear whipped forward, apparitions could be seen alongside the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences. The crux of this type of spear technique was more appropriate for defending. Thus, it had an even weaker power and slower speed. The movement of the peacock was erratic and unpredictable, preventing him from hitting his target.

“Your spear is too slow!” The Magic Golden Peacock sharply said. At the same time, she rushed forward. She flapped her wings. A golden stream could be seen surrounding them, making those wings seemed just like a razor cutting directly at Xue Ying.

Xue Ying immediately exerted strength, causing his spear to sweep over with the power of flames.

*Peng~*

The spear that swept across clashed with the wings.

The Magic Golden Peacock flew backwards from the clash. Her movement remained as erratic as before. Not even a single sign of damage could be seen on her feathers.

*‘The eighth match is actually so difficult?’ Xue Ying felt shocked. This was on a different level of difficulty as compared to what he had estimated, ‘This Magic Golden Peacock’s outer feather is too tough. Bombarding it with attacks will be useless. I guess I’ll have to depend on the sharpness of the spearhead! Maybe this will let me penetrate through the protective feathers and kill it.’*

---

## Book 5: Chapter 23 – True Meaning of Water and Fire?

---

The Golden Magic Peacock moved erratically. The front edge of her wings was as sharp as a blade. Her pair of hook-like enormous claws were just like a machete. With the speed of the Profound Mystery of the Water of Myriad Existences being too slow, it had no use in this battle! Thus, Xue Ying decided to just simply use the spear technique with the recently comprehended second level Profound Mystery of Fire, allowing his spear techniques to be fiercer and more aggressive.

*Hong! Hong! Hong!...*

At times, the spear hacked downwards. At times, it was whipped outwards. And at times, it was stabbed outwards.

Fast as lightning, as he was fought in close quarters with the Golden Magic Peacock, feathers could be seen flying around when Xue Ying stabbed at the wings of the peacock, injuring her.

But these sorts of injuries were not noteworthy to the Golden Magic Peacock. She continued with her close-distance attacks, using her wings and claws... to the extent that she was more focused on killing the human in front of her than caring about such small injuries.

*‘I’ve actually used the spear technique with Profound Mystery of the Fire of Myriad Existences and released my Power Bloodline. Yet the full strength of my stab could only barely penetrate through the feathers and give her some light injuries?’* Xue Ying was dumbfounded and helpless. He finally understood the difficulty of the eighth match. No wonder, Qiu Chi Bai who had no primordial bloodline was defeated in the seventh match and could not even start the eighth match.

*Hong hong hong~*

The roaring sound from both sides attacking could be heard. Two lines of injuries appeared on Xue Ying’s body as he was cut by his opponent’s razor sharp wings. He had not expected that the golden light from the peacock could even



leave her body! Fortunately, her attacking power was too weak. After penetrating through Xue Ying's Transcendent Qi protective covering, the attack only left behind a shallow cut on his powerful body.

Xue Ying had two lines of injuries whereas the Golden Magic Peacock had tens of injuries. Despite this, she grew braver. Such small injuries were not worth mentioning considering how large her body was.

*'I just need to hit once! As long as he is hit by my wings or my claws, his entire body will be slashed apart.'* The Golden Magic Peacock desired victory as she wanted to regain her freedom!

.....

The battle was particularly intense.

Regardless of whether they were mortals or Transcendents, all watched the battle closely. A Transcendent who could reach the eighth match was too rarely seen!

*'I cannot let this continue on any further.'* Xue Ying's expression changed, *'I've already consumed half of my stamina! And I still have to prepare for the ninth match.'*

According to the rules, the ninth match would immediately follow the eighth.

Furthermore, releasing his Power Bloodline consumed an even greater amount of stamina every second. Even though his physical strength improved tremendously after transcending, he could still not use it for too long. After all, he needed to retain some strength for the next match!

Even though such a fierce battle was a great opportunity for him to refine his spear technique, the next opponent he would be facing was a rumoured Abyss Demon! Xue Ying desired to experience a battle with it.

*Hua!* Two enormous claws, each more than a meter long, came once again. The attack was as fast as a phantom and enchanting as a ghost.

*Omm!*

The spear in Xue Ying's hands moved.

The spear rotated through a frightening arc, an arc that surpassed every single

technique he displayed previously! At the same time, an intense stream of water was generated. It revolved around the body of the spear, swirling and gathering right at the center – the tip of the spearhead! The moment the spear stabbed out was just like a Flood Dragon coming out of water, with streams of water revolving around it!

At the same time, the revolving power instantly changed from extreme Yin to extreme Yang.

And the Flood Dragon coming out of water, became a Fire Dragon!

*Hong!*

At the juncture when a claw clashed against that spear, the peacock could feel the extreme strangeness behind the rotational force in allowing it to draw the claw away. The spear continued on its movement, bringing with it a huge power as it stabbed into the abdomen of that Golden Magic Peacock. The tough feathers on her body could not stop the spear from penetrating through, leading the spear to stab a entire meter into her body.

Xue Ying's killing technique — Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack!

*Hong~*

The Transcendent Qi contained within the spear exploded from within the Golden Magic Peacock. Following that, Xue Ying immediately pulled his spear out and retreated backwards in case the peacock suddenly counter-attacked.

Pulling out the spear and retreating.

The Golden Magic Peacock instead staggered as fresh blood poured out from her abdomen. Her blood-coloured eyes filled with a look of madness and disbelief, "You, you... how could you. Die, die for me!"

She was injured heavily. Knowing that as time passed, her injuries would worsen, she knew that she had to kill off this human immediately. This time, the injuries she incurred were too heavy! It was fortunate that as a Transcendent beast, her physical body and lifeforce were strong.

*Hu*, she came rushing forward in madness.

Yet Xue Ying floated backwards in retreat. He would occasionally block an

attack or two coming his way. Having delayed for two breaths of time, the injuries of that Golden Magic Peacock worsened, causing her combat power to drop sharply. Xue Ying did not use his 'Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack' again. Instead, before the peacock could even stop her injuries from worsening, he fiercely hacked down on her head.

*Peng*— With fewer feathers to protect it, the head was a vulnerable point in the peacock's defense. Under the power of the heavy blow, her brain immediately transformed into paste. Fresh blood could even be seen coming from her nose and ears. The peacock immediately fell down on the ground; her wings could be seen drooping down on each side with no other movement.

Death of the Golden Magic Peacock!

Victory on the eighth match!

.....

"This!"

At the point of time when Xue Ying displayed his killing technique, the 'Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack' which heavily injured the Golden Magic Peacock, most of the Demigods in the eastern viewing platform were full of shock.

Even the number one assassin under the heavens, the cold old granny Shen Ye, or City Lord Bu who was on another level... everyone was shocked as they saw what Xue Ying did.

"Did you see that spear just now?" City Lord Bu had watched carefully.

"I saw it." Faction Head Si Kong Yang's eyes were full of delight.

"It's actually a move containing the fusion of Profound Mysteries behind Water and Fire." Mountain Lord He continued, "Not only is it a fusion, it's also a fusion that's perfectly utilized! Formidable, so formidable. Such a young age... and he can already fuse the Profound Mysteries behind both Water and Fire and even use them in the battle. I dare say that this youngster will definitely comprehend his 'True Meaning of Water and Fire' in the future!"

"He is indeed very formidable." City Lord Bu had an expression that seemed bitter sweet. She looked at Si Kong Yang, "Such a pity that you, Si Kong Yang, got

him.”

“Hahaha...” Si Kong Yang’s laughter was clear and bright.

True Meaning of Water and Fire.

That was an extremely powerful True Meaning. Even though it was not on the level of ‘True Meaning of Void Cleavage’, it could still be ranked amongst the top few! Wanting to comprehend the ‘True Meaning of Water and Fire’, would require one to comprehend both Profound Mysteries behind Water and Fire. The hardest part was fusing both Profound Mysteries together as one!

Regardless of the different Profound Mysteries, the fusion of the Profound Mysteries was actually the hardest part. And the first step taken towards fusing the Profound Mysteries was the most important! Xue Ying could actually take his first step at such a young age. He still had a long lifespan ahead, showing clearly that it was almost a certainty that he would comprehend the ‘True Meaning of Water and Fire’ with such early high level comprehension.

“Who knows, maybe the True Meaning of Water and Fire might not be his final limits. He might even be able to comprehend the legendary True Meaning of Yin Yang!” Mountain Lord He laughed.

“Don’t think so far ahead. It would be great even if he comprehended the True Meaning of Water and Fire.” Si Kong Yang rebutted.

True Meaning of Yin Yang?

That was a legendary True Meaning at a level even higher than the ‘True Meaning of Void Cleavage’. Such a True Meaning... was something that nobody had seen ever since the start of the Xia Clan! As to the reason why they knew of its existence, it was actually passed down from the Deity World, in one of the memoirs, stating the existence of such a powerful heaven-shaking True Meaning.

Profound Mystery of Water and Fire was just like the Profound Mystery of Hard and Soft, and the Profound Mystery of extreme Yang, or the Profound Mystery of extreme Yin... all of them had a chance of growing into becoming the ‘True Meaning of Yin and Yang’. But ultimately, it was merely the existence of a chance. Nobody had ever succeeded within the Xia Clan.

Thus, Si Kong Yang and Mountain Lord He would say that if Xue Ying

comprehended the ‘True Meaning of Water and Fire’, they would feel satisfied.

“Oh yes, this Dong Bo Xue Ying had just won the eighth battle. The ninth battle is going to start soon?” City Lord Bu lifted her eyebrows. The corner of her mouth had the vestiges of a smile. Indeed, she was someone worthy of becoming a ‘beauty who would topple the world’. Her smile was so beautiful that it was soul-stirring, “Saying that, Mountain Lord He, Si Kong Yang, I think none of us have ever seen the ninth match before, right?”

Mountain Lord He and Si Kong Yang were dumbfounded.

The Transcendent Battle of Life and Death ninth match?

Indeed, they had not seen it before. After all, winning the eighth match was something extremely difficult. Xue Ying not only had his primordial bloodline, he also comprehended the second level of the Realm of Myriad Existences, and even fused both Profound Mysteries behind Water and Fire, turning them into the ‘Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack’, before finally taking down the eighth match!

“The previous ninth match occurred about 2000 years ago. Only old granny Ye and the rest have seen that battle before.” Mountain Lord He laughed, “Indeed, we have not seen it before today. Who would have expected that this time, we could actually see it!”

*Dong!*

A drumbeat sounded.

“Ladies and gentlemen. The ninth match’s opponent is a demon from the Abyss. Due to the lack of preparation, the Infernal Palace would need half an hour to prepare. There will be a break during this period of time! In half an hour, the ninth match will begin! Adding on to that, this is the first time we are having a ninth match in 2300 years. Everyone should thank Dong Bo Xue Ying in allowing us to see a living Abyss Demon!” The voice of that emissary from the Infernal Palace was filled with excitement.

---

## Book 5: Chapter 24 – A Living Abyss Demon?

---

Don't even mention those mortals who were so excited to the point of craziness. Even the Transcendents themselves were so excited that they were shouting.

“Quick, quick, come. Come to the Hall of Life and Death.”

“The ninth match is going to start soon! There's still half an hour left before it will begin! It's actually a Dark Abyss Demon!”

“Only half an hour left.”

Even though more than half of the Transcendents were here, there were still many others out adventuring or in closed-door cultivation, or even those who withdrew to themselves as they were too lazy to come and watch the battles... Regardless, there were still many Transcendents who were not at the arena yet! As for those who were currently present, they were passing on the message because other than the highly ranked Demigods and several other existences, the majority of Transcendents had not even seen a demon before this event!

Many people had not even seen one throughout their entire life.

Amongst the biographies passed down, according to legends... they would all speak of the Abyss Demons!

But in reality, the demons actually originated from the 'Dark Abyss', and were a sort of Transcendent organism.

The Dark Abyss was faintly connected in many ways to the material world. Thus, occasional fluctuations in space would produce a channel in space that allow for large numbers of Abyss Demons to fight their way in! Since ancient times through to today... there would be Abyss Demons invading their way into the material world. But such happenings were irregular. Sometimes, there might be eight to ten invasions over ten thousand years. Other times, it could even be a single invasion in many tens of thousands of years!

A Transcendent lifespan was short – just 800 years. The longest lifespan was a

Demigod with a mere 3000 years.

Hence, it was very natural for most Transcendents to not see a demon in their entire life.

.....

“I’m really sorry that I won again.” The old cogey Chao Qing tilted his legs as he joyfully took a big bite out of a green apple.

“Hope your teeth break!” Old Granny Ye humphed.

“Ai, it’s actually another 5000 kilograms of Origin Stone. I’m feeling so happy right now.” Chao Qing bit on the apple as he looked below at the back of Xue Ying who walked barefoot to the side-door at the corner of the battlefield for a respite. His face, full of smiles, became even brighter, “This youngster from our Water Daoist Faction is quite formidable. He started fusing the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire at such a young age, even to the extent of applying them on his spear techniques! The ‘True Meaning of Water and Fire’ is something I bet he’ll definitely be able to comprehend.”

“Look at how you’re so pleased.” Old Granny Ye curled her lips. She was relatively calm. After all, Origin Stones were less important to her since she was nearing the end of her life.

“For the sake of this brat Dong Bo Xue Ying, I suggest... holding a meeting amongst us Elders!” Chao Qing suddenly spoke.

“Holding an Elder’s meeting?” Old Granny Ye was startled as she looked towards him.

.....

“Little brother Xue Ying, well done, beautifully executed, hua haha...” The Tranquil Sun Province’s group of Transcendents were all eating and drinking with excitement, especially so for Cheng Ling Shu.

Cheng Ling Shu’s name contained the character ‘Shu’ which represented being lady-like. However, her demeanour right now was entirely unlike that of a lady, and likewise not that of the disposition belonging to a female mage.

Instead, she was shouting out carelessly.

That was because she won her gamble! This time, she actually set down a wager for the Transcendent Battle Life and Death. Most of the payouts were quite low. Yet for the one she bet on, 'At least seven matches', the payout was quite huge! Those who set down the odds of payouts had gathered plenty of information from many intelligence networks. Even information on Xue Ying's life since youth and evaluations by Demigods were all obtained clearly.

The bookmakers all agreed that Xue Ying's primordial bloodline was too ordinary. Thus, the chances of winning six matches would be relatively low. Old Granny Ye had even wagered with Chao Qing that Xue Ying could not reach the sixth match.

As for winning at least seven matches? The chances were even lower!

"Sister Ling Shu should have bet quite heavily this time round, isn't it? You should treat us to a good meal after this," Peng Shan quipped.

"It's merely just a few hundred kilograms of Origin Stones. Not much, not much." Cheng Ling Shu was delighted, "How can that be considered much, I bet little brother Xue Ying will be winning even more! This Transcendent Battle of Life and Death will give contribution points on an exponential scale the more battles he win! Thus, if you want to go for the big kill, you should find little brother Xue Ying."

"The ninth match is going to start soon." Qiu Chi Bai laughed, "Forcing the Infernal Palace to bring out a living Abyss Demon... I bet those old folks of the Infernal Palace must be feeling heartbroken over this."

"An Abyss Demon is something which we've never seen before." Zi Che Gu Feng, Hai Ru Zhen and the rest were eagerly expecting the display. They were Transcendent mages, and thus, they were quite excited and interested in researching the 'Abyss Demon'. It was such a pity that they did not have the qualifications when they were at the Sky realm to face one themselves.

.....

Most of the Transcendents were discussing the demon that would be appearing soon. The majority of them were looking forward to seeing it.



“It’s actually a demon, which we could only find details of within books.”

“Our Xia Clan has not been invaded by demons for the past 8000 years or so, right? It’s such a surprise that the Infernal Palace is still willing to bring out a living demon for this battle.”

“Ze ze ze, this new Transcendent has killed his way to the ninth battle. Even if they are not willing, they will still have to bring it out!”

Everyone was looking forward to it...

Demons were Transcendent life forms belonging to the Dark Abyss. They were organisms more unique than the Primordial beings. At the same level of realm, these demons were actually even stronger than the Primordial beings!

The Dark Abyss was a place that could contest against the entire Deity World.

What the ‘Demonic Faction’ was devoted to is actually a demon god within the Dark Abyss! That powerful demon god understood that the majority of the people in the Xia Clan’s world believed in the Temple of the Earth God, yet it still continued on in snatching the souls and beliefs away. It could be clearly seen that the demon god did not have any regard for the huge power behind Temple of the Earth God! At the same time, the Demonic Faction even bestowed upon their followers Deity-Grade secret techniques and some techniques that would increase one’s combat power greatly. That was why so many Transcendents would seek refuge with this faction!

Being a different type of life form, their lifespan was quite different from the rest.

Some types of Transcendent beasts had an extremely long lifespan, and the demons were similar in this aspect.

Some of the weaker demons who invaded 8000 years ago were captured... and were kept in captivity. The Demigod mages would take this opportunity of studying such captured demons to aid in understanding them. Some of the older demons had died already! Others died due to investigations and tortures. But there were a few left surviving. These demons might even give birth to children who would become a Transcendent as they grew up!

Thus, the Infernal Palace had kept only a few Abyss Demons in captivity solely

for the use of understanding them! Even still, the Transcendent mages would use them sparingly, with most Transcendents not having any chance of seeing them.

It was only during the ‘Transcendent Battle of Life and Death’ where these Abyss Demons would appear, according to the rules set many years ago on who the first twelve opponents would be.

And this became a tradition!

The further one went, the more precious the opponent the Infernal Palace would bring out.

\*\*\*\*\*

Time passed slowly, to the extent that even Transcendents felt it difficult to sit still. During this half hour, many Transcendents came rushing into the viewing platform! Even some Demigods who had been sitting back at their nests sent out a Qi avatar over to view the match. To these Demigods... since the battle had proceeded to the ninth match, such a life and death battle would have a little meaning in it, and was worth the watch.

Demons were actually kept within the Infernal Palace. Thus, grabbing one and bringing it over did not take much time.

Thus, the decision of half an hour of break time made by the Infernal Palace was in reality, to let some of the Transcendents rush over. But in reality, those who were too far away had no chance of reaching the arena in time.

.....

*Hu.* Xue Ying breathed out. When he was young, he had read of the stories passed down through the ages and dreamt frequently of himself going around killing these demons, and drinking with the Deities... who would have thought that twenty years down the road, he would be fighting with a real demon!

*‘Demon, let me see what kind of formidability gave you so much fame and brought so much terror to humankind.’* Xue Ying walked out barefoot wearing a common, black shirt.

After entering the battleground...

The scenery within it was still as beautiful as ever. Within the circle of one-and-a-half to two kilometers in diameter, Xue Ying was all by himself. He was drowned in endless, deafening cheers from the mortals around him, with the cheers akin to a wave shocking the entire Hall of Life and Death! They were all cheering for Xue Ying! They were also excited to the limit since they would finally be seeing the rumoured demons passed down from the legends!

*Dong.* Following that, a drumbeat resounded.

“Ladies and gentlemen, the opponent of the ninth match. A demon originating from the Dark Abyss.” The voice of the emissary of Infernal Palace resounded throughout the hall.

After that, the whole hall quieted down.

Xue Ying was holding on to his spear, quietly watching. Even though he had various thoughts previously, the match was about to begin. Thus, he only had a single thing to do – kill the demon!

*Hu!*

Space fluctuated.

A figure descended. Right at this moment, all the mortals and Transcendents looked upon that figure. Xue Ying himself, too, raised his head as he stared at that figure slowly descending.

---

## Book 5: Chapter 25 – Battle with the Demon

---

A figure slowly descended and innately emitted a frightening, black, turbulent aura. This kind of black aura represented the most negative aura. It contained all the darkness, violence, destruction, evil desire, and similar attributes within it. In his capacity as a powerful Transcendent, Xue Ying's willpower was also different from a mortal's, but facing this kind of aura, he felt a sliver of fear. This terror was a life instinct!

Dark Abyss were the darkness attributed ultimate destroyers. As a Dark Abyss Transcendent lifeform, a demon naturally had this kind of terrifying aura. Humans called this terrifying aura 'demonic' aura!

Xue Ying quickly calmed himself, suppressing his fear.

'*This is a ?*' Xue Ying carefully observe its appearance. In the center of dark aura, there was a two meters high, sturdy human shaped lifeform. It's whole body covered with a layer of deep purple scales and a pair of deep purple spiral-shaped horns on it's head. The most eye-catching trait were its four arms! Its thick arms were also covered in scales and had hands ending in fingers with sharp fingernails that were not inferior to a deity-rank weapon.

'*Four arms?*' pondered Xue Ying, '*it should have a good close combat ability!*'

"This is a demon?"

"This is an Abyss Demon?"

The battleground magic array completely isolated the aura. Inside the battleground, the demon emitted a frightening aura, but outside the battleground, not a shred of the aura could be felt.

But numerous mortals that looked from afar, could feel an indescribable fear! Actually due to the far distance and the ordinary eyesight, in their eyes, that demon's figure was very small! But its constant oppressive fear aura... made their legs feel weak, their bodies trembled uncontrollably, and their hearts tightened.

“Abyss Demons look like this?”

“I heard that all demons have scales, and their scales are really tough.”

“The rumors seem to be true! You see, that demon has a pair of horns! It’s called a Horn Demon as most of the s are horned s.” Because of the magic array isolating the arena from the spectators, the Transcendents didn’t feel any fear. They curiously looked and compared the demon’s appearance with their existing knowledge. Everyone discussed the view excitedly. This was their first time seeing a real Abyss Demon!

.....

Demon ‘Lavda’ looked at the barefoot, black-clothed youngster in front of him. He carefully observed the prey in front of him and quickly found it’s weakness. He could kill it in one shot!

*‘This is the chance I have longed for. As long as I can win, I’m able to have leisure days for a thousand years,.’* thought demon Lavda, full of longing. From his birth, he had been reared by the humans! Humans had captured a group of demons. A fraction of those demons had produced offspring. Since his birth until the current time, demon Lavda had spent his days being an experiment subject.

Those Transcendent Mages, again and again, had cut his flesh and done other experiment on him. He had been unable to break himself free from those torturous days.

He hated humans! Humans didn’t have any mercy for demons. Perhaps those captive demon were the ones most anticipating a chance for freedom through the Transcendent Life and Death Battle. As long as a demon won, the humans would not harm or disturb that demon for a thousand years.

Lavda was a newborn demon, and his strength was comparably weak. Therefore, he was selected as Xue Ying’s opponent. As for those older demons, even the demons from Dark Abyss, all of them had rich experiences and were likewise crafty and powerful. Such experienced demons were not suitable to be Xue Ying’s opponent.

*‘Damn human, this is a rare chance! Even if I kill this human, I will not face punishment.’* demon Lavda radiated resentment. His bloodline make him full of

killing desire. Every demon was like this, living for slaughter since their childhood. His bloodline along with the torture he had experienced from humans made him have both a grievance and an extremely deep hatred.

.....

Xue Ying and this demon, Lavda, stood face to face for several breath's time. Then Xue Ying made the first move.

*Hong~~~~*

Endless flame veiled down. After comprehending the second level of the Myriad Existences, the flame temperature was more frightening. The flame pressure reached five thousand kilograms, suppressing demon Lavda. The surrounding atmosphere was distorted. Those watching mortals and Transcendents saw the the distorted atmosphere.

“Only this small flame?” demon Lavda swept a sharp nail across the flame, and his lips made a disdainful smile. His ice-cold eyes gazed at Xue Ying.

*Shua*

He suddenly made a direct move to kill Xue Ying.

Without any warning, he suddenly went to attack. At that moment, all the spectating Transcendents watched nervously. The majority of them had never before seen a Dark Abyss demon, let alone faced one as an opponent. All of them wanted to see how formidable the demon was.

“Come on.” Xue Ying had been ready since the beginning. Now, he flared up. Facing his opponent, he activated his Power Bloodline without any hesitation, and in a flash he brandished his spear, ready to welcome his opponent.

The spear tip appeared like a terrifying fire, thrusting into the demon's face.

*Peng*

demon Lavda's four arms made layers of defense, with a palm slapped toward the spear's tip. The clash pushed Xue Ying back, but it barely affected demon Lavda.

*‘He's stronger than me, maybe about 50% stronger.’* Assessed Xue Ying.

*Shua Shua Shua....*

Both exchanged moves quickly.

Xue Ying's spear flitted, attacking and defending without gaps, but demon Lavda's four arms also attacked. Lavda was really worthy of being called a natural-born slaughterer. Although he was not yet able to comprehend the Realm of Myriad Existences, he was skilled enough already to have reached perfection. Even the claws tipping the fingers on his four arms had a structure suitable for slaughtering. These claws could scratch and slash like a knife, hook, and grab weapons.

With Lavda's four arms attacking together... fortunately Xue Ying's spear revolved violently, unpredictable, keeping his opponent from catching the spear in its hooked claws.

After exchanging dozens of attacks...

Xue Ying and demon Lavda more or less knew each other's strength! Both of them became very cautious, as both wanted to see the other side move first and not immediately use their strongest ability. For a better result, their aim was for a one strike kill using their killing technique!

If either failed in their attempt at a killing technique strike, their opponent would then be able to raise their guard against a similar attack. The difficulty to kill the opponent would consequently increase.

'Hong!' Xue Ying's spear moved fast, like a flood dragon, straight to demon Lavda's head.

The demon immediately dodged to the side and pressed further in for close combat.

'Move!' Xue Ying's failed spear immediately burst with strength and furiously swept through, imbued with a violent flame. This one sweep arced in circular motion, encompassing a wide area, and forced demon Lavda retreat.

This spear strike hit an enormous stone surface besides demon Lavda.

The mountain range inside the battleground, along with the other scenery made from refiner material, was incomparably durable and tough. Xue Ying and

others fighting there were unable to damage it.

This spear sweep struck that enormous rock, rebounded back with an astonishing strength, and bent the spear.

*'Beng!'*

Harnessing the astonishing rebound power from the enormous rock, Xue Ying advanced once more with a spear sweep aimed at demon Lavda.

This time, by harnessing the rebound power, the spear sweep was more abrupt and fast. This effect made demon Lavda unable to defend against it. With a *'bang'*, the spear struck the Demon's right side. This impact made the demon fly to the side with blood spewing from its nose.

Although this sweep attack was unable to inflict any harm to those scales, but its impact force was too powerful.

With high speed flying, Xue Ying immediately caught up to the marred demon Lavda. Xue Ying seized this moment to raised his hands and strike the demon with all his might. This strike had the same ferociousness and might as the previous one.

Although demon Lavda had originally been sent flying back, spraying blood from the first sweeping attack, this time the demon was prepared to defend himself against the black-clothed youngster's killing attack. The demon lifted his four arms to defend against Xue Ying's ferocious spear strike.

*Hong—*

The spear struck down.

demon Lavda's tyrannical body and four arms were practically impossible to injure. When hit by Xue Ying's ferocious strike, his body firmly fell to the mountain's stone surface. The demon's body hit the indestructible mountain stone, making his inner organs shake and his blood radiate out.

"Die!" Xue Ying still chased, wanting to finished the demon.

After falling down, demon Lavda could only hurriedly crawl up and try to create some distance between himself and Xue Ying.

But since Xue Ying had the upper hand, he didn't want to miss this opportunity



to grab and kill this demon with one strike.

*‘Weng!’* Xue Ying used his spear to stab the crawling demon Lavda.

The spear’s curve astonished the spectators with its extremely formidable rotation. The rotation formed layers upon layers of water streams that focused on the spear’s tip. The moment when the rotational force of the spear converged together on the the spear’s tip was when the rotational force reached it’s peak. The violent rotational force made the spear become like a fire dragon that stabbed demon Lavda.

Killing technique – Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack!

“So fast!” demon Lavda paled, the demon hurriedly resisted, his hand’s barely catching the spear’s tip.

*Chi!*

That fearful rotational force made demon Lavda feel that the spear was very slippery, making the spear easily slip from his hand and directly stabbing into his chest! At this moment, the terrible penetrating power completely expressed itself like a drill, instantly piercing the demon’s deep purple scales, penetrating its chest, all the way though and emerging out from his back. The Transcendent Qi that channeled through the spear instantly exploded in the demon Lavda’s body. But the inner part of demon Lavda also had the same toughness as its exterior, so the Transcendent Qi only could destroy a part of his chest.

Demon Lavda grew furious. He didn’t want to retreat but instead got closer. The demon wanted to use his claws to rip into Xue Ying.

*‘Sou.’* Xue Ying instantly retreated. He wanted to create some distance, so his opponent couldn’t retaliate.

*‘Gu gu.’* demon Lavda stood there, purple blood spewing from his mouth, but the demon didn’t care about it.

The left side of his chest had a big, bowl-sized hole. This huge wound was made by Xue Ying’s spear’s rotational force and had completely destroyed the demon’s heart!

*Chi chi chi...*

But the big, bowl-size hole in his chest quickly regenerated. He laughed evilly at Xue Ying, “I still want to find a chance to kill you with one attack, but as it turns out, I never did find such an opportunity. Instead, you got the opportunity to injure me. But I’m a powerful Abyss Demon and can’t be rivaled by you material-world humans. Since I didn’t find the opportunity, I now don’t need that opportunity.”

demon Lavda body started to transform. His body and scales started to shrink.

The originally strong and sturdy body became completely smaller. His height changed around to about 1.8 meters tall. His scales shrank and became long and narrow. The hole in his chest, already completely healed, had layers of scales. His aura also became more berserk!

*‘A strong regeneration ability. His heart was destroyed, and he didn’t care at all?’* This regenerative ability surprised Xue Ying

The Transcendent’s in the audience were also very surprised.

The heart was the source of life and blood.

When a Transcendent’s heart was destroyed they would definitely die. Only someone with a nearly immortal body could survive such an event. Of course, people with a nearly immortal body were an heaven defying existence. But this Abyss Demon was only a Sky level Transcendent. His vitality and regeneration ability were frightening and more powerful than other Transcendents. He was even powerful more than Xue Ying with his awakened Power Bloodline. If Xue Ying received this kind of injury, he would be finished.

---

## Book 5: Chapter 26 -Boiling

---

“This time, you are dead!” The demon Lavda roared out as he shot forward in a flash towards Xue Ying.

*‘His speed has become much faster!’* Xue Ying understood this immediately.

At the same time, he held onto his spear while inviting the attack, *‘Let me see what moves you, as a demon, have. Don’t disappoint me!’*

Since he had revealed the Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack, he might as well just attack with his full power from now on!

*“Hong!” “Hong!”*

The two figures clashed relentlessly against each other. This conflict marked the start of the fierce battle between them.

And neither of them decided to flee!

Even though his body had become smaller and thinner, demon Lavda’s strength did not have any changes. Instead, his speed and flexibility clearly had a marked increase such that even under the suppression of Xue Ying’s flames, the demon was still somewhat more powerful than Xue Ying!

And Xue Ying’s Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack was used time after time!

Unpredictability! Fierce power!

His technique completely absorbed the strong points of both the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire, while at the same time, it created a stacking effect of great increase in both the areas of unpredictability and power!

“Damn!” The demon Lavda gritted his teeth.

The spearhead tore through one of his arms, causing the scales on it to fly all over the place. A huge wound appeared there – it was so deep that bones could be seen.

*‘This human’s spear techniques are too difficult to block! And his power is also great as well.’* Madness appeared within his eyes. He decided that since it was so

difficult to block the ‘Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack’, he might as well just ignore it. At the very least, he would want to kill this human even if he was to incur some injuries!

*Pu chi! Si la! Hua la!*

This battle between them became more bloody.

The scales covering demon Lavda’s body were fragmented into pieces. Wounds were seen everywhere, with one of them being a bloody cavity.

“*Si.*” Even though Xue Ying’s spear techniques were mysterious and his defense was great, under the demon’s crazed attack, he was clawed on his chest.

With just an early stage Sky realm Transcendent Qi protecting his body, it was easily broken through. The ordinary black robe he was wearing did not have much help in protecting his chest as well. A huge injury could be seen on his chest where blood or flesh could not be discerned clearly. However, this injury was currently recovering at a fast rate. Even though Xue Ying’s restoration rate was not as fast as this demon’s, it was still relatively fast compared to mortals.

.....

The many mortals felt nervous and excited at the same time as they watched the black-robed young man, belonging to their human race, fighting against a frightening demon who was madly attacking head-on! It seemed that neither of them were disadvantaged in this match, leading to the excitement everyone felt.

That young man’s upper shirt was fragmented and tattered, showing a robust upper body that had well-defined muscular lines. Although there was an injury on his body which was healing gradually, before it could be fully healed, another injury would be incurred on his body! As for the demon, his injuries were much more serious than Xue Ying’s. The demon, however, was not in danger of being killed due to his frightening restoration speed despite his many serious injuries.

“That demon is being constantly suppressed.”

“If not for his fast restoration rate, he’d been killed long ago.”

The mortals continued watching nervously.

The battle was being carried out at such a fast pace that they could only see how the combatants looked during the momentary pauses which occasionally occurred when the two clashed.

And when the many women saw the revealed upper half of Xue Ying's body, they felt shy and excited.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying." Yu Jing Qiu looked on nervously.

.....

The three top Demigod overlords under the heavens – Mountain Lord He, Faction Head Si Kong Yang, and City Lord Bu all watched joyfully.

"By just comprehending the early stage of fusion between the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire, he could be so formidable already." City Lord Bu laughed as she drank down the wine, "No wonder the True Meaning of Water and Fire can be rated a fourth grade True Meaning out of nine possible grades for the different True Meanings within the Deity World."

True Meaning could be graded into nine different levels according to the sorting determined by the Deity World.

Categorising the countless True Meanings comprehended within the Material World and the Deity World into different grades, the peak True Meanings were categorised as grade one. Actually, those grade two True Meanings were already spoken of only in legends, with the possibility of comprehending them being almost zilch!

In reality, even the heaven-shaking 'True Meaning of Void Cleavage' was only a grade three True Meaning! It was merely higher by one grade than the True Meaning of Water and Fire. Right now, amongst all existences under the heavens, including humans, Transcendent natives and those from the Beast Clan, the most heaven-shaking True Meaning was one of grade three. This could be considered as extremely, extremely formidable already as it allowed Qiu Chi Bai to kill a Demigod native when he was only at peak stage Saint realm and to defeat a human Demigod overlord as well!

As for the majority of the Transcendents, they would only comprehend a grade nine, eight or seven True Meaning! Those who could comprehend a grade six

True Meaning would be considered as someone amazing.

As for the grade four 'True Meaning of Water and Fire', with it, one would be able to disdain all others.

"He just took his first step. Wanting to successfully control the True Meaning of Water and Fire isn't something easy," Si Kong Yang humbly replied.

"Ha, this Dong Bo Xue Ying could take the first step at such a young age, implying that it's not such a huge problem for him to comprehend the True Meaning of Water and Fire." Mountain Lord He laughed, "The more important point is that he should not veer off from the path for the next thousand years, less he comprehend the 'True Meaning of Icy Fire' instead. It would be such a pity then."

This True Meaning of Icy Fire was considered a branch of the 'True Meaning of Water and Fire', and could only be considered as a grade five True Meaning!

As for the True Meaning of Void Cleavage, it was actually a branch of the rumoured 'True Meaning of Space' passed down from the legends. After all, it could only be considered as an area of space.

"I don't think he will." Si Kong Yang looked at the battle below, "Dong Bo Xue Ying is currently using the Profound Mystery of Water with unpredictability and softness as the main point of usage! There is nothing ice-related, thus I doubt he will walk down the path for 'True Meaning of Icy Fire'."

.....

Within the battleground.

Xue Ying's battle prowess put on display an extremely tragic and bedraggled demon Lavdac. At the very least, Xue Ying was still focused on defending and thus, his injuries were relatively light. As for the demon Lavda, he was only preventing the attacks from injuring his critical areas. As for attacks which were non-fatal, he would just ignore them. Of course, attacks that created an injury like the huge cavity on the left side of his chest, making his heart shatter, would certainly be dodged by the demon Lavda if he could.

*'Damn. I cannot let this go on. I can feel that my physical strength might not allow me to carry on for long!'* Even though Xue Ying held the upperhand when

the overall situation was considered, he knew something was awry! His Power Bloodline release consumed his energy at an immense rate, thus preventing him from prolonging the battle.

*Sou.*

Xue Ying suddenly retreated.

“Mn?” The demon Lavda stared blankly, before grinning, “Haha, you can’t hold on any longer? I knew that this would happen. Even if my injuries are heavier than yours, with my greater life force, I’m much stronger than you. At least, I can resist on for a longer time than you can.”

Even as he was saying those words, the demon Lavda had already chased down Xue Ying. He did not want to give him any chance of respite.

“Not good!”

“Dong Bo Xue Ying is in trouble.”

“I don’t think he can hold on any longer with the release of his primordial bloodline.” The many Transcendents made their own conclusions. There were many different innate talents one would gain from the primordial bloodline. Some might increase one’s speed greatly, or some might increase one’s power greatly. Such bloodlines would rapidly consume one’s physical strength. As for those bloodline like the talent of teleportation... one would certainly have a limit to how many times he could teleport. Of course, the stronger one’s combat power was, the more teleportations he could utilise!

It was only some bloodlines like the undying body that did not require one to release it. It just gave one the ability for his body to be undying. Other bloodlines like those that controlled the World Energy also consumed very little energy.

As for Xue Ying’s Power Bloodline, it could clearly be seen that his physical strength was being consumed at a rapid rate.

*“Hu.”*

The wind was roaring.

The demon Lavda was chasing after Xue Ying as he did not give him any chance of a respite, *‘I mustn’t let him rest. This is the opportunity I must take advantage*

*of to get rid of him.'*

His speed was much faster, allowing him to reach Xue Ying in a short moment and forcing Xue Ying to keep changing direction continuously.

*"Hua!"*

Unexpectedly, the spear suddenly appeared in front of his eyes.

The demon Lavda instantly paled and felt extreme fear.

Too fast! Too fast!

Obviously, Xue Ying had been planning to catch him off guard with a sudden thrust! Once the demon Lavda's speed reached a maximum, and the distance between both of them became closer, Xue Ying would suddenly turn his body and stab out his spear without giving any concern to his body falling down. His only movement was to twist his body and stab out his spear! At the speed of the spear stabbing out and the top-speed which the demon Lavda was travelling at, the distance between them began shortening rapidly!

The spearhead contained a frightening rotational power as it stabbed against the head of the demon Lavda!

And the head was absolutely a vital point for anyone!

"No— " The demon Lavda panicked. He was not willing to just die like that. Yet this time around, this sudden thrust was too fast! He could neither raise his arms in time to block against the attack nor could he retreat in time. Even his brain was not processing fast enough for him to think of what he should do next.

The instinct of life was actually the combat instinct of a demon.

That led to demon Lavda taking the initiative in receiving the attack by the spearhead at a faster speed, *pu chi* ! One must know that the spear was slanted upwards at an angle towards the demon's head. Ever since the demon's instinctive movement initiated an increase in speed, the spearhead stabbed through his collarbone instead!

This spear was too fast for demon Lavda.

And for Xue Ying, such an attack was similarly too fast for him. Due to the top-speed which the enemy was at when chasing after him, his spear did not have



enough time to change before it stabbed through the collarbone. The spear had with it a powerful rotational force, carving out a huge cavity around the collarbone and causing the thick scaled throat of that demon to be partly torn apart.

*“Hong!”* The Qi contained in the spear exploded out, though it was markedly weaker by much.

Even after being stabbed through, the demon Lavda still continued on at top-speed in chasing after Xue Ying. He had a great desire to kill this damn human.

As the demon came rushing over, Xue Ying did not have enough time to pull out his spear.

*“Hu.”*

He could only awkwardly let go of his spear in decision to escape. In his hands, another longer and thicker spear appeared. One had to understand that the weapons rack was filled with many weapons. Thus, there were many spears of different dimensions for different people of different sizes. Xue Ying had decided to take with him the entire weapons rack at the beginning of the battle.

After his body was stabbed through with a spear of over two meters in length, the demon Lavda ceased his chase.

*“Damn.”* The demon took out the spear, showing the huge bloody cavity incurred from the attack. At this point, the injury was recovering at a rapid rate.

*“Healing again?”* Xue Ying gasped. The sudden thrust tactic could only be used once. The next time he used it against the same opponent, he could hardly hope it would have any effect any longer.

*“Mn?”* The demon Lavda’s expression changed suddenly.

*Hua.*

His body had a sudden change. From its initial thin and small body figure, it transformed back to the inflated and muscular one he had previously when the battle had initially began. Unlike last time, however, the demon’s breath was clearly much weaker! The small and thin form was actually the form he used for

burst attacks.

Xue Ying stared for a while before revealing a joyful expression, “Haha, your body has tried restoring itself too many times. Now that you have used up so much of your energy, I guess you can’t hold on much longer?”

Previously, this demon had been stabbed at the chest, with his heart being destroyed! Such a frightening injury would normally mean death for Xue Ying. Yet not only the demon in front of him recovered back to his usual self, it still had the strength to enter his burst form. After that, he had incurred a huge amount of other serious injuries – injuries that would make even Xue Ying’s heart tremble – yet he could still seemingly easily recover from each wound.

This situation made Xue Ying feel... that a demon’s life force was too terrifying.

In reality though, even a much more powerful life force would have a limit!

With the multitude of injuries, indubitably, an immense amount of his life force would certainly be used up. Finally, this recent sudden thrust by Xue Ying had created yet another fatal injury that the demon had to use up his body’s demonic energy to recover himself. Thus, clearly seen, his life force could not hold on any longer, causing him to change back to his ordinary form.

‘Restoration’ came at a cost, and, as such, it was not unlimited.

Even if it was the undying body from the legends... if it was destroyed time after time, that person would still die eventually once that limit was reached!

“Go to hell!” Xue Ying held on to the new spear in his hand. He immediately rushed forward to kill the demon. Demon Lavda was in panic as he tried to escape, yet when he was in his ordinary form while under the suppression of flames, his speed could never be faster than Xue Ying’s.

*Pu chi!*

After the abrupt consumption of his strength, the demon Lavda’s combat power declined sharply. After just three moves by Xue Ying, the demon was finally stabbed in his head!

.....

Xue Ying was barefoot and not wearing any shirt. His body was filled with many light injuries. Holding onto a spear, Xue Ying displayed demon Lavda's dead body impaled through the spear's tip!

The ninth battle – victory!

Demon – dead!

“Wa!” A great wave of cheering erupted as it filled the entire battleground like a huge wave. The cheers were so strong that they could even blow away the roof of the Hall of Life and Death. Looking at the dead demon's body at the end of that human's young man's spear, all of them felt exhilarated. This scene would most likely be etched in their minds for the rest of their lives.

Even the Transcendents viewing the platform were all hot-blooded after watching the battle.

Most of them had not seen a demon before. Of course, neither had they before seen the scene showing what Xue Ying was currently doing – hauling up a dead body of a demon with his spear!

---

## Book 5: Chapter 27 – The Tenth Match

“What!”

“He won the ninth match as well?”

In a small town belonging to the Dragon Mountain Empire, a sloppy old man was currently drinking to while away his boredom. This was a peak stage Saint realm Transcendent currently undergoing closed-door cultivation! As his lifespan neared its end, and he had yet to become a Demigod, his frustration grew deep in his heart, even though he knew that such an increasingly anxious state of mind would not help him in becoming a Demigod.

Thus, he decided to become an ascetic cultivator in order to temper his state of mind.

This time, he did not decide to watch Xue Ying’s Transcendent Battle of Life and Death. After all, every new Transcendents would have such a battle, and they were all too common.

But now, he was currently regretting his decision!

“The ninth match was against an Abyss Demon, and yet I didn’t see it! As for the upcoming tenth match, it will be against a warrior from the Deity World!” This sloppy old man felt his heart itch with impatience, “I’m such a foolish pig. That Dong Bo Xue Ying is actually the youngest Transcendent in the past thousand years. With such an achievement, he is certainly someone extraordinary. If only I had gone earlier to watch the battles! But even if I couldn’t watch the battle against the Abyss Demon, I still have the chance to watch the battle against the rarer and more precious ‘Deity World warrior’!”

“The battle is going to start in an hour, yet I can’t reach there in time.” This sloppy old man felt helpless.

He could not teleport.

He could only slowly fly there! First, he had to fly towards the Infernal World's Xia Capital World Door! And that would take him approximately three hours already!

"It's a Deity World's warrior! A Deity World's warrior from the legends!" This old sloppy man felt regret and heartbreak.

.....

At this moment, all those Transcendents who were not at the viewing platform but who were close enough rushed to the arena after receiving the news! As for those who were too far away, they could only feel regret!

Within the Hall of Life and Death in the Xia Capital.

"The tenth match is going to start soon, and that's with a Deity's World warrior!" Qiu Chi Bai, Peng Shan, Zi Che Gu Feng, Cheng Ling Shu, Dong Yu and the rest were all feeling excited beyond measure.

The Transcendent Battle of Life and Death could be considered as a tradition of the Xia Clan.

The further one proceeded, the rarer and more precious one's opponent would be.

The ninth match was already an Abyss Demon. The tenth match would be something more mysterious, with the eleventh being something surpassing that of the tenth! As for the twelfth match, the opponent one would face was kept a secret that even amongst many Demigods, not a single one of them had seen who or what it was.

Of course, in the entire history of Xia Clan, the strongest, one with an immensely high talent and a deep comprehension of the Realms, the 'Purgatory Knight' Jie Li had won eleven matches. When he reached the twelfth match... that would mark the only time the precious opponent from the clan protection treasure was brought out! Of course, the combat power would be determined by the clan protection treasure.

Let's not mention those exaggerated eleventh and twelfth matches.

Even the tenth's match opponent, a 'Deity World warrior', would be considered as a legend amongst the many Transcendents.

“I’ve heard that the Deity World warriors descend from the Deity World.” Zi Che Gu Feng’s eyes were filled with expectations, “Every single Deity World warrior is extremely mysterious. It’s only after the ancestors of our Xia Clan investigated these Deity World warriors, and absorbed some of the simple Profound Mysteries of theirs before the ‘Refiner Organisms’, the ‘Flesh Warriors’, and many other techniques were formulated.”

“I’ve always dreamed of seeing a Deity World warrior.” Cheng Ling Shu was so excited that her voice trembled, “Finally, I’ll be able to see one today.”

“It’s a Deity World warrior.” Hai Ru Zhen touched his white beard, “Who would have thought that I could see one before I died.”

These three people were Transcendent mages.

Every single Transcendent mage was a true scholar! They were scholars who investigated everything in the world! At the same time, they would also investigate into matters concerning the body and the soul. With their findings, they had crafted the ‘Transcendent Refiner Organisms’, the ‘Flesh warriors’, the ‘protectors’, and many other frightening treasures. The true origin of many of their treasures would be the ‘Deity World warriors’. The number of these warriors within the entire Xia Clan could be counted on the fingers of a single hand.

.....

Amongst the many Transcendents who watched the match, some of them had just arrived there in time – there were even Demigod existences and others who let their ‘Qi avatar’ rush over to this location! A Qi avatar of a Demigod was completely different from that belonging to a Saint. A Saint Qi avatar would still have some streams of light flowing on their skin. For Demigod avatars, one would not be able to discern them clearly with the naked eye.

\*\*\*\*\*

Within the Hall of Life and Death, in one of the pavilion’s gardens, Xue Ying was currently cultivating his spear techniques. He had long recovered his spent energy using the Origin Stones!

*'Not enough time left.'*

Xue Ying suddenly stopped.

*'I don't expect myself to attain the second level for Realm of Myriad Existences in the Profound Mystery of Water within this hour.'* Xue Ying lightly shook his head. Even though he could superimpose both the Profound Mysteries of Water and of Fire with few differences, and Xue Ying had some vague feelings of attaining the second level, the time period of one hour was too short for him.

*'Winning the ninth match was so hard. I guess I don't have much hope of a triumph in the tenth.'* Xue Ying laughed.

But that was enough.

He was quite pleased with himself already!

Within the past thousand years, even that 'Dan Qing Yan' expert had only won nine matches. Furthermore, Dan Qing Yan had an even more heaven-shaking primordial bloodline innate talent compared to his! Not only would his power, speed and many other areas increase greatly, even his body would attain an undying state. Compared to him, Xue Ying's own primordial bloodline was much weaker, yet he won nine matches. That should be something he was proud of.

*'I'll just try my best for the tenth match and enjoy the battle. It's against a Deity World warrior, which I think even Demigods have a hard time of finding an opportunity of exchanging moves with.'* Xue Ying was looking forward to it.

It was not that he had no confidence in himself.

Instead, he understood clearly that with his ability, he had a hard time winning the previous battle. Only because the demon Lavda's life force had been consumed to a stage where he could not sustain any himself any longer did Xue Ying win the match!

*Hua!*

The side door in the corner of the pavilion opened.

Xue Ying turned around, and walked barefoot towards it.

The moment he entered... a huge battleground faced him. Countless mortals by the side cheered for him, just like a wave moving across the entire Hall of Life

and Death. Even amongst the Transcendents, there were many discussions going on, showing how excited they were, and how much they looked forward to this battle.

Xue Ying stood on top of a stream, waiting for the upcoming opponent.

.....

“Haha, even all you old codgers came.”

“Great Uncle Palace Head, you actually came. Such a rare occasion.”

The area around Mountain Lord He, Faction Head Si Kong Yang and City Lord Bu became extremely crowded. Demigod after Demigod came to watch the match. Even though many Demigods were too lazy to come, they still sent their Qi avatar to rush to this location! Much less the human Demigods, even Demigods belonging to the Transcendent natives came to view the match.

Even though many Transcendent natives were captured by humans, there were some amongst them who decided to seek refuge within the humankind! As such, they received the help of humans in terms of resources. Thus, relying on humans, some of these Transcendent natives became Demigods. Due to the fact that in their daily lives, these natives would hardly have the chance to interact with a ‘Deity World warrior’, thus, they came this time to watch the battle!

These Demigods were usually separated, as they remained as overlords of their respective locations. It was because of the rare case of this tenth match in the Life and Death Battle that they came together.

\*\*\*\*\*

*Dong!* The drumbeat sounded in the Hall of Life and Death.

Silence filled the place.

Everyone watched nervously as the tenth Battle of Life and Death began! Even if it was the oldest Chao Qing, or Old Granny Ye, they had never ever before seen the tenth match of the Battle of Life and Death.

“The tenth match in the Battle of Life and Death will pit Dong Bo Xue Ying against a Deity World warrior. Ladies and gentlemen, I assure you, you will be



pleased at the sight of this battle. Deity World warriors are extremely precious, to the extent that the Infernal Palace will never bring them out during ordinary occasions.” The Infernal Palace emissary’s voice resounded in the Hall of Life and Death, “I hope you guys are seeing it clearly. I’ve already brought the Deity World warrior into the battleground.”

“Where?”

“Where is it?”

Many mortals swept their gazes across the battleground, desperately searching and seeking to view the warrior. Even amongst some Transcendents, there were a few who could not find it.

Within the battleground.

Xue Ying borrowed the strength of the World Energy in searching every corner of the battleground before realising where the warrior was.

*Pa!* A water droplet appeared in the air as it descended. When it reached the ground, this droplet of water rippled, suddenly transforming into a male of about 1.8 meters in height.

---

## Book 5: Chapter 28 – Everything Has Come to an End

---

The armour and sword of the male in front of him were all formed by water.

*“Hua.”* This water man took out the sword from his back with his hands.

“My combat power has been limited to a minimum.” The water man opened his mouth. Somehow, his voice had a mysterious essence imbued within that made Xue Ying’s spirit tremble, “As long as you can break through my sword techniques with your weapon and contact my body, I’ll collapse automatically and you’ll win.”

*“Come.”*

The water man stood there while holding a sword casually.

Xue Ying was stunned. As long as he could touch the body of his opponent, he would win? However, the more he thought, the more he realised that this was actually a Deity World warrior spoken in the legends. From what he heard, the true combat power of the Deity World warriors... were all at the very least, Demigod realm! Furthermore, they were strange and unpredictable. If their combat powers were not suppressed, the fear was that with just a single move, Xue Ying himself would turn into ashes.

*‘It’s really lucky that I’ve a chance to exchange moves with a Deity World warrior.’* Xue Ying calmed himself quickly. Fighting spirit began accumulating within his heart.

*Hong—*

Accompanying the fierce flames that covered the distant water man, Xue Ying rushed towards it. In the blink of an eye, he reached the man and began attacking him with his spear.

*“Chi chi chi.”*

All the sounds created from the clashes were soft.

As Xue Ying put in his full strength in displaying all the spear techniques he had, that water man blocked them easily. Furthermore, every time their weapons clashed, it was not a hard on hard clash. Instead, the clashes would occur at the weakest point of Xue Ying's spear techniques! This prevented him from utilising his spear techniques to the fullest extent in terms of power.

*'Even though his sword has such an ordinary power, my spear techniques cannot be unleashed to their fullest power.'* Xue Ying felt that he had entered a quagmire. The more he tried in releasing his strength, the more he struggled in doing so.

With just a sword from his opponent...

And using an ordinary strength, the warrior could easily break open Xue Ying's spear techniques!

*'How did the Purgatory Knight from the legends win against the Deity World warrior?'* Xue Ying could not help but think about it. The Purgatory Knight Jie Li was actually the only person in the entire history of Xia Clan to win eleven matches. Of course, the Deity World warrior he faced in the past might very well, be different from the warrior Xue Ying was currently facing now! Furthermore, the reason why that Purgatory Knight Jie Li could win eleven matches was not only because of his primordial bloodline, his comprehension of the Realms had reached a very high level.

At the moment when they exchanged moves, Xue Ying understood that this was a battle he could not win.

If he had a technique capable of teleportation, his attack might be more sudden! However, considering his current speed and flexibility, he was much weaker than his opponent. It was only his power and his spear technique being much stronger! Yet right now, even after using all the spear techniques he had, that Deity World warrior still remained within the one meter diameter of region he began at. At the most, he would just turn his body occasionally.

Since he could not win the battle, Xue Ying was not discouraged by it. This was something he had long expected beforehand.

*'Let's just enjoy the battle to the fullest.'* Xue Ying would still want to enjoy this kind of battle. Even though he was being suppressed, and all his techniques

were being broken open, this implied something... that his own spear techniques were still full of holes! Wanting to ponder through and realise these problems by himself was very hard. Right now, he would just let this 'Deity World warrior' dig out all the weaknesses behind his techniques.

*'So, my spear techniques have so many weaknesses inherent within.'*

*'My Profound Mystery of Water should allow my attacks to not be interruptible.'*

*'My Profound Mystery of Fire should be even more direct. Also, when I use my strength, it should be from multiple fronts.'*

*'The fusion of Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire should be even deeper! Both water and fire must be constantly revolving like Yin and Yang...'*

Xue Ying discovered the many problems he had with his spear techniques.

For instance, the 'Profound Mystery of Fire' which he attained in second level in terms of Realms recently was merely powerful on the surface! However, it was not perfect when he used in a full burst attack. Right now, the Deity World warrior in front of him could easily break apart his techniques. Thus, he should focus his strength on multiple fronts! This was similar to how the story behind the last straw that killed the camel. When the enemy received a fierce attack from his spear, they would instantly defend against it! Even if it was the situation when his techniques were broken apart by his opponent, if countless attacks came rushing fiercely against him, one front, two directions, three ends... the difficulty his enemy had in defending his attack would rise tremendously!

And this idea of using his strength from many different fronts should be the direction he should proceed in comprehending deeper within the Profound Mystery of Fire!

*'The Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire should be more cohesive.'*

*'Fusion between water and fire! The rotational power of water turning into the fierce flame power. The power of flame turning into the unpredictability and rotational power of water... this should interchange endlessly, thus allowing his power to rise tremendously!'* Xue Ying had some vague understanding of the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire.

And it was this vague understanding that led to a vague direction he planned in heading towards.

The 'True Meaning of Water and Fire' was so powerful that it was a grade four True Meaning! Thus, it must be extraordinary! Right now, Xue Ying's 'Water and Fire Twin Dragon Attack' could only be considered as a superficial understanding towards the fusion of water and fire. But all matters would have a difficult beginning. It was only due to the fact that he could take this crucial first step at such a young age that led to many Demigods regard him highly. Most of them would think that as Xue Ying grow older, he would have a certainty in comprehending the 'True Meaning of Water and Fire'.

.....

A hearty battle.

As the water warrior had his power suppressed to a minimum, he could only defend against the attacks! Xue Ying tried in stopping the release of his Power Bloodline, but with this halving of his strength, the water warrior could instantly begin its attack and almost had the chance of triumphing against Xue Ying. This frightened Xue Ying so much that he began releasing his Power Bloodline once again.

After all, as an opponent of the tenth match, even though his defence was extraordinary, his attack should be relatively strong as well. Without releasing his Power Bloodline, he would not be able to hold his ground.

*"Hu."*

Xue Ying suddenly retreated.

"I admit defeat." Xue Ying suddenly shouted. His body was drenched in sweat. He had consumed most of his stamina and would be out of energy soon. Even though he really wanted to continue on battling, with his Power Bloodline, his consumption of energy would be too fast. Thus, the reality was that he could not sustain himself any longer, and he had to admit defeat.

*"Dong!"*

A beat resounded in the entire Hall of Life and Death. That water man turned into a water droplet once again, before flying upwards and disappearing from

the scene.

“This marks the end of Dong Bo Xue Ying’s Transcendent Battle of Life and Death.” A grand voiced sounded out with joy imbued within, “It’s really fortunate for all of us to watch the tenth battle of the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death while we are alive. Haha, I am also excited myself in having the chance to preside over this life and death battle. Alright, the gates to the Hall of Life and Death have opened. Everyone, you may leave. This Hall of Life and Death will be closed in a while.”

*Hong long long~*

The gates of the Hall of Life and Death started opening.

Many mortals were all shouting and cheering. They were also discussing amongst themselves as they proceeded out of the Hall of Life and Death in an orderly fashion.

*“Sou.”*

Xue Ying instead flew upwards to the sky. The array did not block his path as he flew towards Qiu Chi Bai, Peng Shan, and the other Transcendents.

“Little brother Xue Ying, you sure are formidable.” Peng Shan laughed, “Winning nine matches and even killing an Abyss Demon! You also got the chance to exchange moves with that Deity World warrior... I don’t know how many Transcendents are really envious and jealous of you.”

“I believe little brother Xue Ying is already well-known amongst all the Transcendents under the heaven.” Cheng Ling Shu was excited as well, “That was too dashing. I’m afraid that in the next few thousand years, the many descendents of ours will say... that in the past ten thousand years, the person of our Xia Clan who triumphed over the most matches in the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death is called Dong Bo Xue Ying! Hahaha...”

Xue Ying laughed.

Winning nine matches was something that all new Transcendents would wish to achieve. This was something that would even be mentioned by descendent Transcendents even after ten thousand years.

It was only legends like the Purgatory Knight 'Jie Lie' who could triumph over eleven matches that would cause people to feel despair. That achievement would be mentioned even after countless ages! Even still, Xue Ying did not mind that. These achievements were, after all, just a vanity. Like how Jie Li only became a Demigod in the end and not a Deity! Thus, he had long ago died and become fertiliser for the yellow soils of the world.

Becoming a Deity was actually something all Transcendents desired.

Xue Ying himself had a similar desire!

However, to build a lofty building, one must start from a firm foundation. He was merely a weak and small new Transcendent right now even amongst all the Sky realm Transcendents! Amongst the many Sky realm Transcendents of over a few hundred years in age, many of them would be able to suppress him easily. It was only the fact that he had to participate in the 'Transcendent Battle of Life and Death' within the first year of becoming a Transcendent that he had become a bright star.

"Brother Dong Bo." Immediately, many Transcendents came over to greet him.

Right now, Xue Ying was really weak.

Even many Sky realm Transcendents were stronger than him. But everyone understood that Xue Ying right now was still young! And his result in the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death had been so heaven-shaking already!

As for those who had such a great result within the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death... these extreme geniuses would all be extraordinary in the future! Xue Ying himself would certainly become a bright star in the future. Becoming a Saint was a certainty for him. Thus, many Transcendents decided to come and make friends with him. After all, amongst all the Transcendents... the majority were still within the Sky realm.

.....

In another location.

The bald-headed, old codger 'Chao Qing' suddenly transmitted a message to the many Demigods privately, "Fellow Demigods, this old one is suggesting that

we hold an elder’s gathering for Dong Bo Xue Ying!”

At that moment, the Demigods present – including Mountain Lord He, Faction Head Si Kong Yang, all turned towards Chao Qing.

“I agree.” Mountain Lord He transmitted his voice over as well, “Dong Bo Xue Ying is someone worthy of that.”

---



## Book 5: Chapter 29 – Decision from the Elder’s Gathering

---

Transcendents were coming one by one to chat with Xue Ying. They were not hoping for anything more than that, at the very least, Xue Ying would recognise them as a familiar face in the future!

And Xue Ying himself did not have any signs of arrogance. He would respond with a smile adorning his face and interact with these Transcendents! Respect was earned. If he were to respect the others, the others would naturally reciprocate the feelings. Furthermore, Xue Ying originally did not have a cold disposition. Even when he was treating the Manor Lord Si An from the Dragon Mountain Manor in Water Rites Town, Xue Ying did not show any arrogance due to his great combat power.

“Xue Ying, you’ve become famous overnight because of this series of battle. You are really amazing to win nine matches within the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death. Let’s go go go and celebrate the occasion today.” Qiu Chi Bai had a pleasing expression and a fondness towards Xue Ying. His comprehension of the Realms was high, and thus, he understood that from Xue Ying’s move – ‘Water and Fire Flood Dragon Attack’, Xue Ying would really have the certainty of comprehending the ‘True Meaning of Water and Fire’.

Since there appeared to be another formidable brother emerging from his Tranquil Sun Province, Qiu Chi Bai was elated.

“Yes, but this time when we are celebrating, it should be little brother Xue Ying who shall treat us. After all, little brother Xue Ying has gotten a windfall, with other 2500 kilograms of Origin Stones. I’m so jealous.” Devil Blade Peng Shan said.

“Twenty five hundred kilograms! I’ve cultivated for close to five hundred years and I’ve never even obtained more than 500 kilograms of Origin Stones ever!”

“You only won four matches that year. How could that even compare with little brother Xue Ying?”

“I don’t hope for much. The day I could own at least 500 kilograms of Origin Stones will be the day I’m satisfied.”

“Little sister Ling Shu, why aren’t you speaking?”

“This Ling Shu sister actually gambled and won a few hundred kilograms of Origin Stones!”

Wu Kui, Dong Yu, Ba Ming, and Zong Tu spoke. They were currently Sky realm Transcendents. Wanting to attain 1000 contribution points at their level was really tough. Thus, to Xue Ying’s windfall of over 5000 contribution points, they felt really envious. But Xue Ying had achieved this through his own combat power. Thus, the others could only be envious and admire him!

“Treating others is a small matter. Let’s go.” Xue Ying’s attitude towards this was carefree. He obtained the news from the transmission wristband from Infernal Palace that he had obtained 5110 contribution points after winning the nine matches.

The group of Transcendents immediately took up to the skies.

Just like the other Transcendents, they flew directly out of the Hall of Life and Death. The countless mortals could only walk out of the place in an orderly manner.

And amidst the crowd of people at the gates of the Hall of Life and Death, there was a group of Legend ranking mages. Yu Jing Qiu was one of those within this group.

“Look, that’s Dong Bo Xue Ying.” Immediately, the Legend rankers discovered Xue Ying who was flying in the skies amidst the group of Transcendents.

Yu Jing Qiu hurriedly looked up.

She saw the black-robed Xue Ying who was currently chatting and laughing with Qiu Chi Bai, Cheng Ling Shu and the rest while flying in the skies.

*‘I’m just one person in the crowd while he is flying high up in the skies. We belong to two different worlds. I’m afraid that he hasn’t seen me yet.’* Yu Jing Qiu was feeling uncomfortable deep in her heart.

*‘But I’ll definitely become a Transcendent.’* Yu Jing Qiu’s eyes brightened up as

fighting spirit surged up in her.

She became a Legend ranker at such a young age. Furthermore, she was a mage! Usually, mages could only depend on investigation and understanding the natural world before they had the ability to become a Legend ranker. Thus, she was similarly being regarded highly upon with an almost certainty of becoming a Transcendent! As a result, many Legend rankers would cluster around her and hold to her. She was extraordinary and beautiful at that. Hence, there were many Legend rankers chasing after her.

*‘Dong Bo Xue Ying, wait until the day when I breakthrough into being a Transcendent. By then, I’ll be standing in front of you once again.’* Yu Jing Qiu smiled. She had some affection towards Xue Ying. But due to the fact that their interaction previously was short, Yu Jing Qiu’s state of mind was still focused on the investigation of magic arrays.

\*\*\*\*\*

The same day.

Xue Ying and the other Transcendents booked the entire third floor of a certain restaurant. They were enjoying themselves with food and drinks! Those who were relatively closer with Qiu Chi Bai came rushing over – for instance, the ‘Leftmound Knight’ Tan Shi. Close to a total of twenty Transcendents were currently having a gathering. As the lifespans of Transcendents were long, they were currently having a big celebration and it was very natural for it to last for three to five days.

The dancers were dancing to the tune. The musicians had even switched a few times. Maidservants were refilling the wine for these Transcendents. Many precious delicacies were being brought out. A plate of these delicacies could even cost up to that of a Refiner weapon!

Based on entertainment and enjoyment, as the Xia Clan was the gathering place for Transcendents, there would absolutely be the best forms of entertainment provided here, as long as you were willing to pay the cost.

Xue Ying had already stayed at the Xia Capital for half a year. Thus, he knew most of the prices. Such an extravagant celebration would cost more than 10

million gold pieces! And this was comparable to about 10 or so contribution points! To Xue Ying who had just made a windfall of over 5000 contribution points, how could that be considered as much?

.....

As the night falls.

While Xue Ying and the group of Transcendents were celebrating, within the Infernal Palace, in an 'Elder's hall'.

There was a huge round stone table.

Surrounding the stone table were enormous stone chairs! Each of these stone chairs were emitting some strange fluctuations similar to that of the stone table. Any ordinary Saint experts would feel suppressed and hard to breath should they come close to that emission.

Currently—

On the stone chairs, there were extraordinary existences seated on them, including Mountain Lord He, Faction Head Si Kong Yang, City Lord Bu. Chao Qing was amongst them, though old granny Ye was not around.

One had to be a Demigod before they had the rights to become an elder of the Xia Clan. However, those Demigods from the 'Temple of the Earth God' and 'Bloodshed Tavern' had no such rights of becoming an elder due to the fact that they were loyal to their respective deities, and they were therefore bounded by regulations! The other Transcendent organisations were loyal to the Xia Clan!

"The gathering begins with 15 elders present." One of the stone chairs had a black-haired elder seated on it. The space around him could be seen vaguely distorting, "The Elder's gathering this time is suggested by Elder Chao Qing. This marks the official start of the gathering."

"Mn." Chao Qing nodded.

The black-haired elder continued, "Elder Chao Qing, please sound your thoughts."

Even though this black-haired elder was not on the top ten of Demigod

rankings, his current status was extremely unique. That was because he was currently the Palace Head of the Infernal Palace. He held extremely loyalty to the Xia Clan, and within the Infernal World... he was truly an invincible existence.

“This old man suggested for an Elder’s gathering this time all because of Dong Bo Xue Ying.” The dry and deflated face of Chao Qing emerged a smile as if it was a flower, “Dong Bo Xue Ying’s innate talent should be something all of you have seen. Even at such a young age, he can fuse both the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire... such an innate talent shall mean that he has a certainty to comprehend the ‘True Meaning of Water and Fire’.”

“Thus, I suggest for us to put him into the list of ‘Substitute Elder’, and proceed with grooming him as one!” Chao Qing finished.

“I don’t agree!” Seated on the other side, an old man filled faintly with killing intent around his entire body coldly replied, “True Meaning of Water and Fire is merely just a fourth grade True Meaning! Those who can enter the list of ‘Substitute Elder’ are usually those who have the hope of comprehending at the very least, a third grade True Meaning! Or those with the hopes of even comprehending a second grade True Meaning! Don’t you find this Dong Bo Xue Ying to be lacking in this?”

True Meaning was categorised into nine different grades.

The lower the numerical rating, the greater the power in the True Meaning.

First grade would be True Meanings only spoken in the legends like the heaven-shaking ‘True Meaning of Black Hole’, ‘True Meaning of Time’, and others like that...

Second grade True Meaning would also be mentioned in the legends, like the ‘True Meaning of Space’ or ‘True Meaning of Yin Yang’.

As for third grade True Meanings, they would usually be much weaker as compared to those of higher tiers.

And the higher the number... the differences between a single grade would be smaller.

Like the differences between a True Meaning of ninth grade and an eighth grade would be extremely small. The differences between the second and third

grade would be huge, while the differences between third and fourth would be large but not as huge.

“He has the certainty to comprehend the True Meaning of Water and Fire. Furthermore, he might even have the chance of even reaching a higher height... comprehending the True Meaning of Yin Yang!” Chao Qing rebuked.

“Hmph, hmph, reaching a higher height? I guess the chances are too small. Who knows, he might even comprehend something weaker – the True Meaning of Icy Fire.” That old guy who had killing intent surrounding him mocked.

“Alright. Elder Dong Guo, I know you are against it. You can shut your mouth now.” Blue veins bulged on Chao Qing’s forehead.

The elder who had killing intent surrounding him laughed and did not continue. Chao Qing was after all, the eldest amongst them. Furthermore, he could even be amongst the top ten of Demigod rankings with the True Meaning of the Thunder God and had a fiery explosive temper. Thus, there was no need to argue with him.

“What do the other elders think about this?” Chao Qing looked towards the other elders, before softly transmitted a message to Mountain Lord He, “Little brother He, hurry up and help me.”

“I agree with Elder Chao Qing.” Mountain Lord He smiled.

He was after all, the number one expert under the heaven. Hence, he would have a huge influence. The other elders looked towards him.

“Just like Qiu Chi Bai, he was relatively ordinary when he was a Sky realm Transcendent. However, after that, he actually comprehended the True Meaning of Void Cleavage from the Profound Mystery of Wind in Myriad Existences!” Mountain Lord He laughed, “Dong bo Xue Ying can certainly comprehend a True Meaning of the fourth grade right now, so why can’t he achieve something even high?”

“Mountain Lord He, that cannot be affirmed. Qiu Chi Bai might be formidable, but that doesn’t represent that Dong Bo Xue Ying will be similar to him.”

“But he is young!”

Mountain Lord He added, “Don’t forget his age! Youth represents potential! If he is 100 years old now, even though the fusion of Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire might be quite good, I’ll still not agree with him becoming a Substitute Elder! But right now, he’s merely 29 years in age!”

That juncture, many Demigods nodded.

“Elder Chao Qing, do you still want to add anything?” The black-haired old man asked.

“I’ll add one more thing. He can win nine matches in the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, and he is also young. All of these showed that he has talent in battling. I’m just an old man who is dying soon, thus the reason why I suggested that is in the hopes of wanting to help Xia Clan groom another power.” Chao Qing said, “Alright. This old man is finished with his words.”

The black-haired elder nodded, “Okay, let’s start the voting.”

“Agree.”

“Against.”

“Agree.”

“Agree.”

One by one, they spoke of their opinions. The list of Substitute Elders were extraordinary. Those with merely just the hope of getting a fourth grade True Meaning would have no qualifications of entering it.

“I agree as well. Thus, amongst the fifteen of us elders, nine agree while six is against! Since the number who agreed is more than half, Dong Bo Xue Ying will be put onto the list of Substitute Elder.” The black-haired Elder announced.

---

## Book 5: Chapter 30 -The Hundred-Battle Chamber

---

Early morning.

Xue Ying, Qiu Chi Bai, Peng Shan and the rest had drunk until their entire selves were reeking of alcohol. Having finished their celebrations, they went back to their respective mansions.

“Master.” The doors were opened early beforehand as the female housekeeper Xu Qin, who was garbed in white robe, greeted joyfully. Behind her, there were several maidservants and guards greeting him respectfully.

“You’ve waited for the entire night?” Xue Ying asked.

“It’s something we should do.” The female housekeeper Xu Qin’s heart warmed at the question. Some Transcendents would not even care about the servants staying in the mansion.

“The next time, you all need not wait. There is no need for these kind of acts.” Having said that, Xue Ying went into the mansion.

Walking to the back garden, he slouched on his favourite chair. With a thought in his mind, the Transcendent Qi immediately purged the alcohol within his body, completely, allowing him to become totally sober. Casually taking the flask, he tilted it downwards before drinking a mouthful of the spiritual liquid condensed with the Stone of Oceanic World! Concurrently, he could feel his entire self and spirit become fresh and refreshed.

*‘After this, it’ll be the period for cultivation as a Transcendent.’* Xue Ying silently thought to himself, *‘I better think through this and plan my schedule well.’*

Right now, it could be said that Xue Ying had finally truly become a Transcendent.

Transcendents had a long lifespan, with Sky realm Transcendents reaching upwards of 800 years, Saint realm Transcendents reached 1500 years, and Demigods reaching a frightening 3000 years! He reckoned that he would be able



to reach the Saint realm without any problems. Thus, he would have an estimated lifespan of at least 1500 years! And that was just saying it simply. In reality, this was an extremely long period of time. Some mortals would only have a lifespan of 100 years. Those Transcendents with a lifespan of more than 1000 years could be a living history to them.

Right now, he was merely 29 years old... and that meant he was just a juvenile! Even amongst the Sky realm Transcendents, there would be many who could suppress him.

*‘I think I should first continue with my previous cultivation method.’*

*‘Endlessly chasing after the dream of perfection in my spear techniques!’*

*‘While I am cultivating, I should do some Transcendent missions.’* Xue Ying was currently contemplating. Any new Transcendents would have to complete ten life-death missions within ten years! Before completing these ten missions, they would be forbidden from leaving the Infernal World. Thus, that was the reason why Xue Ying told his family members that the latest he would reunite with them would be ten years later.

If he was fast, a few years would be enough.

Xue Ying did not want to rush through this mission requirement. He would rather be prudent when doing the missions.

*‘I should also collect some biographies of the Transcendent ancestors of Xia Clan so that I might glean something which I can learn from during their entire life.’* Xue Ying thought. He was someone who loved learning. Ever since he was young, he would read many folk tales of Transcendents. Yet because those were merely stories passed down from legends, the important information inherent within was too little.

Right now, since he had become a Transcendent, he would definitely be able to find a lot of information in the histories of Transcendents, and the mistakes made by several ancestors – which he would definitely not commit! At the same time, he could also learn some good cultivation methods from them.

After some time.

Suddenly-

“Dong Bo Xue Ying!”

A voice was transmitted from mid-air. Xue Ying was startled by that as he raised his head only to see a yellow-robed figure, with eyes that flickered like lightning, looking down at Xue Ying.

An unseen suppression made Xue Ying feel a knot in his heart.

It was a Demigod!

Xue Ying immediately stood up before greeting respectfully, “Dong Bo Xue Ying greets this senior.”

“Come with me,” The yellow-robed old man said.

“Yes.” Xue Ying immediately flew to the skies and followed quickly behind the yellow-robed old man. There were many maidservants below in the mansion panicking, though they did not dare to shout.

The yellow-robed old man did not say anything. He only led the way with Xue Ying obediently following.

A Demigod came, and he dared not spout some nonsense. One must know that there were only that many Demigods living under the heavens, and all of them were frightening overlords of their own domains.

.....

Xue Ying was filled with bewilderment in his heart as he followed the yellow-robed old man towards the Infernal Palace.

*‘We’ve come to the Infernal Palace?’* Xue Ying was puzzled.

*Hu.*

The yellow-robed old man rapidly descended, with Xue Ying following closely behind. They landed on a meandering corridor.

“That is the Hundred-Battle Chamber.” The yellow-robed old man pointed out to a pavilion that was completely sealed, “Dong Bo Xue Ying, you are still very young. Who knows, you might even break the records set in the Hundred-Battle

Chamber.”

“Senior looks too highly upon this junior.” Xue Ying immediately replied. At the same time, he deeply looked at that ancient-looking sealed chambers.

The Hundred-Battle Chamber was known amongst all the Transcendents.

The chamber was filled with a hundred Refiner Organisms which all had a peak stage Sky realm combat ability. Furthermore, they were able to harmonize with each other’s fighting styles perfectly well! Whenever a Transcendent expert entered, they would be surrounded and attacked! Facing against one Refiner Organism would be taxing on one’s strength already, much less to say against 100 synchronized enemies at once. This was a battle causing one to feel absolute despair, with more than 90 percent of Transcendent at Sky realm Transcendents facing immediate defeat.

But the rewards for completing this Hundred-Battle Chamber challenge were great.

Facing against 100 and winning against them would allow one to obtain 10,000 contribution points!

Sky realm Transcendents below 60 years of age could win another 10,000 contribution points if they win!

Those were an extremely crazy amount of rewards.

To these Transcendents with a lifespan of 800 years, sixty years of age were just like the juvenile periods of mortals! If one wanted to attain victory in this Hundred-Battles Chamber at such a young age, the difficulty would be so great that it made many feel despair. According to Xue Ying’s understanding... in the entire Xia Clan’s past ten thousand years, none had attained such a great accomplishment before! After all, many had only become a Transcendent after 60 years of age.

Like Xue Ying who became a Transcendent at 28 years of age, he would be considered the youngest Transcendent in the past thousand years! Thus, from the moment he transcended, he would only have 32 years to try his best against the chamber!

“One should have a target.” The yellow-robed old man laughed.

“Wanting to win this, one should have at least a middle stage Saint realm combat power.” Xue Ying felt the pressure. A Sky realm Transcendent wishing to have the combat power of a middle stage Saint realm? That was too difficult!

“There are many middle stage Saint realm Transcendents who can’t even ‘succeed in this.” The yellow-robed old man had an expression that seemed to be laughing and not laughing, “However, since you are still young, you might have the chance to try your luck.”

“This junior will try his best,” Xue Ying murmured.

Was this Demigod making fun of him?

.....

The Hundred-Battle Chamber could be attempted by any human Sky realm Transcendents. However, they could only attempt the challenge once every ten years!

“*Da da da!*” The yellow-robed old man walked on within the corridor with Xue Ying following obediently.

They turned a few times within the enormous Infernal Palace before reaching a low hill. This hill was over 200 meters high with a waterfall gushing downwards, pouring into a lake that had been formed by the water’s impact on the ground.

“The next time you come, just follow the road I used to bring you here. If you were to fly within the Infernal Palace forcefully, you would get lost within the space.” The yellow-robed old man said, “Go, let’s enter.”

Only then did he fly towards the waterfall.

Xue Ying followed behind him obediently.

*Hua~*

At the moment when his body contacted the waterfall, even though the water touched his body, the space around them became distorted. The scenery in front of Xue Ying revealed itself as an illusion. As everything brightened up in front of him, a vast space appeared with undulating mountains and clouds floating in the skies.

“So beautiful.” Xue Ying was shocked. He had not thought that there would be such a vast space hidden within the Infernal Palace.

He had not heard of this before. According to the memoirs left behind by Elder Lei Zhen of the Sea Deity Palace, and the many Transcendents he drank and chatted with, none of them knew of such a vast space hidden in the Infernal Palace.

“The Infernal Palace is a Deity treasure of the Zhen Clan with many secrets hidden in it.” The yellow-robed old man laughed, “Dong Bo Xue Ying, for the next hundred years or more, you may cultivate in this location!”

“Ah, I, I can cultivate here?” Xue Ying was surprised.

“That’s right. Due to the suggestion provided by Elder Chao Qing, my Xia Clan’s Elder gathering decided to name you as a Substitute Elder. That’s why you can come here.” The yellow-robed old man laughed, “I’m called Gong Yu, the master of someone amongst you and your friends. You may call me Master Gong.”

Xue Ying was stunned.

Senior Chao Qing? Xia Clan’s Elder gathering? He was named as a Substitute Elder?

---

## Book 5: Chapter 31 – Scarlet Cloud Hill

---

“This... what is happening?” Xue Ying could not help but ask.

“The Substitute Elder position is a secret of our Xia Clan.” The yellow-robed old man said, “I believe you should know about the elders of Xia Clan?”

Xue Ying nodded.

Elders of Xia Clan were something he certainly did know about! All the Demigods of humankind, as long as they did not belong to the Demonic Faction, the Bloodshed Tavern, or the Temple of the Earth God would have the qualifications to become an elder of Xia Clan! The gathering of elders of Xia Clan... was actually something held at the highest level within the entire Xia Clan. They would control everything behind the Xia Clan in order to let the Xia Clan flourish onwards in the future.

“Our Xia Clan has a limited amount of resources, thus we cannot groom every single Transcendent.” The yellow-robed old man said, “As such, since a very long time ago, there is the plan of having ‘Substitute Elders’ where we would choose those amongst the Sky realm Transcendents with high potential to groom thoroughly. As long as this grooming is successful and that Transcendent achieves greatness, they will be an enormous aid to our Xia Clan! Those talents who are chosen usually have the hope of grasping a third grade True Meaning or even a second grade True Meaning. Thus, the moment they comprehended such a powerful True Meaning, the chances of becoming a Demigod would be great. Only with such Demigods can we continue to uphold the strength of the backbone of our Xia Clan!”

Xue Ying nodded.

Right.

Even between Demigods, the difference in comprehension of True Meaning would create a frightening world of different in their combat power.

Like the ‘Great Elder Ao Lan’ from the Beast Clan, the True Meaning he comprehended was the True Meaning of Life. Even though he did not condense

a ‘True Deity Heart’, he was still the third in ranking within the Demigod rankings! At the same time, he was a huge headache to all the experts of humankind. That was because the ‘True Meaning of Life’ he comprehended was a grade three True Meaning!

With regard to the clan of any race, a true peak expert would be of a huge aid to the entire clan and race! Hence, the Xia Clan would also groom those with hopes of comprehending a grade three True Meaning or even those with possibility of comprehending a grade two True Meaning.

“What about me?” Xue Ying had some doubts, “Do the elders think I’ve the chance of comprehending a grade three True Meaning?”

“No.”

The yellow-robed old man replied, “You are an exception.”

“An exception?” Xue Ying was startled.

“Previously, we’ve chosen eight Transcendents to groom. Four amongst them had comprehended part of the Profound Mystery of Space! In the future, they might have hopes of obtaining a True Meaning related to Space!” The yellow-robed old man Gong Yu said, “One of them comprehended the Profound Mystery of Death, and one with the Profound Mystery of Life. One had comprehended the Profound Mystery of Extreme Yang while the last grasped hold of some Profound Mystery related to time.”

Xue Ying was dumbfounded.

Xue Ying had long grasped hold of information from books related to the nine grades of True Meaning. This was something that all Transcendents should know.

Grade one True Meaning: True Meaning of Time, True Meaning of Black Hole, True Meaning of Extremity, True Meaning of Chaos... these were legends amongst the legends. For instance, the True Meaning of Time – in reality, under ordinary conditions, only those who were about to become a Deity would have some comprehension regarding the Profound Mystery of Time. Transcendents would usually be unable to comprehend anything related to the Profound Mystery of Time. Unless one’s primordial bloodline awakening gave one the

innate talent related to time! Only then would one have the hope of comprehending the Profound Mystery of Time.

Simply said, grade one True Meanings were the most perfect True Meanings in the countless worlds, including the Deity World or even the Dark Abyss.

Second grade True Meaning: True Meaning of Space, True Meaning of Yin Yang, True Meaning of Life Death, True Meaning of Annihilation, True Meaning of Reincarnation, of time stop, time acceleration, time deceleration...

These were similarly True Meanings spoken in the legends. Those who could comprehend them were amazing experts. During a battle, if one side had extremely great power and speed, while the other side had someone who comprehended the True Meaning of time stop, without a doubt, during this period of time stop, he would be able to kill off all those enemies who were supposedly unstoppable!

Thus, the distances between comprehension of Realms were actually the distances between their essences.

Without true power, one would only be torn to death easily!

Third grade True Meaning: True Meaning of Void Cleavage, True Meaning of Space Destruction, of Teleportation, of Shadow Space... any branches related to space were usually of the grade three level of True Meaning. Other than that, there were the True Meaning of Death, True Meaning of Destruction, True Meaning of Life, True Meaning of Gravity, True Meaning of Extreme Yin, True Meaning of Extreme Yang, True Meaning of Waves...

.....

Those of the top three grades were all extremely terrifying. Not counting the first and second grade, as long as one grasped and comprehended a grade three True Meaning, they would be able to control the world.

“Amongst these eight, there is one who had a time-related understanding with hopes of reaching a grade two True Meaning.” Xue Ying murmured, “The other seven had hopes of comprehending a grade three True Meaning. What about me? Why am I an exception?”



“Right now, you are able to fuse both Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire. In the future, you might have the chance of comprehending the grade four ‘True Meaning of Water and Fire’.” The yellow-robed old man Gong Yu said.

“Grade four?” Xue Ying was stunned.

The others could comprehend a grade three or grade two while he only had hopes of comprehending a grade four?

“The other eight only have the hopes of comprehending.” The yellow-robed old man continued, “Wanting to truly control a grade three or grade two True Meaning is actually very difficult. By our estimates, only two or three of the eight will succeed! As for those who might become a Demigod, I will have to make a statement that if just one of them becomes a Demigod, that would be impressive. As long as there’s a Demigod who comprehended a grade three True Meaning emerging, our efforts in grooming them could be considered a resounding success!”

“As for you! You’ve more than a 90 percent chances of controlling the True Meaning of Water and Fire!” The yellow-robed old man said, “Their chances are low while your chances are great! Even though it’s merely a grade four True Meaning, it’s enough already. Furthermore, you are still young, and you have the strong recommendation by Elder Chao Qing... thus, that’s why the motion was passed for you to become a Substitute Elder.”

He did not elaborate. In reality, that time when the decision was made, only nine elders agreed with the decision with six going against it! This ratio was quite high as compared to usually, when choosing one with great talents, that choice would easily be decided.

“You’re still young. Who knows, you might even improve a step further from the True Meaning of Water and Fire to the True Meaning of Yin Yang,” The yellow-robed old man Gong Yu said.

The understanding of a True Meaning could be said to be always changing.

Like the ‘True Meaning of Gravity’, it might even improve slowly until it reached the grade one ‘True Meaning of Black Hole’.”

“You’re still young, and that’s the reason why most elders agreed.” Gong Yu

laughed, “Let’s go and meet you fellow disciple brothers and sisters.”

.....

Flying in this world with undulating mountains, Gong Yu introduced Xue Ying to the place, “This group of mountains is known as the Scarlet Cloud Mountain range, thus giving rise to the name of ‘Scarlet Cloud Mountain World’ for this vast space... Because this clan protection Deity treasure was sent back by one of our ancestors of the Xia Clan, ‘Emperor Scarlet Cloud’.”

“Emperor Scarlet Cloud.” Xue Ying silently etched that name in his mind. It was because of these ancestors of Xia Clan who did not forget their homeland even after becoming Deities and sent back these Deity treasures that the Xia Clan flourish and had the power to completely suppress the Beast Clan and Transcendent natives!

*Hu.*

“It’s just in front,” Gong Yu pointed to the head of one of the mountains. That mountain was extremely beautiful, with mountain springs all around. *Gu gu* sounds could be heard from these springs. Fog could be seen surrounding the place, and bamboo houses could be seen beside the mountain springs.

“Usually, your disciple brothers and sisters would be found here.” Gong Yu said.

“Senior Gong Yu” A sound was heard.

One of the mountain springs’ fog rapidly dissipated. On the empty ground stood nine figures. The one leading them was someone who was bright like the sun – a green-robed male. An unseen pressure emitted by him made the others feel awe.

“Faction Head.” Xue Ying immediately recognised him. That was actually the Faction head of his own Water Daoist Faction – Si Kong Yang!

“Faction Head Si Kong.” Gong Yu greeted politely. His posture showing the lower status he had compared to Si Kong Yang. After all, Si Kong Yang was one of the human existences standing high up at the peak.

“Xue Ying, come stand over here,” Si Kong Yang said.

“Yes.” Xue Ying immediately and obediently stood beside the other eight people. He understood that these were the other Transcendents who were being groomed.

“Our Scarlet Cloud Mountain will have one more Transcendent from today on,” Si Kong Yang said, “I’m sure you all should recognise him already – he is none other than Dong Bo Xue Ying, the one who just had his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death! Dong Bo Xue Ying came here the latest, and would be the youngest disciple brother! During the next hundred years or so, you will all be cultivating together. I hope that you will treasure this disciple friendship you have with one another. In the future, if two or three amongst you become a powerful Demigod, as one of your masters, I will feel extremely proud.”

---

## Book 6: Chapter 1 – Disciple Brothers and Sisters

---

“Calling all of you as Substitute Elders is precisely for the reason that we hope you all will become Demigods.” Under that unseen pressure of Si Kong Yang, everyone was holding their breath, “We’ll bring out huge amounts of resources to groom you all, thus becoming a Saint expert is something not worth mentioning for all of the Xia Clan. Only when you become a Demigod will you be called the backbone of our Xia Clan! What disappoints me so much, however, is that none of you have yet to actually attain the third level of any Realm of Myriad Existences!”

Xue Ying secretly muttered to himself.

Their comprehensions of the Realms were not that high.

But that should be the case. Each different Profound Mystery would have a distinct difficulty in the comprehension of it. Things like Water, Wind, Thunder and Earth of Myriad Existences... would be much easier to comprehend. But for Profound Mysteries like Space, Life, and similar kinds, wanting to achieve the first level comprehension in Realms of Myriad Existences would be extremely difficult. However, the moment one succeeded, a first level Profound Mystery of Space would be stronger than that of Profound Mystery of Fire at the second level!

“According to the old rules,” Si Kong Yang continued, “Dong Bo Xue Ying is our newest disciple. Hence, he’ll be ranked in the middle, at the fifth position! The rest of you, adjust accordingly by moving behind by a position. I’ll continue monitoring the changes in your combat power, comprehension of the Realms, and other areas, so that your position may change at anytime.”

“Fifth position?” Xue Ying wondered.

Si Kong Yang gave Xue Ying an impatient glare, before adding on to his previous words, “Those with high potential in comprehension of the Realms will attain more resources. As for those who cultivate slowly, and have a weaker potential... will naturally be given less resources! How much you get will be

determined by your ranking.”

Xue Ying understood.

The nine Transcendents who were being groomed would see changes in the amount of resources they could obtain. This should be right because, through this method, everyone would definitely be kept on their toes in cultivating.

“I’ll come over occasionally to untangle any doubts you have in your cultivation,” Si Kong Yang said, “But usually, it’ll be brother Gong Yu! Alright, you all should take this time to acquaint with one another.”

“Brother Gong Yu, I’ll make my move first.” Si Kong Yang looked towards the yellow-robed old man, Gong Yu.

“Faction Head Si Kong, just leave the matters over here to me,” Gong Yu laughed.

Si Kong Yang was someone who had condensed the True Deity Heart. Coming over once every one and a half years was really quite good for them. After all, most Transcendents would have to depend on themselves when cultivating, with Demigods giving some pointers at times.

*Hu.*

With a step, Si Kong Yang’s body became enshrined in gold, and thereafter, he disappeared into the skies.

“Alright, Faction Head Si Kong has left. Everyone can take a breather now,” Gong Yu laughed, “You all should acquaint with each other first.”

“Brother Dong Bo, you sure are quite extraordinary, killing even the Abyss Demon and exchanging moves with the Deity World warrior. We were all so envious as we watched your battles.” A tall and big male who was relatively handsome laughed before breaking the ice, “I’m called Situ Hong, the oldest amongst us in terms of age. I’m older than Disciple Brother Zhang just by a year, haha.”

Standing by the side with two other men was a guy with a moustache. He laughed and replied, “I’m called Zhang Peng!”

“Greetings Disciple Brother Situ, Disciple Brother Zhang,” Xue Ying said.

“You can call me Wen Yong An, greetings Disciple Brother Dong Bo.” A thin and young sounding voice that had a soft feeling inherent in its timber spoke out. His smile could penetrate through the heart of many.

“Disciple Brother Wen,” Xue Ying said.

“I’m called Du Rou Rou!” A female beside who was plump shouted out, “Little brother Xue Ying, come come come, quick call me sister.”

A bead of sweat formed on Xue Ying’s forehead.

This Disciple Sister Du Rou Rou was one of the ugliest Transcendent women he’d ever seen in his life. Usually, Transcendents would undergo a physical rebirth, allowing their skin and complexions to appear more appealing. Their looks would all be relatively good. However, this Disciple Sister of his, Rou Rou, was firstly, really plump. Secondly, her teeth were crooked and her hair was messy. Indeed, she was seriously lacking in the area of appearance.

However, from the perspective of befriending her, this Disciple Sister Du Rou Rou seemed very friendly and not of a sloppy character. Thus, it was worth befriending her.

“Disciple Sister,” Xue Ying said.

“Why aren’t you willing to call me sister?” Disciple Sister Du Rou Rou muttered.

“Disciple Sister Du, Disciple Brother Dong Bo just came here. Don’t frighten him too much.” A jubilant looking young man, with a huge mouth laughed, “I am Pu Yang Bo, and my specialty is teleportation. Next time if you need to go anywhere, I’ll send you there in a nifty!”

Xue Ying instantly had a good impression of this Disciple Brother Pu Yang.

“I am Yu Feng!” Beside Pu Yang Bo was another young man who seemed to be the most dashing one within the group.

“Greetings Disciple Brother Pu Yang, Disciple Brother Yu,” Xue Ying added.

“Old Wu, why aren’t you speaking.” Pu Yang Bo tilted his big mouth as he stared at a young man whose face was filled with wrinkles. His hair was mostly white, “Disciple Brother Dong Bo, Old Wu is actually younger than us. However,

because he comprehended the Profound Mystery of Death, he became what you see. He usually keeps to himself, and rarely speaks. But his character is quite good.”

“Greetings Disciple Brother Wu,” Xue Ying said.

That young man who had wrinkles and was mostly white-haired squeezed out a smile. It seemed that he was rusty at smiling and did not really speak with other people.

Xue Ying praised inwardly.

Those who comprehended the Profound Mystery of Death had an extraordinary character.

“Haha, the last person here is Disciple Sister Zhuo. Disciple Brother Dong Bo, I’m sure your heart is already itching by now, right?” Pu Yang Bo introduced.

Xue Ying looked towards the last female.

Her appearance was relatively pretty, and she had a great figure. She could be considered a beauty. However, at the very most, she was only comparable with women like Kong You Yue and not comparable with an absolute beauty like Yu Jing Qiu!

But—

This Disciple Sister Zhuo had an attribute which made others have an insatiable desire to want to touch her. This sort of attraction was something innate to life. Ninety-nine out of a hundred men would all have an incredible desire to own her. Even though Xue Ying had quite a resolute will and was not a pervert, he could not help but control the innermost desire in his heart, causing him to feel something was awry.

“Disciple Brother Xue Ying.” Disciple Sister Zhuo smiled, showing her politeness.

“Disciple Sister Zhuo,” Xue Ying replied.

Pu Yang Bo who was beside him hurriedly transmitted, “Disciple Brother Dong Bo, don’t lose your soul. Disciple Sister Zhuo has awakened her primordial bloodline. Not only does she have a ‘Extreme Yin Body’, she also comprehended

the Profound Mystery of Extreme Yin! Furthermore, this Extreme Yin Body actually has an utmost attraction to most men. Unless you are a guy... who is interested in other guys!”

“Extreme Yin Body?” Xue Ying was shocked. He had not wasted his time during this half year period at the Xia Capital. Thus, after reading and collecting many books, he naturally understood what was the Extreme Yin Body.

For women with the Extreme Yin Body, after losing her virginity to another man, the yin essence would enter the soul of that man and nourish it. The effect brought about by this act would even be greater than many rare treasures, allowing one’s spirit to undergo a metamorphosis! Even if he were to drink the spiritual liquid condensed with the Stone of Oceanic World for a few hundred years, the effect would still not be comparable with this single metamorphosis. Of course, the aforementioned would only occur when the soul of that man was compatible with that of the woman. Otherwise, even someone of the Demigod level would have a hard time attaining that metamorphosis.

“Hehe, as a result, there are currently many others who are chasing after Disciple Sister Zhuo,” Pu Yang Bo transmitted.

.....

Xue Ying and the other eight Transcendents chatted for awhile, and broke the ice between them.

“On top of this mountain, there are a total of 12 bamboo houses, from high to low. Each house is allocated based on your ranking. Dong Bo Xue Ying, from today onwards, you’ll be staying at the fifth bamboo house,” Gong Yu said. “There is a book giving a brief introduction placed in the bamboo house. After browsing through it, you should know, more or less, some of the cultivation locations within this Scarlet Cloud Mountain World.”

“Alright, everyone, time to disperse. Your Disciple Brother Dong Bo isn’t too familiar with this place yet,” Gong Yu ordered.

“That’s simple. Later on, we’ll bring Disciple Brother around the place,” Situ Hong laughed.

“Disciple Brother, you should go and rest up first. Later tonight, we’ll meet at



the Xia Capital's Seven Moons Restaurant to pick you up," Pu Yang Bo excitedly shouted.

After all, they would be cultivating together in the future. Thus, everyone was quite polite with one another.

Xue Ying soon reached his own bamboo house.

The bamboo house was built on top of a mountain spring lake. The mountain spring emitted a *gu gu* sound, with heat rising from the lake that caused fog to form. Xue Ying walked on the water towards the bamboo house. Surrounding the house, there were bamboo poles that formed a small courtyard.

"*Zhi Ya!*" He pushed open the door and entered the courtyard.

It was relatively clean. Placed by the side within was a huge jade pillar.

Listed on top of it were nine lines of text.

Ranking one: Wen Yong An, *Profound Mystery of Life*, second level, completed the 'Underground Magma River' life-death mission.

Ranking two: Du Rou Rou, *Profound Mystery of Time*, first level, completed the fundamental mission.

Ranking three: Situ Hong, *Profound Mystery of Space*, second level, completed the 'Underground Magma River' life-death mission.

Ranking four: Wu Cang, *Profound Mystery of Death*, second level, completed the 'Underground Magma River' life-death mission.

Ranking five: Dong Bo Xue Ying, *Profound Mystery of Water and Fire*, first level, no missions completed.

Ranking six: Zhuo Yi, *Profound Mystery of Extreme Yin*, second level, completed fundamental mission.

Ranking seven: Zhang Peng, *Profound Mystery of Space*, second level, completed the 'Underground Magma River' life-death mission.

Ranking eight: Yu Feng, *Profound Mystery of Space*, second level, completed the fundamental mission.

Ranking nine: Pu Yang Bo, *Profound Mystery of Space*, first level, completed

the fundamental mission.

*‘Rankings? There’s even the rankings listed within the bamboo house?’ Xue Ying helplessly smiled, ‘it seems that the elders of Xia Clan aren’t wanting to let us relax for even a single moment. But how are the rankings determined other than one’s comprehension of the Realms and completion rates of missions. Are there other factors?’*

Xue Ying remembered the words from Si Kong Yang.

The greater the potential one had in his comprehension of the Realms, the more resources would be provided.

Those who cultivated slowly, and did not have much potential in their comprehension of the Realm would have less resources given.

*‘So they regard one’s potential the most?’* Xue Ying understood roughly what was going on. It was because of her potential that Disciple Sister Du Rou Rou was ranked number two!

*‘Haha... it seems that I’m the weakest compared to all of them?’* Xue Ying laughed, *‘It seems that my days in cultivation from now on will become interesting.’*

Xue Ying considered this kind of ranking system as entertainment. After all, what he valued most was his own improvement.

---

## Book 6: Chapter 2 – Ten Years

---

It was extremely quiet within the small courtyard. Xue Ying entered the bamboo house. It had two floors, with the first being empty – no pieces of furniture at all.

*‘It seems that I’ll have to get my own chairs and tables.’* Xue Ying smiled while shaking his head. He followed along the bamboo stairs upwards to the upper level.

On the upper level, it was similarly empty. There were windows on all four sides, with the only piece of furniture located on the floor – a table! On top of this table was placed a book and a plate. On that plate were a small vase, two red fruits, and a flask of wine.

*‘Master Gong Yu said that there will be a book with a brief introductions of the place. I reckon it should be this book?’* Xue Ying sat cross-legged in front of the table before browsing through the book. Indeed, written within the book was some general knowledge related to cultivation in the ‘Scarlet Cloud Mountain World’.

Everyone who could enter the list of Substitute Elders would be groomed heavily.

The vase, two red fruits, and the spiritual liquid within the wine flask were each a kind of Transcendent treasure that one could enjoy once every ten days! These treasures would be a huge help towards the development of one’s physical body and spirit.

*‘Zezeze, they are still quite willing to part with it.’* Xue Ying recognised these three Transcendent treasures, *‘A vase of Dragon Blood, two Amber Mist Fruits, and a flask of Nine-Fruits Spiritual Liquid. I’ll get one set of these every ten days. According to my calculations... every year, the value of these items would add up to about 100 kilograms of Origin Stones. A hundred years down the road, it would be 10,000 kilograms of Origin Stones!’*

Browsing through the introduction in the book.

Those who were selected to become a Substitute Elder were all Sky realm Transcendents! After attaining the 'Saint realm', one would have to leave.

That was because when one broke through to the Saint realm, one's spirit would have a qualitative change. Transcendent Treasures like the Dragon's Blood, Amber Mist Fruit, and the Nine-Fruits Spiritual Liquid would still have some aid towards one's physical body and spirit, though the effect would be drastically reduced! After all, the stronger a Transcendent, the less help external treasures would be for them. Thus, it would not be worth the value for so many Transcendent treasures to be used without having a respective return in effect on these Saint realm Transcendents!

*'One can stay in the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World for at most 500 years! Also, one has to leave when one becomes a Saint.'* Xue Ying thought to himself, *'Right now, I'm ranked number five. Within these 500 years, the total value of the treasures would add up to 50,000 kilograms of Origin Stones. What if I'm ranked number one? Furthermore, I haven't take into account the investment done in other areas.'*

Fifty thousand kilograms of Origin Stones?

Most peak stage Saint realm experts would not even be able to obtain that much!

But first, he drank down the Dragon's Blood! A lump of coldness entered his abdomen. Following that was a burning sensation that spread towards every part of his body. He could not help but sweat. His spirit had received similar nourishment as well.

*"Ka cha ka cha!"* After experiencing the results of the Dragon's Blood, he slowly ate the Amber Mist Fruit before drinking the Nine-Fruits Spiritual Liquid. It felt refreshing.

*'Cultivating in this Scarlet Cloud Mountain World is indeed excellent.'* Xue Ying smiled, *'Putting in the utmost effort during the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death was indeed the right decision.'*

The majority of Transcendents would have a tough cultivation route ahead of

them.

Want to acquire treasure? Want to obtain secret techniques? They would have to pick up some life-death missions and kill those Transcendent natives who would not surrender!

Comprehension of the Realms?

They would have to accept nature as their teacher – cultivating by themselves endlessly.

Usually, there would not be any teacher-student relationship in the world of Transcendents. After all, even the best teachers would not be able to compare with the ‘nature of the World’! Like Gong Yu and Si Kong Yang, they could only give some occasional pointers to Xue Ying and the rest, merely pointing out the direction to solve some of their problems.

.....

In the Scarlet Cloud Mountain, the resources provided were great, but at the same time, the missions they undertook were extremely dangerous! The life-death missions taken by ordinary Transcendents in the external world would only be considered as a ‘Fundamental mission’! They would still have to pick up more dangerous missions. It was fortunate that all their combat abilities were extremely powerful, and that the mysteries they comprehended out were all extraordinary, thus giving them a huge boost in terms of survivability compared to the other Transcendents.

Amongst them, the ‘Profound Mystery of Water and Fire’ Xue Ying had was the weakest comprehension.

\*\*\*\*\*

Time passed.

To the Transcendents who had the ‘nature of the World as their master’, they would usually feel that time passed quite quickly! After all, their occasional pondering of insight would mean a few hours passing by.

Within the blink of an eye, Xue Ying had spent ten years in the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World.

Midsummer.

The Scarlet Cloud Mountain World was relatively hot.

*Hu, hu.*

Two figures flew amidst the ranges of mountains. The aura emitted by them were extraordinary and unpredictable. These two were precisely powerful Demigod existences! And they were the two Demigods in charge of the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World – Gong Yu and Faction Head Si Kong Yang.

“Were there any breakthroughs the past year amongst those brats?” Faction Head Si Kong Yang asked.

“No breakthroughs. It was relatively quiet,” Gong Yu replied.

“No breakthroughs?” Si Kong Yang looked at him.

“Haha, Faction Head Si Kong. You can’t expect these little brats to have a continuous chain of surprises like the previous year,” Gong Yu laughed. The previous year was indeed the year when the nine Sky realm Transcendents had consecutive chains of breakthroughs, especially ‘Du Rou Rou’ who had reached the second level in terms of her understanding of Profound Mystery of Time! As a result, she became first in the rankings!

Profound Mysteries related to Time, even if it was a side-branch, would still be something amazing. At the very least, when one comprehended a True Meaning, it would be a grade two True Meaning! That would be a True Meaning spoken only of in legends!

But in reality, the Demigods of Infernal Palace would always have some sort of expectations without much confidence in wishing that they would have an expert comprehending a second grade True Meaning. But that was too difficult! Previously, Du Rou Rou was merely at the first level of understanding in Realms of Myriad of Existences, and she already was ranked number two. That clearly showed how much the Xia Clan regarded her. After all, such comprehension of a Profound Mystery related to Time... if it did not succeed, then fine. But if it succeeded, the final result would be amazing!

Right now, she comprehended the second level of the Realms of Myriad Existences, causing the elders of Xia Clan to be excited as they held greater

hopes for her.

“Right. That Dong Bo Xue Ying encountered some problems,” Gong Yu suddenly said.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying met some problems?” Si Kong Yang frowned, “Didn’t he fuse the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire perfectly to reach the second level last year, and he has completed the ‘Underground Magma River’ life-death mission?”

He was still quite pleased with Xue Ying.

He was young, and cultivated quite quickly.

This year, he was just 39 years old, and was much younger than the other Transcendents, yet he could depend on his spear to sweep through the Underground Magma River! This Underground Magma River was actually a unique Transcendent mission that was extremely dangerous and difficult to complete. Other Transcendents who were being groomed... even though they cultivated for a long period of time, they could not complete this frightening Transcendent mission.

This proved that Xue Ying’s combat power was ranked in the middle amongst the nine Transcendents.

Because the fusion between Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire was perfect, Si Kong Yang immediately promoted him to second in rankings! It was only after Du Rou Rou had a breakthrough did Xue Ying drop to the third rank.

Today, the top three rankers were none other than Du Rou Rou, Wen Yong An and Dong Bo Xue Ying.

“It’s just a minor problem,” Gong Yu added, “Though that made me feel worried.”

“What problem?” Si Kong Yang immediately asked.

“He is indeed miles ahead in his comprehension of Profound Mystery of Water and Fire. I even think that he will be able to comprehend the True Meaning of Water and Fire within the next hundred years. He will certainly have a bright future! However, within the past half year, he actually comprehended the

Profound Mystery of Wind of Myriad Existences!” Gong Yu said.

“Profound Mystery of Wind?” Si Kong Yang’s expression changed slightly.

“Right, Profound Mystery of Wind.” Gong Yu nodded, “He reached the first level of Myriad Existences in the Profound Mystery of Wind. It is weaker, after all, it was just comprehended recently.”

“What is this Dong Bo Xue Ying doing?” Si Kong Yang became angry, “He is actually distracted into investigating other Profound Mysteries? Does he think that his cultivation speed is too fast?”

The smallest of the smallest comprehensions during cultivation was something to be greatly jealous of!

“I’ve also said that he’s just started comprehending it, thus it will not influence him much. I’ve asked him to temporarily give up on the Profound Mystery of Wind, and asked him to focus on the Profound Mystery of Water and Fire,” Gong Yu said.

“Mn, his innate talent is indeed very high. Hopefully, he will not walk down another path. Come, let’s go and see what improvement these nine brats have had,” Si Kong Yang said. He would visit once every one and a half years to give some pointers to these Transcendents.

*Hu, hu.*

The two of them flew towards the mountain hosting the bamboo houses.

---



## Book 6: Chapter 3 – Soaring Cloud Peak

---

Scarlet Cloud Mountain World, the summit Soaring Cloud Peak

A black-robed man was currently sitting and leaning back on a stone chair. He was drinking wine while looking at the rising and dipping ranges of mountains. He loved this place very much because it was high enough for him to overlook the many mountains. Ever since his youth, when living at the Snowrock Castle, Xue Ying would love this feeling of looking down at the vast world! And this 'Soaring Cloud Peak' was indeed high enough and peaceful enough that he would not get interrupted during his practice of spear techniques!

At night, he would gaze at the moonlight on top of the Soaring Cloud Peak, wondering at how the moonlight brightened the entire Scarlet Cloud Mountain World.

During the day, he would be able to see the clouds moving amidst the mountains, and that view was something absolutely beautiful.

Xue Ying rarely drank when he was young.

However, the older he got, the more frequent he would drink. Every time he pondered his spear technique and pondered the world, he would become joyful, yet there was no one around him to share this joy with. As a result, he would drink.

The road of cultivation for a Transcendent was, after all, a lonely one!

Of course, even though it was lonely during cultivation, a Transcendent might not be that lonely in terms of his relations.

*'Who would have thought that the person most formidable in cultivation in our Clan is my father!'* Xue Ying shook his head and laughed. Having completed the 10 life-death missions, he would frequently go home. He would usually also transmit messages through the communication wristband, *'And as I expected, mother and brother are stuck at the Silver Moon mage level. As for Uncle Tong,*

*after drinking down the spirit liquid from the Stone of Oceanic World six years ago, he had, at the very least, stepped into the Meteor rank. It's just that Uncle Zong has cultivated at a speed that could not reach that of my father's."*

Amongst his kin...

If given a choice in choosing the person who would first become a Legend ranker, Xue Ying would have chosen Uncle Zong!

But in reality... recently, his father, Dong Bo Lie, had become a Legend ranker and the only Legend expert within the Dong Bo Clan.

*'When I saved father, he was merely a heaven level knight'.* Xue Ying sighed.

His own high innate talent in cultivation could be said to be inherited from the positive traits of both his parents. Thus, from this point of argument, his own father would certainly have a high innate talent as well.

Contemplating it thoroughly...

His father had no contact with any Qi cultivation methods when he was young. It was only after he grew up and joined the army that he had any contact with Qi. Thereafter, his father learned a lower grade Qi cultivation method that was worse than Xue Ying's in the past! Starting cultivation at such an old age with such a poor Qi cultivation method, he would, as a result, get stuck at the bottleneck of a Heaven level knight! And Uncle Zong was someone from the royalty of the Snake Clan with good cultivation methods. He started from youth and had only been a heaven level knight that year – the same as his father. It was only due to the unique traits of a Six-Armed Devil Serpent that made him stronger than his father by a whole level.

From this perspective, his own father should have an extremely high innate talent.

After that, his father was captured for 20 years – a 20 year break in his cultivation. After Xue Ying saved his parents, he provided large amounts of spiritual liquid from the Stone of Oceanic World. He provided other top graded cultivation resources as well – like the Qi cultivation methods – from the mortal world. To a Transcendent, providing such excellent conditions for cultivation was something done easily. Thus, it should be natural for his father to suddenly

breakthrough fiercely.

*‘Father, mother, Uncle Zong and Uncle Tong. Amongst the four of them, I reckon that it should be my father who has the greatest innate talent. It’s just that he had no chance to cultivate.’* Xue Ying laughed before standing up suddenly.

Stretching his hand, the Black Dragon Spear appeared within it.

*Hong!*

His spear techniques were instantly displayed.

*Hong long long~* One could see that Xue Ying’s spear techniques – regardless of whether it was a furious sweep or a direct stab – the sound produced from the spear was loud, like a mighty thunderclap suppressing all in its path! On the spear, there were even water and fire revolving around it, with some vague sense of wind streams intertwined with the revolving water and fire. All these brought a great increase in the power of that spear.

*‘This is the spear technique that I wanted.’*

*‘This spear technique is even more formidable than just having a spear technique solely formed with the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire.’* Xue Ying was full of joy.

Last year, after he fused the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire perfectly, the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire had become a single entity. That time, his killing move – ‘Water and Fire Twin Dragon Attack’ – it basically utilised the Profound Mystery of Water, before converting it perfectly into that of Fire. In actual fact, it was just a conjugation transformation! It was just the first step towards fusion. But last year... he successfully and perfectly fused both Profound Mysteries together as one!

With the rotational power of water, it would increase the explosive ferocity of the flames. And if the explosiveness of the flame became more fierce, the water rotational power would be even stronger. These two Profound Mysteries would complement each other, creating a qualitative change. Any hit or hack would produce an immense power.

But after the perfect fusion of Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire, Xue Ying

gradually realised a weakness within.

*'It is too dull.'*

*'Water and fire – these two powers are too dull. There existed a lack of some sort of flexibility, adaptability, and layering. And the change during every interval between his spear techniques was too rigid!'* Xue Ying felt that there was a problem with his spear techniques. For instance, the move 'Twin Dragon Attack' – after it was displayed, it would be absolutely powerful and fierce! After that, he would borrow the Profound Mystery of Water to instantly translate into the next procession of moves. Although this seemed to be coherent, Xue Ying still had the feeling that... it was way too rigid!

Half a year ago, Xue Ying comprehended the first level for Profound Mystery of Wind!

Profound Mystery of Wind contained the flexibility and adaptability he wanted! Thus, if he could perfectly fuse the Profound Mystery of Wind into his 'Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire', the power of his spear techniques would increase by a huge margin!

*'Right now, my current spear techniques can finally be called as truly unpredictable and powerful!'* Xue Ying was so proud of and happy for himself.

*Hong.*

The spear was stabbed out majestically and ferociously, *hong hong hong*, three spears were stabbed out consecutively, with the next spear being stronger than the previous one! And why was that so? This was because the power from his first spear would be stacked led by Xue Ying to be used on his second spear, and then the third spear. As such, the next move would be stronger than the previous one. Of course, he could only consecutively release up to three spears today.

*"Hong long long~~~"* Xue Ying's spear was extremely unpredictable – hack, sweep, whip, burst, stab... all the various moves had an extremely fast transformation with a great power inherent within. That was because the power of the moves could be used to stack onto the second move.

*'My original spear technique is too crude. It's not flexible and natural enough*

*when I use my strength.'* Xue Ying leaked out a smile, *'Right now, it's stronger by much.'*

Wind aided fire in making it fiercer.

Wind aided water in making it more tempestuous.

And both water and fire would make the wind even stronger.

These three different elements could complement each other, stacking on top of each other to make the final power output unimaginable.

And recently, Xue Ying had successfully assimilated the Profound Mystery of Wind into his spear techniques, letting him feel that it had a qualitative change compared to a year ago! Even though master Gong Yu asked him not to be distracted, Xue Ying still felt that... only through this could his spear techniques be even more perfect. After all, the ambition he was chasing since youth was to perfect his spear techniques.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying, come to the bamboo house mountain immediately. Faction Head Si Kong will be coming in a moment." The communication wristband immediately transmitted the news from Gong Yu.

"Faction Head?" Xue Ying did not neglect the instructions. At the same time, he felt joy, "When the time comes, I can ask the Faction Head for some pointers as to how to improve my spear techniques further."

The Faction Head came once every year and a half. Thus, this chance was something not to be missed.

*Sou!*

Xue Ying flew towards the bamboo house mountain, turning into a streamer. At the same time, the other eight Transcendents also received the news from Gong Yu, with some being at the Xia Capital. They all came rushing back.

.....

A short moment later.

At the halfway mark of the bamboo house mountain, on a large empty piece of land, Xue Ying and the other eight Transcendents descended downwards as streamers. Pu Yang Bo was the last to arrive.

“*Hu*, that totally frightened me. I was having some fun with a beauty previously, but now I had no choice but to push her aside and rush over.” Pu Yang Bo had a frightened look for a moment, “It’s fortunate that I did not come late.”

Yu Feng followed up, “What beauty? You actually did not tell me about it.”

“A female Transcendent Knight. She was so spicy that I could not even win over her.” Pu Yang Bo laughed, “I can only depend on my teleportation to evade and dodge. But I’m sure she has an interest in me.”

“Must you pick a female Transcendent as your wife?” Xue Ying joked, “And how many have you picked already?”

Amongst their group of Transcendents, it was only Pu Yang Bo who was constantly shouting out that he wanted to find a wife. Furthermore, he was only interested in finding beautiful female Transcendents. Though it was a pity that all his attempts ended in failure!

“Little brother Dong Bo, can you not pour salt on my wounds?” Pu Yang Bo stared back.

He was naturally a clown. In terms of combat power, he was the weakest amongst the nine.

“Faction Head Si Kong is here.”

Xue Ying and the other eight Transcendents all quietened down. Looking up ahead, they saw two figures coming side by side. It was precisely Faction Head Si Kong and Gong Yu.

---

## Book 6: Chapter 4 – Pointers

---

*Hong, hong.*

The two figures descended from the skies, touching the ground extremely easily and softly. Only that powerful aura emitted by the Demigods made Xue Ying and the other eight Transcendents feel suppressed. Gong Yu's aura was still fine as his aura was more restrained. However, Faction Head Si Kong was just like a great sun – so bright that made the others unable to look him in the eyes. He was just like a Deity, overbearing and transcendental.

But of course, he was a frightening existence who condensed the True Deity Heart!

Once the Deity Heart was formed, it meant a half-step into the levels of Deity. In the entire world under the heavens, including Transcendent natives and those from the Beast Clan, the total number of people who condensed the True Deity Heart was only four! Si Kong Yang was one of them!

"I have not seen you all in a year. Today, I've come to see the cultivation results." Si Kong Yang coldly swept with his eyes at the nine Sky realm Transcendents, "It's still the old rules. One by one. Pu Yang Bo, step forward."

"Yes," Pu Yang Bo respectfully answered.

Si Kong Yang was extremely busy, so his visits were very rare.

After coming, he would give pointers based on individual combat power according to their rankings and starting from the last. Pu Yang Bo was constantly at the last position, and Si Kong Yang was obviously not pleased with him.

"Your understanding is quite good. It is just that you are too lazy and not diligent enough, frequently going to the restaurants and tavern to spend your time." Si Kong Yang coldly said, "I hope you will pleasantly surprise me this time."

Pu Yang Bo felt the unseen pressure.

He honestly had the talents, just that he was this undisciplined since his youth.

Spending his time drinking and having fun would actually improve his speed of cultivation. Should he bury himself in cultivation, he would certainly go crazy! Constantly being ranked last did make him feel unwilling and shameful, after all, he was also an absolute talent in the past, and had ranked in the top ten of the Dragon Mountain Book. He had become so used to it over time! So what if he was last, he would just enjoy himself. In the worst case, he would just be kicked out of the list of ‘Substitute Elders’.

In reality, if there were not some special circumstances, he would not be kicked out of the list. He would only be ranked last and obtain the least amount of resources.

“Yes.” Pu Yang Bo took a deep breath.

“Master Saber,” Si Kong Yang suddenly said, his voice resounding in the heaven and earth.

*Xiu-*

Suddenly, a golden ray of light shot out from the mountain behind the bamboo house mountain. He appeared in mid-air by the mountainside. It was a golden-haired male with two sabers on his back. His forehead alongside his exposed left was filled with some mysterious lines.

“Faction Head,” The golden-haired male greeted respectfully.

“Exchange some moves with Pu Yang Bo,” Si Kong Yang ordered.

Other than the people from the Beast Clan, there was rarely anyone from the Xia Clan who had golden hair! This golden-haired male was actually not a true human, and was instead, a Flesh Warrior formed after the ancestors from Xia Clan comprehended some parts of the ‘Deity World Warrior’! The Flesh Warrior was formed by flesh and blood embryo. After being brought up, a soul would naturally be birthed within it! Just that each had a body that was a Transcendent body by birth. As long as they got used to it, they would reach their most perfect form – being able to exert a Sky realm or Saint realm combat power.

As for the soul? Their soul was broken. Thus, it was really hard for them to walk far in the road of cultivation. But because of the fact that they had an eternal life, usually they would reach Perfect as One in terms of their techniques, and



become a Grandmaster in terms of Realms! Few of them would reach the level of Myriad Existences, and as for 'True Meaning'... despite their eternal life, the number of Flesh Warriors comprehending it in the entire history of Xia Clan could be counted on the fingers of one hand.

This group of Substitute Elder Transcendents, inclusive of Xue Ying, had a group of 13 Flesh Warriors training alongside them. They were all peak stage Saint realm and had achieved the level of comprehension in Realms of Myriad Existences; they could be considered as the strongest Flesh Warriors of the Xia Clan. All of them used different kinds of weapons, and according to the weapons they use, Xue Ying and the rest would call these Flesh Warriors as 'Master Saber', 'Master Sword', 'Master Spear', 'Master Assassin', and so forth.

"Yes, Faction Head," The golden-haired male replied, before taking out the two sabers from his back sheath with a '*Qiang Qiang*'.

Each of his hands held onto a saber as he stood in mid-air, looking at the distant Pu Yang Bo. Smiling, he said, "Come, brat."

"Master Saber, be careful." Pu Yang Bo took a step.

*Shua.*

His figure disappeared before appearing behind the golden-haired male. Holding a saber with his right hand, he hacked at that golden-haired male, forming a ray of saber just like a fleeting ghost from the back.

"*Dang.*" The golden-haired male casually use one of the sabers in his hand to block the attack from the back – blocking this sinister saber from Pu Yang Bo. This parry of his rebounded against Pu Yang Bo as he flew backwards. Following that, he disappeared from the sky once again.

*Shua shua shua!!!*

Pu Yang Bo's figure keep disappearing and appearing from place to place, attacking again and again.

"Center!" Pu Yang Bo's eyes were filled with delight. Stabbing out his saber, the sharp part of the saber arced through the skies, generating a ripple in space. That golden-haired male wanted to defend against the attack, before his expression changed! That was because Pu Yang Bo's saber disappeared in the

ripple of space, like how a saber might enter into water.

The golden-haired male retreated fiercely!

Following the ripples of space, the saber appeared at the forehead of that golden-haired male.

“*Dang.*” The golden-haired male had prepared beforehand, blocking this saber attack by Pu Yang Bo.

“Mn.” The distant Si Kong Yang nodded his head slightly.

Pu Yang Bo’s figure kept teleporting here and there. His saber could at the same time, penetrating through the space.

Xue Ying was shocked as he watched the battle.

The Profound Mystery of Space was indeed terrifying. If Pu Yang Bo wanted to escape, Xue Ying would never be able to catch up to him! And that ray of saber imbued with the Profound Mystery of Space had an immense power. When people like Xiang Pang Yun matched up against Pu Yang Bo... even if it was a hundred or a thousand, they would be cut open easily, like beancurd, within the time of a breath! And this was merely the first step towards grasping hold of the Profound Mystery of Space.

No wonder it was given a grade three despite being a side branch of the True Meaning of Space.

*Sou.*

Pu Yang Bo disappeared before returning to the side of Xue Ying and the others.

“Your saber techniques have improved,” Si Kong Yang said indifferently, “I had thought that you only knew how to teleport! At least, the Profound Mystery of Space has been used in your saber techniques.”

Pu Yang Bo was ashamed.

In the past, he would only know how to evade and teleport to escape. He should be one of the most formidable amongst the nine of them, though he was now the weakest during battle. Recently, ever since he comprehended the second level of Realms of Myriad Existences, he had gradually started applying

the Profound Mystery of Space into his saber techniques.

“You should try your best in applying the Profound Mystery of Space into your saber techniques. After all, you have comprehended the second level in Realms of Myriad Existences. Quickly complete the Underground Magma River mission. Dong Bo Xue Ying is just 39, and he has completed it. That way, you will no longer feel any shame,” Si Kong Yang said.

“Yes,” Pu Yang Bo obediently answered.

“Next, Yu Feng,” Si Kong Yang ordered.

Another Flesh Warrior was called over. Yu Feng was ranked eighth, though he held a much greater threat than Pu Yang Bo.

His Profound Mystery of Space, to be exact, the ‘Profound Mystery of Shadow Space’, allowed his entire self to assimilate into shadows... Whenever he fought with the others, he would absolutely disappear from sight. His weapons would suddenly and unexpectedly appear in attacks on his enemies. If the attacks did not succeed, the weapon would instantly retreat back into the shadow space. After that, there would be more unpredictable attacks.

To tell the truth...

Even though his combat power was not that impressive, Xue Ying and the others would not want to fight against Yu Feng! That was because when he was hiding in the shadow space, every time he stabbed out with his sabre, it would be a very sinister move. It was fortunate that his current combat power was still weak. Thus the time he could remain within the shadow space was not that long.

.....

Ranked number seven was Zhang Peng. Even though he comprehended the Profound Mystery of Space as well, the choice he made was that of a head-on fight.

The weapons he used were axes – with the two axes he held moving just like the cicada’s wings. Whenever he hacked out with his weapons, they moved extremely fast. Furthermore, each axe would bring with it the sharpness formed by spatial fluctuations! This sharpness was the extremely terrifying – ‘Space Edge’. If one were to say Qiu Chi Bai’s ‘True Meaning of Void Cleavage’ was fused

from the Profound Mystery of Wind and of Space, then the latter would be formed purely from the aggressiveness of Void Cleavage.

That Zhang Peng's 'Space Edge' was made purely by spatial fluctuations! Thus, its power was extremely great.

.....

One by one, they showed their moves. Wu Cang's Profound Mystery of Death made others shudder. The moment he began fighting, his entire person would be bathed in a death Qi. This sort of death Qi... was something Xue Ying and the rest did not dare touch. The moment your finger touched this Qi, it would rapidly rot, and it must be amputated immediately. Otherwise, when the death Qi would spread through your body, you would die.

All of these Profound Mysteries that had the hopes of becoming a 'Third Grade True Meaning' were indeed extremely terrifying even today.

Of course, the most frightening one was still Du Rou Rou's Profound Mystery of Time... though she was ranked one today and would be the last to battle.

Right now, it was only the fourth-place ranked Situ Hong's turn to battle. Situ Hong's battle was extremely overbearing and aggressive. Every single attack he had was akin to destroying space itself.

"Situ Hong," Si Kong Yang coldly said, "You are the oldest, and yet, you've yet to reach the third level in Realm of Myriad Existences. I am extremely disappointed. You've been stuck at this bottleneck for close to a hundred years already right?"

"I'll definitely try my best," Situ Hong answered.

"Mn."

Si Kong Yang did not say much. Those whom he liked better, he would give more tips to.. As for some other people, he would be too lazy to even say anything. Initially, he held great hopes for Situ Hong. After all, amongst the four people who controlled the Profound Mystery of Space, Situ Hong had the highest talent. It was only that Situ Hong had been stuck at this bottleneck for far too long. If he were to be stuck for a long period of time, Si Kong Yang would certainly move downwards in position. Even though Zhang Peng, someone with

similar age as Situ Hong, had a much poorer talent and was more dull, today, Zhang Peng was reaching the peak of the second level in Realms of Myriad Existences.

*'I'll move Zhang Peng, this brat's position later,'* Si Kong Yang thought.

"Next..." Si Kong Yang's eyes landed on Xue Ying, his expression showed some delight, "Dong Bo Xue Ying!"

He favored Xue Ying.

First, Xue Ying's improvement was extremely fast. Within a hundred years period, he would have the hope of comprehending the True Meaning of Water and Fire! Second, he was a Transcendent belonging to the Water Daoist Faction. That time, it was due to Chao Qing's push, and his help, that Xue Ying finally was enlisted as a Substitute Elder.

---

## Book 6: Chapter 5 – Fury

---

In mid-air...

A black-robed youthful looking man confronted another red-haired brawny man who had some flames revolving around him.

“Master Hammer,” Xue Ying greeted respectfully.

“Brat, be careful.” The red-haired brawny man carried a huge hammer in both his hands.

Beside them, at the halfway mark of up the bamboo house mountain, Si Kong Yang, Gong Yu and the other Transcendents were staring at them. Within their eyes, Xue Ying’s rate of improvement could be considered as extreme. Having been in the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World for just ten years, his combat power had reached the middle rank amongst them. And it was estimated that not long later, his Profound Mystery of Water and Fire would reach the third level. By then, his combat power would certainly be ranked at the top.

Comprehending the True Meaning of Water and Fire would occur soon.

Even though the ‘True Meaning of Water and Fire’ was just a grade four True Meaning, and was of a lower grade than the other’s targeted third grade and second grade True Meaning, the chances of others comprehending the True Meaning was extremely low! At the most, only two or three would barely make it, but for Xue Ying, he would have close to hundred percent chance of comprehending it.

Having ten birds in the forest would not compare to having a bird present in one’s hand. These eight Transcendents were certainly envious of Xue Ying.

Cultivating for only a hundred years or so, and he could control the True Meaning of Water and Fire.

He would most likely become a Demigod within a thousand years!

Likewise, the road he would travel as a Demigod had limitless opportunities! Even though the grade four True Meaning was weaker, comparing it with the

other Demigods, only the Beast Clan's Great Elder Ao Lan had a stronger grade three True Meaning! If he could become a Demigod using the grade four True Meaning, he would certainly have the hopes of becoming a ranker in the Demigod rankings. Such a path on the Demigod road was extremely bright already.

Regarding disciple sister Zhuo Yi, she had always kept her distance from all other males. Due to her Extreme Yin Body, many men chased after her. Even those located in the Scarlet Cloud Mountain, Situ Hong, Zhang Peng also chased after her, yet she did not care about them.

She, however, kept a closer relationship with Xue Ying! Even though it was not something exaggerated like 'chasing after Xue Ying', this attitude of closeness was something the other male disciples had never encountered before. This made Situ Hong and the others feel jealous... but even if they were jealous, they could only bear with it! That was because they did not wish to make an enemy with someone who would certainly become a Transcendent with great combat power.

"Disciple brother Wen, Disciple brother Dong Bo's spear techniques seems to have made a marked improvement." Zhuo Yi quietly exchanged messages with Wen Yong An beside her.

"Indeed, it seems difference as compared to the previous time." Wen Yong An nodded slightly. His speciality was the Profound Mystery of Life, thus his attitude in treating others was extremely polite.

.....

Xue Ying's spear danced as fast as a lightning bolt, stabbing out consecutively.

Just like a Flood Dragon flying out, it directly bombarded that red-haired brawny man! The red-haired brawny man held onto his big hammer, parrying against each of the consecutive attacks.

"So unpredictable and fierce." The red-haired brawny man was fully taxed dealing with those attacks. That was because as the spear rotated and plowed its way over, the next spear would be heavier than the first! Furthermore, every spear attack would be fleeting and erratic, just like how the wind moved. This kind of fleeting feeling made that red-haired brawny man feel great pressure.

After all, Xue Ying's spear techniques were originally unpredictable and fierce. Right now, they became even more difficult to deal with.

*"Hong."*

The Qi secret technique revolving within Xue Ying's body was the 'Seven Stars Fire Calamity'. As the Qi revolved and integrated with his physical strength, his moves became fiercer and fiercer.

Within the past ten years, he had always depended on the Origin Stones in cultivating. Today, Xue Ying's Qi had reached the peak stage of the Sky realm! His body had long ago reached the peak stage of Sky realm... and today, it would be hard for his physique or Qi to breakthrough within a short period of time. Other than the comprehension of the Realms, for the Qi to breakthrough, he must also accumulating enough Transcendent Qi. For the body to reach the early stage of Saint realm, it would require a frightening 25,000 kilogrammes of Origin Stones! Xue Ying had only won over 5000 contribution points previously, and that amount was extremely lacking.

*"Hu hu hu!!!"*

Xue Ying's spear floated upwards and downwards as he wantonly and madly attacked.

Just like how a gale sweeps, or the tempestuous waves wash against the shoreline, one move was followed up by the next, and the power of one move would also be stacked onto the next, allowing Xue Ying's moves to be extremely coherent and of a great power. Unpredictability, fierceness and fleeting were all inherent within each strike.

"Little brat, it seems that you are much stronger as compared to the previous time." The red-haired brawny man awkwardly fought back. He could only depend on his much greater power, faster speed, and the huge surface area of the big hammer, that was akin to having two shields, in defending, before barely holding his ground. If he were to be using smaller weapons like that of the swords or sabers, he would certainly have been stabbed by Xue Ying's spear.

"I'm still lacking by much as compared to you, Master Hammer." Xue Ying fought heartily. After all, he had just made a breakthrough in his spear techniques.



“Formidable, formidable.”

Those who were viewing the battle – Wen Yong An, Du Rou Rou, Situ Hong, Zhang Peng, Yu Feng, Wu Cang and the others were all amazed.

“His spear techniques became even more formidable.”

“It’s much stronger as compared to the previous time! I’m afraid that only disciple sister Du amongst us can win him. The others would not have much certainty.”

“Right, his close combat power became even more frightening.”

All of them had the knowledge of concluding that the current Xue Ying’s combat power had increased greatly, even reaching that of Du Rou Rou with her second level in Profound Mystery of Time. Others had depended on their own tactics to prevent themselves from being defeated, but in a true close combat battle, even Situ Hong who was strong in this department, would only barely match up with him! One must know that Situ Hong was the oldest one amongst them and had cultivated for a long period of time.

Accompanied by a cross-attack, Xue Ying instantly retreated.

“Master Hammer is formidable. It seems that I’ll have to cultivate even longer if I want to win.” Xue Ying smiled as he stood in the air.

The red-haired brawny man nodded, “You are formidable. I’m afraid that after a period of time, I’ll not be able to defend against your attacks.”

“Come back.” A voice that had some anger in it sounded.

Xue Ying turned around. He saw that the distant yellow-robed old man Master Gong Yu had an unpleasant expression. As for the Faction Head Si Kong Yang beside him, he had an expressionless face.

Something was awry!

The two Demigod masters seemed unhappy?

Xue Ying felt a knot in his heart as he immediately flew over as a streamer towards the halfway mark of the mountain.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying!” The yellow-robed old man Gong Yu was so angry that his

entire face swelled red. Staring at Xue Ying, he shouted, “What made you so bold and presumptuous?”

“I, I...” Xue Ying was stunned.

The other Transcendents were similarly stunned.

Faction Head Si Kong Yang looked from the side with his usual cold expression.

“I’ve told you before!” The yellow-robed old man Gong Yu shouted, “You should solely focus on the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire and put aside the Profound Mystery of Wind. Did I not tell you that?”

“You did,” Xue Ying answered.

Before now, Master Gong Yu persuaded him with good words that the worst thing to happen during the road of cultivation was to be distracted. After all, the mental strengths of Transcendents were limited, and that their lifespans were limited. Right now, Xue Ying was very young, thus seeing that he got distracted into cultivating the Profound Mystery of Wind, Master Gong Yu decided to simply reprimand him. After all, delaying a bit of time... was not a big deal for Xue Ying.

After all, he still had a long period of time to cultivate.

“But you, you dare to be so presumptuous, so bold!” Master Gong Yu was so angry that he almost turned into a mad man. He roared, “You, you actually fused the Profound Mystery of Wind into the Profound Mystery of Water and Fire? Who suggested you do such a thing recklessly?”

His roar caused the surrounding space to solidify and press down on Xue Ying.

Xue Ying could feel his fleshy body being pressed down by the unseen pressure, resulting in a vibration of his viscera. He felt an iron-like, metallic taste in his throat – fresh blood had reached his mouth.

This sort of injury was not something Xue Ying minded.

But he had some fear.

Because all these years... Master Gong Yu had been a good person. His attitude towards them was quite good, and never had he raged like that before!

Even if it was the lazy Pu Yang Bo, Master Gong Yu would only just say some words.

---

## Book 6: Chapter 6 – Bitterness and Fury

---

“What!” Du Rou Rou, Wen Yong An, Zhuo Yi, Yu Feng and the other Transcendents were startled as they stared at Xue Ying, “He actually dared to act so recklessly!”

They had after all, cultivated in the areas of Profound Mysteries of Space, Life and others. Thus, they were not specialised towards the Profound Mysteries of Water, Fire and Wind! As a result, Xue Ying’s fierce and unpredictable spear techniques were something they did not understand... Xue Ying had already fused the Profound Mystery of Wind into the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire, with the three completely fused as one, completing each other like a single entity!

“Dong Bo Xue Ying, tell me.” Faction Head Si Kong Yang opened his mouth, though his expression was cold and his voice was likewise, cold, “Why do you dare do such a thing? Unless you don’t know about the basic knowledge of cultivation?”

“I know.” Xue Ying nodded.

“The road of cultivation is paved with many difficulties, with most Transcendents unable to step past the Sky realm. Those who can become a Saint were few and far between! As for those who can become a Demigod, they were rarely seen.” Si Kong Yang looked at Xue Ying, before continuing coldly, “Your innate talent is extremely high, and you had fused the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire at such a young age. At the same time, you have easily reached the second level in the Profound Mystery of Water and Fire! If this continues, within a hundred years, you will have hope of grasping the True Meaning of Water and Fire. And if you were to be slower, you will surely succeed within the next two hundred years. Saint realm is something already in the bag.”

“Transcendent Saint expert has a lifespan of 1500 years and you can certainly control the True Meaning of Water and Fire within 200 years! Concentrating further in your cultivation, and allowing the True Meaning of Water and Fire to grow deeper, you will have hopes of becoming a Demigod within 1000 years.”

“Your future is so bright and far, and our Xia Clan will have a hope of getting another Demigod!”

“We hold such great expectations for you!” Faction Head Si Kong Yang’s eyes were swimming with coldness, “But you, what exactly did you do? You are destroying your own future!”

“Unless, do you not know this? The moment you take the wrong step in the road of cultivation, the moment you go down another path, it’ll be very hard to return.” Si Kong Yang growled. He was feeling furious, unbelieving and sad at the same time.

The other Transcendents all gazed on this scene from the side.

They, too, felt that Xue Ying was crazy.

“As long as you cultivate onwards, the Profound Mystery of Water and Fire will lead to the ‘True Meaning of Water and Fire’,” Si Kong Yang shouted, “But right now, you’ve fused the Profound Mystery of Wind into it, becoming what? Water, Fire and Wind? What kind of plaything is this? Do you have confidence that this road will not lead to a dead-end? Even though you are still young, should you realise that you’ve veered off the wrong path in the future, do you think you can still turn back and comprehend the True Meaning of Water and Fire?”

A sheet of blank white paper was excellent for drawing.

As for a piece of paper that was filled with colours, wanting to alter it was really tough.

This was the reason—

Profound Mystery of Water and Fire was originally something Xue Ying cultivated, and that was good.

But right now, he added the Profound Mystery of Wind into it! And it had been fused entirely into a single entity.

Even if Xue Ying were to give up the ‘Profound Mystery of Wind’ in the future, he would never forget this moment! Ever since his understanding of the world reach a new stage, it would be hard to return back to his original position. Towards the understanding of the world, wanting to forget was something

easier said than done!

“I know what you are talking about.” Xue Ying started, “It’s just that during my cultivation, I find that the Profound Mystery of Water and Fire isn’t that perfect!”

“Then you decided to turn towards cultivating the Profound Mystery of Wind? And even fuse it into the other mysteries?” Si Kong Yang rebuked, “What the hell do you think is going on?”

He really did not understand.

Originally, Xue Ying was a genius, and yet, why would he commit such a grave mistake?

Basic cultivation knowledge should be something all Transcendents know as the Infernal Palace would send a book to them.

“Unless you don’t understand that the road of cultivation is already very difficult or that nature itself is something so deep that we cannot comprehend it fully! Choosing a single direction, and following it down to the end will lead to greater chances of success!” Si Kong Yang could not understand his logic, “And you? Originally, your path of Profound Mystery of Water and Fire is an excellent path, yet why would you want pick the Profound Mystery of Wind, and even fuse it into your techniques? Water, Fire and Wind? In the entire history of the Xia Clan, nobody who cultivated these three Profound Mysteries has ever become someone great!”

History is like a mirror.

Following what one was good at and choosing the strongest expert in the Xia Clan’s history who had already succeeded in comprehending a True Meaning, step by step, this path taken by others would increase the chances of success.

And if a Transcendent were to just bury his head into cultivating in everything, it would be so chaotic. Maybe, there would be some heaven-shaking Transcendent genius emerging from that. But out of a thousand Transcendents... nine-hundred-ninety-nine of them would definitely face failure in the end.

“You tell me, what is your direction when you are cultivating?” Si Kong Yang stared at Xue Ying. “Our Xia Clan’s history has had so many ancestors, and that

they have comprehended so many True Meanings, which one of them did you choose as your target?”

“The Purgatory Knight Jie Li!” Xue Ying suddenly answered, “Heavenly Wind Emperor Yuan Shan! Purple Emperor Yao Qing Tian!”

He rapidly spouted three people.

These were all amazing characters spoken in history.

Two of them became Deities while one of them was the strongest Demigod in the entire history of Xia Clan.

“What nonsense are you spouting!” Si Kong Yang angrily shouted, “Purgatory Knight Jie Li controlled the True Meaning of Purgatory, it was something related to the True Meaning of Destruction Flame! As for the Heavenly Wind Emperor Yuan Shan, he initially comprehended the True Meaning of Heavenly Wind, a True Meaning formed by the integration of wind and space. The Purple Thunder Emperor had comprehended the True Meaning of Purple Thunder in the past, something formed by the fusion of True Meaning of Thunder and Life. These three were grade three True Meanings, and all of them were different from yours!”

Destruction Flame, Wind and Space, Thunder and Life...

Xue Ying’s was Water, Fire and Wind!

They were completely different.

“Ancestor Purgatory Knight Ji Li,” Xue Ying replied. “He vowed to burn and destroy everything evil. He was chasing after the extremity of destruction... and finally comprehended the Destruction Flame. In other words, Ji Li finally ended up comprehending what is now known as the True Meaning of Purgatory. “Heavenly Wind Emperor walked on the path of carefreeness. He did not like battling and loved to travel to the four corners of the world. His wind feels carefree, and space is everywhere... thus, he ended up comprehending the True Meaning of Heavenly Wind. Purple Thunder Emperor saved the injured and was originally a doctor. After waking the Thunder primordial bloodline, he would still continue to use his thunder to save others... thus ultimately comprehending the secretive True Meaning of Purple Thunder.”

Si Kong Yang stared at him. All of these were things he knew.

The books depicting those existences in Xia Clan's history who became Deities would usually be read by most Transcendents. Jie Li was the person who won the most matches in the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, and was also the supposed strongest Demigods. Thus, many people would read the books depicting his existence as well.

"What do you want to say?" Si Kong Yang continued staring.

"They did not deliberately chase after any sort of True Meaning!" Xue Ying gently replied, "Ancestor Ji Li originally did not know of the True Meaning of Destruction Flames! The Heavenly Wind Emperor is too, just living carefreely and that he did not deliberately cultivate. As for the Purple Thunder Emperor, he just wanted to save lives. Before him, there had been no one who could fuse thunder, that had much destruction inherent in it, with life. The True Meaning of Purple Thunder is something he crafted himself."

"These three ancestors had never deliberately chase after some sort of True Meaning."

"And I, I am the same!"

Xue Ying's eyes were filled with light, "Ever since my youth, I have been chasing after the perfection of my spear techniques! When I feel that my spear techniques are too hard and easy to break, I've comprehended the Profound Mystery of Water, fusing both water and fire together! And now that I feel that my spear techniques lack flexibility, adaptability and layering, I decided to comprehend the Profound Mystery of Wind and integrate it into my techniques."

"I've never ever deliberately chase after the True Meaning of Water and Fire! What I am chasing after... it's the perfection of my spear techniques!"

"As for a True Meaning?"

"Whatever True Meaning I'll comprehend will be my True Meaning!"

"The road of Transcendent is a very difficult road to walk on. But because of my fanatical love for spear techniques, I'll walk on fearlessly!" Xue Ying said, "If I set down the True Meaning of Water and Fire as my goal, what reason will it be



for? To become stronger and more powerful? To cultivate and just cultivate? I find this kind of target is just a form of torture for me!”

Xue Ying finished saying what was in his mind.

“Foolish!”

“Insolent!”

“Arrogant!”

Si Kong Yang was truly furious. Under his fury, the pressure he released enveloped everyone, “You think you are so amazing? Just merely chasing after your dream and casually cultivating? Yes, the Heavenly Wind Emperor lived carefreely, and become a Deity after casually cultivating. The Purple Thunder Emperor became a Deity after saving others! But how many of such people are there? You only see those who succeeded, and not the many who failed! But for the majority of experts who became a Demigod and finally, a Deity all had a direction which they took, letting them achieve their goals with less effort!”

“Right now, seeing that you’ve fused the Profound Mystery of Wind into the Profound Mystery of Water and Fire, you’ve already destroyed your own path!” Si Kong Yang bitterly said.

Amongst the nine of them...

He favoured Xue Ying seeing that he had a great chance of becoming a Demigod! A Demigod with a grade four True Meaning was still very formidable. In the future, he honestly felt that Xue Ying had a hope of succeeding his own position in becoming the next Water Daoist Faction Head.

But right now, that smooth road towards the True Meaning of Water and Fire had been destroyed by Xue Ying himself.

So how could he not feel the bitterness and the anger?

He was even more angry than Gong Yu!

“Brother Chao Qing did his best in pushing the elders so that you could enter the list of Substitute Elders, allowing you to enter this Scarlet Cloud Mountain World!” Si Kong Yang was bitter and furious, “And yet, you’ve let down brother Chao Qing’s hope for you! If we knew of this beforehand, in how foolish and

arrogant you are, we would have not let you enter the Scarlet Cloud Mountain!”

---

## Book 6: Chapter 7 – Take Care of Yourself

---

Everyone beside the Demigods and Xue Ying were silent. Who would have thought that such an existence standing at the peak of the world, the extreme overlord Faction Head Si Kong Yang, would be so furious! To them, even if it was a talent who destroyed their future, it was just a small matter to the entire, Xia Clan. That was because there would be even more geniuses to choose from! So there was no reason for Faction Head Si Kong Yang to lose himself!

“From today onwards, I’ll come to the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World frequently.” Si Kong Yang angrily shouted, “I’ll help you set down your new cultivation path! Following this path that I set for you, following the path taken by others, do you think you can do it?”

“Mn?” Gong Yu looked at Si Kong Yang in shock.

Du Rou Rou, Wen Yong An, Situ Hong, Zhuo Yi and the rest were similarly stunned.

This Xue Ying had already destroyed his own path of True Meaning of Water and Fire, yet Faction Head Si Kong Yang did not want to give him up?

Xue Ying felt warmth in his heart.

“Faction Head,” Xue Ying respectfully said, “I can’t do it!”

“You, you...” Si Kong Yang was angry to the brim right that moment and was absolutely disappointed!

Xue Ying’s path towards his own destruction had become a fact, yet Si Kong Yang had always favoured Xue Ying during this past ten years. He also felt that even though Xue Ying veered off the road, he was just 39 years this year! His combat power was already second to that of Dou Rou Rou who comprehended the Profound Mystery of Time. How talented and intelligent was he?

Even if he were to start all over again and choose a new path, step by step, he felt that Xue Ying would similarly have hope of rising up again!

But...

Xue Ying actually rejected it!

“You can’t do that?” Si Kong Yang stared at Xue Ying.

“It’s because of my fanatical love for spear techniques that I am so highly motivated in this path of the Transcendent! If I were to set down my path of cultivation, and that I would have to comprehend along this path, under this kind of manacle, I’ll not be able to withstand cultivating for thousands of years. And I’m afraid that my speed in cultivation would greatly decrease.” Xue Ying shook his head.

“Childish!”

“Nonsense!”

“What do you treat cultivation as? Without having a direction, how can you wish to just cultivate randomly according to your wishes. Do you think that with how casual you are, you can become a Demigod?” Si Kong Yang shook his head. How high was his status? Many other Transcendents had no one to lead them, and as they casually cultivated, nearly all of them would deviate from the correct path! And as for some Transcendents, after setting down a goal in mind, walking down this path step by step, they would become stronger and stronger, and a few hundred years later, they would have hopes of becoming a Saint!

Amongst the many Saint Transcendents, more than 90 percent had done this.

And for Demigods, more than a half did it this way as well.

Casually cultivating did have hopes for one to become a Demigod, or a Deity... though they were the minority!

.....

Quickly, Wen Yong An, Du Rou Rou’s exchange of moves ended. Faction Head Si Kong Yang gave some pointers to the two of them, though his expression was unpleasant.

“Following the current spar, your rankings will be arranged once again,” Si Kong Yang announced.

Du Rou Rou, Wen Yong An were still the first and second. Third was Wu Cang,

Fourth was Zhuo Yi, Situ Hong, Zhang Peng, Yu Feng, Pu Yong Bo with Xue Ying at the ninth position!

He immediately became the first from the bottom!

“Dong Bo Xue Ying.”

Si Kong Yang turned towards him, “If you were to continue on like this, you are wasting the resources of my Xia Clan! Since you are so inclined towards your own beliefs, then take care of yourself!”

Finishing his words, Si Kong Yang immediately took a step before disappearing from the skies.

Master Gong Yu did not say anything. He only shook his head and sighed before leaving.

On this piece of empty land, only Xue Ying and the others were left.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying.” The oldest Situ Hong shook his head. There were some mockery on his face, “Ten years of time, all those treasures that you’ve eaten have really wasted! I feel my heart ache for my Xia Clan.”

Situ Hong honestly did not like Xue Ying.

That year, his comprehension rate of the Profound Mystery of Space was the fastest, and he had been regarded highly by Faction Head Si Kong Yang. But thereafter, he had been stuck at the Profound Mystery of Space, second level in Realms of Myriad Existences’ bottleneck. That was why he dropped down in rank. As for these ten years... Xue Ying was the brightest star amongst them. That was because his chances of becoming a Demigod was different from the rest. Xue Ying was previously given a hundred percent chance of becoming one!

A Demigod existence? Even though Situ Hong was jealous and unhappy, he would still treat him politely and not anger him.

Actually, what made him the most unhappy was disciple sister Zhuo Yi. Disciple sister Zhuo Yi had the Extreme Yin Body, causing Situ Hong to want to chase after her. However, she actually looked down on him! Yet — disciple sister became closer in terms of attitude toward Xue Ying, and he had become one of the closest persons to her! If Xue Ying truly wanted to chase after her, he was

afraid that disciple sister Zhuo Yi would have jumped into his embrace.

Fortunately, Xue Ying was like a piece of wood, and he had kept his distance with disciple sister Zhuo Yi.

Even still...

Situ Hong was always extremely jealous! He was only forcibly suppressing it in himself.

Right now, Xue Ying was actually destroying his path! Such a bright road was being destroyed, causing Situ Hong to feel extremely excited. The jealousy suppressed in the past started breaking outwards. He did not now care to cover it up, thus the ridicule.

“Disciple brother Situ Hong, you shouldn’t say that. Disciple brother Xue Ying honestly had a good path in the past.” Wen Yong An said, “It’s just that he has veered off to the side path only.”

“Good original path? He did not even have any original path! Did you not hear what he said? He has always been casually cultivating. With such casual attitude... there will certainly be no bright future ahead!” Situ Hong did not hold back his disdain, slating his eyes at Xue Ying, “He is actually my, Situ Hong’s, disciple brother. How shameful.”

“Disciple brother Situ Hong, enough,” Du Rou Rou said.

Only then did he held back. However, the mocking sounds were still present as he was too lazy to even look at Xue Ying directly in the eyes as if he did not consider Xue Ying worthy of direct eye contact.

“Disciple brother Xue Ying, why did you make such a move recklessly, *ai*.” Du Rou Rou was disappointed as well.

“Brother.” Pu Yang Bo hugged Xue Ying, before laughing, “All these years, I’m always the one on the bottom of the rankings. Who would have thought that right now, I’ll be the second from last finally, haha.”

“And I’m the third from the bottom,” Yu Feng muttered.

“And I’m the fourth from the bottom,” Zhang Peng laughed.

Xue Ying looked at them silently.

Only when one was in a dire situation would the true faces of everyone be revealed. Before this, he was regarded as someone who would certainly become a Demigod. Thus, everyone treated him really well.

But now?

Pu Yang Bo, Yu Feng, Zhang Peng's feelings towards him were still genuine. That was something Xue Ying could feel. Du Rou Rou was clearly disappointed in him. Wen Yong An had kept his distance from him. Wu Cang was still by himself, and did not say anything.

Situ Hong's behaviour was the most obvious out of all. That sort of mockery and ridicule could not be covered.

As for the disciple sister Zhuo Yi whom he was closer with, she was currently standing further apart and shaking her head. She was too ashamed to even look at Xue Ying. She had been quite close with him in the past, and that was because Xue Ying seemed destined to become a Demigod. But the moment he became an ordinary Transcendent, she looked down on him! There were too many powerful Transcendents chasing after her.

"I'll go back first." Xue Ying said a few words with Yu Feng and the others. Ten years together made them good friends.

"Want to go for drinking tonight?" Pu Yang Bo asked.

"No thanks."

Xue Ying immediately turned into a streamer and flew away.

"If I were you, I would not even have the face to step into the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World again." Situ Hong deliberately shouted out. His voice brought with it the ripples of space as it transmitted towards Xue Ying.

Flying high up in the skies, Xue Ying turned towards Situ Hong and gave him a cold look, before flying away as he could not care less about him any longer.

.....

Xia Capital, within Xue Ying's mansion.

A black-robed Xue Ying descended from the skies. He flew into the mansion directly. It was rarely for him to not enter through the front doors.

“Master.” The female housekeeper Xu Qin brought a few other maidservants over to greet him respectfully. She was merely a mortal, and Xue Ying was a great and majestic Transcendent existence to her. Thus, she did not dare offend him. They could see that Xue Ying’s current mood was bad.

After all, they did not know that...

Their master Xue Ying had been severely reprimanded by one of the peak Demigod existences, and that his status had dropped tremendously

“I want to be by myself. Don’t come and disturb me.” Xue Ying ordered, before walking towards the back garden’s couch. He casually lay on it, gulping down a mouthful of the spiritual liquid condensed from the Stone of Oceanic World.

That refreshed his mind, letting him feel more awake. He started thinking through everything carefully.

---



# Book 6: Chapter 8 – The Voluminous Amounts of Books

---

“I was so intimidated by the Faction Head just now.” Xue Ying laughed at himself.

He had already known that he would be reprimanded. Regardless, his stand towards his own idea was extremely firm. Just that facing the anger of a Demigod peak existence... was something that made his heart feel fear. It was like an ant standing in front of an enormous dragon. When the dragon became angry, the ant could not help but lower its head fearfully! However, Xue Ying’s heart was firm, and he did not capitulate.

Actually, Si Kong Yang’s words made Xue Ying reflect that maybe the path he took was wrong.

But—

He would not change his thinking just solely because of the few sentences by Si Kong Yang! He had to contemplate about his path thoroughly, before making a decision himself. Under just the forceful intervention of Si Kong Yang, should he lower his head? That was something Xue Ying would never do.

*‘The saying of using the history as a mirror isn’t wrong. I’ll have to read through more of the books depicting the ancestors of our Xia Clan.’* Xue Ying thought to himself. The Xia Clan’s history was long, and every single Transcendent’s biography was quite lengthy. Before this, he had finished looking through the biographies of ancestors who had become Deities as well as some of the more famous Demigods! He had still not read the biographies of at least 99 percent of Demigods. Those were stories he had not read about before, much less to say reading about the lives of the Transcendent at Saint or Sky realms.

“I’ll first finish reading all the books regarding the histories on Demigods!” Xue Ying decided.

.....

Infernal Palace, Summer Pavilion.

A black-robed youthful-looking man entered a quaint pavilion. The pavilion was extremely quiet inside, with many bookshelves placed within it. Each and every book shelf was more than a hundred meters high, and there were many gold-leaf books placed within. These gold-leaf books were the books describing the lives of every single Transcendent in Xia Capital's history!

"So vast." Xue Ying lamented.

During the last 3000 years, the Xia Clan had approximately 20 Demigods!

And how long did the history of the Xia Clan date back to? Each of these thick books would still require the time taken to brew a cup of tea to read through, even if the Transcendent read extremely quickly. That time to read was required for just one book on a Demigod! Even if he were to not sleep, not rest, and not cultivate, reading through it all the time, it would still take a few years to finish all the books on the Demigods! And for Transcendents, cultivating was something more important than reading. Spending an hour or two every day reading through the books would be considered quite good. It would only require a few tens of years.

And that was too long.

Most Transcendents would never finish the books depicting the lives of the Demigods.

As for books regarding Saint and Sky realm Transcendents, their number was even greater. Thus, there would be a huge amount of books. Xue Ying would only dare to say he would finish reading all the books regarding Demigods.

"Fire Knight Upper Official Mei Jun?" Xue Ying started reading on the first thick gold-leaf book he took.

\*\*\*\*\*

Ever since then, Xue Ying would spend half of his time reading through the books at the Summer Pavilion. And when he cultivated, he would remain in his own mansion instead of entering the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World! Faction Head Si Kong Yang said that he was currently wasting the resources of Xia Clan,

and thus, he decided to not use them at all then! Pride was still something in his bones.

In the blink of an eye, three months passed.

“Formidable, formidable.” Xue Ying drank down the wine from the flask as he sat cross-legged on the floor reading through the books. When he read to the point of excitement, he would shout out uncontrollably, “We should spend our life living as joyful as this!”

*Da! Da! Da!*

Suddenly, loud footsteps could be heard. Xue Ying turned around in shock. The Summer Pavilion would usually not have many Transcendents visiting, and even if they came, few would walk with such a clear footstep sound.

Xue Ying looked towards the source of the sound.

A bald-headed, thin old man wearing slippers walked towards him slowly. That pair of slippers he was wearing revealed all his toes.

“Vice Faction Head Chao Qing.” Xue Ying immediately stood up. He was extremely respectful to ancestor Chao Qing. The reason why he could enter the list of Substitute Elders was because of ancestor Chao Qing’s recommendation.

“Sit, this brat, you don’t have to be so formal.” Chao Qing walked over before sitting down cross-legged. Sniffing with his nose, he looked at the wine flask Xue Ying was holding before asking, “Still have wine?”

“Yes.” Xue Ying understood that and immediately took out another flask of wine which he gave Chao Qing.

Receiving it, Chao Qing tilted his head back and drank two mouthfuls with the sound of ‘*gu gu*’. His eyes brightened, “The wine is quite good and is strong enough. Brat, you surely know how to enjoy life. I heard that you no longer enter the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World anymore, so I thought you had not recovered after the scolding given by Si Kong Yang. Now that I look at you, reading these books until you are shaking your head... seems like your mood is quite good.”

“Even if my mood is good, a day will pass. Even if my mood isn’t good, a day will similarly pass. Of course, I’ll rather pass the day with such a good mood

everyday.” Xue Ying laughed.

“You’re really open-minded.” Chao Qing nodded, “Do you know the reason why I came today?”

Xue Ying stared, before replying awkwardly, “I know. You are here because of the fact that I destroyed my own path towards the True Meaning of Water and Fire.”

“Wrong!” Chao Qing shook his head.

Xue Ying was dumbfounded.

It was not because of that? Looking at ancestor Chao Qing, he had long prepared himself to be reprimanded again.

“It’s because you did not go to the Scarlet Cloud Mountain!” Chao Qing shouted, “Do you think you are foolish or not? Even though you are ranked number nine, don’t you find it wasteful if you do not eat those rare fruits and drink those rare spiritual liquids? You must know, that year, this old man had tried thinking ways in letting you get enlisted onto the list of Substitute Elders. If you don’t eat, then doesn’t that mean I’ve wasted my efforts? This old face of mine is still worth those spiritual liquids and fruits!”

“Uh...” Xue Ying did not know how to reply.

Faction Head Si Kong Yang had said that he was wasting resources, yet Chao Qing was saying that if he was not eating, then he would be wasting his energy.

“Vice Faction Head.” Xue Ying thought through his question before asking, “Are you not angry?”

“What is there to be angry with.” Chao Qing said with his dry and deflated mouth, before it tilted to the side in a smile, “If it was 300 years ago, I would certainly have become extremely angry. But right now, as I’m getting close to death, I’ve always felt that... on the road of cultivation, why should one make himself feel so tired. He should just cultivate happily. If given a chance, I’d certainly cultivate with more impunity.”

Xue Ying could feel the free and easiness of ancestor Chao Qing.

“What do you think?” Chao Qing asked curiously, “Aren’t you afraid that you

might end up in a dead-end if you continued down this path?”

Many a times, there were Transcendents who messed up their cultivation. Comprehending bits and pieces from all over the place, before finally, reaching a stage where they could not fuse them together, thus ending in despondence.

“Frightened.”

Xue Ying laughed, “But I’ve thought through it carefully. Firstly, I think that my dream of chasing after the perfection in my spear techniques isn’t wrong! I love my spear techniques a lot. Secondly, by fusing water, fire and wind together, my improvement is extremely quick. I believe that within 30 years, I’ll be able to reach Realm of Myriad Existences level three! And in the future, if I find that this is really a dead-end, I estimate that I’ll only have wasted between 100 to 200 years of time. By then, even if I break my head, I still have time to repeat once again.”

“Right. It’s great that you have this state of mind. What’s the big deal about it? You’ll merely waste 100 to 200 years only!” Chao Qing laughed.

Profound Mystery of Water and Fire were close to reaching the third level.

The moment he reached the third level, with just the Profound Mysteries of water or fire used in assimilating his body’s Transcendent Qi, he would have certainty of stepping into the Saint realm. Xue Ying was someone who attained the second level of Myriad Existences in Profound Mystery of Fire during the Battle of Life and Death. This sort of innate talent was indeed frightening, and becoming a Saint was just like drinking water – that easy.

Of course—

Saint realm was not something huge to the Xia Clan. It was the Demigod realm Transcendents who were the true overlord existences.

“Initially, I was worried for you. But now that I see it, there isn’t anything for me to be worried out.” Chao Qing finished the wine before standing, “I can feel the confidence in you! On this path of Transcendents, confidence is something very important. Only with a heart full of confidence... can you overcome all obstacles on this road. If one did not have any self-confidence, then how great can he ever be?”

“I hope that you can fuse a new True Meaning with this Profound Meaning of Water, Fire and Wind of yours.” Chao Qing sighed, “Hopefully, it’ll be something that this old man can see before I shut my eyes for the last time.”

Xue Ying was stunned.

That’s right, Chao Qing’s life was close to an end.

“I, Dong Bo Xue Ying, will try my best,” Xue Ying said.

“Good good good, you are still young, and still have many hopes and dreams.” Chao Qing laughed, before turning around and left, “Remember to go to the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World and finish those treasures that you can eat and drink. If you don’t eat them, it’ll be such a waste.”

“Yes,” Xue Ying respectfully answered.

Chao Qing’s figure had long disappeared at the distant corner.

---

## Book 6: Chapter 9 – Time

---

In the blink of an eye, another year passed.

On this particular day, Xue Ying was still reading through the books. The more he read, the more he came to love reading these books.

This was because every single Demigod was a legend. Some of their experiences were extremely mysterious, and were able to broaden Xue Ying's general knowledge. He understood more of the Deities and the Dark Abyss.

"... On this day, as Palace Head He Wen was contemplating through the models of spells, a Deity World projection suddenly descended. This was the very first Deity who came from the Xia Clan – ancestor Emperor Yun Hai, and also an ancestor of the Sea Deity Palace." Xue Ying read through the books about this Demigod.

"Palace Head He Wen respectfully greeted! *'Being able to project down into the mortal world shows that Emperor Yun Hai's had reached an even more profound level of Deity.'*"

"Emperor Yun Hai sent down three top grade secret techniques but Palace Head He Wen requested guidance from Emperor Yun Hai."

"Emperor Yun Hai said... *'There is no helpful guidance if you want to become a Deity. That time, I shared my cultivational experiences with a good friend of mine who just became a Deity. Who would have thought that he would run amok, causing the True Deity Heart to shatter and die on the spot. I felt regret after that. Ever since, I have realised that cultivation is a private matter. During the beginning periods, there might be the possibility of giving some pointers. However, the further one goes, the less one should be given guidance. That was because every powerful Transcendent or Deity would have their own path to walk. If I were to purposefully point the way ahead, it would only make the cultivator feel at a loss in what to do.'*"

"*'The more you want my guidance, the more I can only say... ask your heart! The more determined your beliefs are, the more you persist in wanting to walk*

*down this path, then just walk. Maybe this road of yours might not lead to a great accomplishment, but at the very least, if you were to become a Deity, as long as you walk down on your firm road, you will not run amok and cause your True Deity Heart to shatter.’”*

*“‘As for the details of cultivation, I’ll not say anything. The more I say, the more I might mislead you.’”*

As Xue Ying read through this passage of words, he was enlightened.

He finally found it!

The content he desired the most had been found by him!

*‘Emperor Yun Hai is an ancestor who became a Deity. Furthermore, he was able to project himself down to this world, showing that he must be a powerful Deity! I believe that the words he said must have some reasoning behind.’* Xue Ying was extremely excited.

During this past year or so...

Xue Ying read through many of the books. From them, he understood more about the discussion on one’s cultivation path by the Xia Clan’s ancestors.

There were a few ancestors who thought that cultivation should be based on one’s heart! Even if one met an obstacle, one should experience it themselves. Some of the heaven-shaking Demigods and Deities written about in history all walked down this path.

As for the majority of the ancestors, they thought that cultivation should be set down a certain direction. Every step one took, one would comprehend more and improve in one’s combat ability. This would be more efficient. A huge amount of Demigods did it this way, and many Deities had tried this method as well.

The latter method was more efficient.

And it would allow the Xia Clan to have more Demigods! And that was what the elders of Xia Clan taught the other Transcendents.

But—

The true heaven-shaking Transcendents would follow their own heart, for



instance – ‘Qiu Chi Bai’.

Qiu Chi Bai had cultivated the original Profound Mystery of Wind in Myriad Existences in the beginning, before grasping hold of the ‘True Meaning of Void Cleavage’. In the future, he might become the number one Transcendent under the heavens! Thus, this kind of cultivation based on one’s head... would see some famous heaven-shaking characters emerging out. For instance, the strongest Demigod in the recent history – the Demigod ‘Purgatory Knight’ jie Li was someone who cultivated based on his heart.

This kind of Demigod could fight against a group of Demigods all alone!

.....

*‘What Emperor Yun Hai said is right. Cultivation should be something private.’*

*‘It should not be forced nor guided.’*

Xue Ying’s heart became firm.

With the kind of combat power that Emperor Yun Hai had, he was not even willing to guide any Demigods in fear of misleading them. Even though Si Kong Yang might be very powerful, compared to the Emperor Yun Hai who could project himself downwards, Si Kong Yang was much weaker.

If Emperor Yun Hai was in front of him right now, he would certainly be encouraging him to continue down and follow his heart.

\*\*\*\*\*

In the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World.

Recently, a huge matter occurred. The oldest Situ Hong had attained the third level in Myriad Existences! He was instantly promoted to the second position. Comparing his potential, he had an even greater hope of comprehending a True Meaning than Dou Ru Ru had!

Third level of Realms in Myriad Existences – as long as he had another breakthrough, he would be able to grasp hold of a True Meaning.

*“Hua hua.”*

Two distant figures flew across, side-by-side.

One figure was male, while the other was female. The male was relatively tall and handsome while the female was full of charm.

In the distant peak of a mountain...

Xue Ying, Yu Feng, Pu Yong Bo and Zhang Peng were eating and drinking together.

“Looking at how delighted that Situ Hong is makes me feel unhappy.” Pu Yang Bo laughed, “Amongst the nine of us, he is the one filled with most hypocrisy and inferiority. Who would have thought that he actually became the first amongst us to reach the third level in Realms of Myriad Existences.”

“Combat power has no relation with the character of a person.” Yu Feng laughed.

“Ai.” Zhang Peng sighed, “Why is Disciple Sister Zhuo attracted to him?”

“Disciple Brother Zhang Peng, are you also thinking about Disciple Sister Zhuo Yi?” Xue Ying laughed as he joked.

The four of them had close relations.

Actually, Pu Yang Bo and Yu Feng had some confrontation a long time ago with Situ Hong. Situ Hong looked down upon those with weaker combat power, and previously, he was looking down on Pu Yang Bo and the rest. Ever since Xue Ying destroyed his own path towards the True Meaning of Water and Fire, Situ Hong had long ago broke off his relationship with Xue Ying.

“Yeah. But it’s a pity that Disciple Sister Zhuo Yi was never attracted to me.” Zhang Peng felt helpless.

“Who asked your combat power to be so weak. From what I see, as long as your Profound Mystery of Space reaches the third level in Myriad Existences, Disciple Sister Zhuo Yi would look at you differently.” Yu Feng laughed.

“What good is that kind of woman.” Pu Yang Bo held some disdain, “I despise them!”

“I would still like them, but what a pity. She is tightly held by that Situ Hong.” Zhang Peng shook his head.

“Relax,” Xue Ying said. “Disciple Sister Zhuo Yi’s criteria are extremely high.

Right now, she is closer with Situ Hong. But I dare say... if Situ Hong really wishes to succeed in chasing after her, he will have to grasp hold of a True Meaning.”

In the past, after he was considered as someone destroying his own future, Disciple Sister Zhuo Yi immediately created a distance with him which was extremely straightforward! How can this kind of woman be easily chased after.

The distant Situ Hong and Zhuo Yi were chatting happily, and Situ Hong turned his head deliberately towards Xue Ying to ridicule him.

“Little clown.” Xue Ying could not care less about him. He had never liked Zhuo Yi before in the past. Right now, when Situ Hong and Zhuo Yi became closer, he of course did not mind.

.....

The days of cultivation were extremely peaceful. Six years had passed ever since Xue Ying was dropped to the ninth position. Even though Xue Ying’s combat power became deeper and more powerful, his position was still on the ninth.

This year, the Tranquil Sun Province had actually produced two new Transcendents.

One was a young man of 30 years, a Transcendent called ‘Yuan Qing’.

And the other was actually Yu Jing Qiu!

What made the entire Xia Clan’s Transcendents exclaimed was that... a single province produced two Transcendents within the same year! That was something really rare.

---

## Book 6: Chapter 10 – Dong Bo Xue Ying and Yu Jing Qiu

---

Night, In the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World, Soaring Cloud Peak.

A black-robed Xue Ying was currently displaying his spear techniques. He loved practicing his spear here at the Soaring Cloud Peak. Looking at the boundless mountain ranges opened up his entire heart. Ever since he disregarded everything else, there would be no use in having anyone persuading him. Thus, the elders of Xia Clan did not suppress him any further. After all, he was currently last in the rankings. Should they want to suppress him any further... at the worst, he would just be chased out of the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World.

Since ancient times, very few Substitute Elders had been chased out of the list. At the very least, they had to respect old man Chao Qing. The resources provided to the person ranked first from the bottom... were comparably the most meager, thus the elders of Xia Capital would not have that huge of a heartache.

After all, when Chao Qing died, some of the huge amount of resources he had would be given to the sect he belonged to, some to the junior disciples, and some to the Infernal Palace.

Because of Chao Qing's potential to contribute to the Xia Clan in the future, they would not put too much pressure on Xue Ying as a result!

Thus, without these obstacles, Xue Ying passed his days carefree and leisurely. If he did not want to practice his spear, he would go to the Summer Pavilion to read or accompany some of his good friends in drinking. And when he had an enlightenment moment, he would rush to the Soaring Cloud Peak to continue his practice in spear. As a result... the improvement of his spear techniques were relatively fast!

*"Hong hong hong~~~"*

One could only see the blurred figure of Xue Ying, with fierce gales of wind setting off around him.

His spear led to waves of heavy pressurised air, causing the surrounding scenery to become blurred, like an unceasing rush of thunder.

*Hou~*

Many illusions of Flood Dragons rushed upwards to the void.

Each newly formed illusion of a Flood Dragon was bigger than the previous one, until the very sixth illusion of a Flood Dragon that was about three meters long; these dragons flew across the void of many kilometers before bombarding a mountain peak. *Boom*. Many mountain rocks fell from it.

This power would amaze and stun any other Transcendent.

After all, this forceful impact was caused by mere air waves produced by the spear, yet its power was already so unimaginable. Even the weaker early stage Saint realm Transcendents would be unable to block such a frightening spear technique!

Suddenly—

Xue Ying stopped. The surrounding area became quiet. The entire peak of the Soaring Cloud Peak became a place of silence.

Holding onto the spear with both his hands, Xue Ying's expression was full of joy. Two arms appeared from beneath his shoulders out of thin air, and they were similarly holding onto a black spear. Following that, another two arms appeared holding to yet another black spear.

Six arms! All of them wore the same robe and held the same black spear.

*'Water and Fire forming the bones while the wind forming the shape.'*

*'Finally I've crafted this illusion. After half a year of working toward perfecting it, I might be able to use it for battle.'* Xue Ying was proud of himself, *'Illusions and reality engendering each other. This is what I call a good spear technique.'*

With the perfect fusion of Profound Mysteries of Water, Fire and Wind...

This led Xue Ying to realise even more functions — for instance, illusions! He felt that this was of a great help to his spear techniques. Thus, he immediately pondered and perfected his technique to the current stage. This illusion of arms and spears was becoming more and more like reality.

*‘During the life and death battle, when I fought against the enemy, if I suddenly had six arms and three spears, I bet the enemy would have been so shocked by it.’* Xue Ying was quite delighted. Even though the illusions were fake, he could use them to confuse his enemy, preventing them from knowing which spear to block. As such, the threat brought by his spear technique would greatly increase.

Illusions were actually extremely frightening.

When the enemies were unable to discern the truth from the fake, if they blocked the wrong attack, they would certainly lose their lives! Furthermore, wanting to block off three spears with just a single brain... would be ten times more difficult than blocking a single spear!

Furthermore, this was just his current status. Xue Ying’s time spent in cultivation was still relatively short, ‘Water, Fire and Wind’ – these three big Profound Mysteries fused together perfectly would have even more frightening abilities as his comprehension towards them grew deeper...

*‘Mn.’* Xue Ying looked up at the sky, *‘The sky is brightening. Today is the day we receive Mage Yu Jing Qiu. Who would have thought that the Mage Yu Jing Qiu of that time... would become a Transcendent in such a short period of time.’*

A mage becoming a Transcendent would originally be slower than a Knight becoming a Transcendent. Amongst the many mages, Yu Jing Qiu could be considered as quite formidable already.

*Sou!*

Xue Ying turned into streamer as he broke through the skies.

\*\*\*\*\*

The place where they received Mage Yu Jing Qiu was still the same old place within the Xia Capital – at Eternal Wind Knight Qiu Chi Bai’s mansion. Qiu Chi Bai was after all, the undisputable leader amongst the Tranquil Sun Province’s Transcendents.

During that afternoon, Xue Ying arrived slightly ahead of time.

“Xue Ying, you came?”

“Brother Xue Ying, please sit.”

Ten years had passed. All of these Transcendents had become really close to each other. Xue Ying greeted them with a smile. Even though he was ranked the last in the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World, the business regarding Substitute Elders was something kept a secret. In the outer world, many Transcendents would still hold Xue Ying in admiration. His name was great, and he held the title of a Transcendent genius.

Xue Ying sat down cross-legged as he smiled towards a young, delicate-looking man beside him, “Yuan Qing, why did you come so early? I thought that you might cultivate first at your own mansion before rushing here at the last moment.”

“Big brother Xue Ying, victory or defeat doesn’t matter during the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death as long as I’ve tried my best. Furthermore, I’m not rushing my cultivation on this particular day.” Yuan Qing shyly smiled.

“Wa wa wa, looking at how shy this little brother Yuan Qing’s smile is, my heart can’t help but be moved by it,” Dong Yu shouted out.

“Don’t frighten this little brother,” Cheng Ling Shu added.

Xue Ying laughed.

Everyone had a favourable impression towards the new Transcendent Yuan Qing, himself included. This Yuan Qing had a rather shy personality. His outer appearance was quite handsome and pretty, and amongst all the young people he knew... his brother Qing Shi was the most dashing person he had ever seen. Maybe different people had different preferences, but honestly, he swore from the deepest recesses of his heart agreeing that his little brother was indeed the most dashing person ever.

That was what people who knew his brother said. Even Hai Ru Zhen, Zi Che Gu Feng agreed with him after seeing his little brother.

And Yuan Qing had an appearance that could be ranked as top ten amongst the youths he knew of! Furthermore, he was pretty and shy. Though because he had been a prodigy immersed in cultivation, this led him all the way to becoming a Transcendent at the young age of 30!

One must know that Xue Ying had only become a Transcendent at 28 years. Without Xue Ying, this Yuan Qing would be the youngest Transcendent in the past 1000 years.

“Sister Jing Qiu came as well.” At the moment when everyone was chatting happily, Peng Shan suddenly announced.

Xue Ying and the rest turned towards her.

Only to see a beautiful green-robed female mage walk in under the lead of a guard.

Xue Ying could not help but brighten up as he saw her. Even Peng Shan, Yuan Qing, Qiu Chi Bai and the rest were startled.

So beautiful!

Seeing any beautiful things on earth, one could not help but praise them. Right now, Yu Jing Qiu was walking in towards them... making Xue Ying and the others feel awe. Even though Xue Ying had seen Yu Jing Qiu previously, he could not help but feel shock right now.

One must know, female mages were originally valued highly because of their character.

Legend ranking mages would have a lifespan of 200 years. When they were at 100 years of age, it would be equivalent to a mortal's 50 years of age! Regardless of how well female mages maintained themselves, they would still exude the image of a middle-aged woman. Even when they became a Transcendent... and underwent a physical rebirth, it would still be hard for them have the look of a young teenage girl.

But Yu Jing Qiu was different!

She became a Meteor ranker at a very young age, and then a Transcendent similarly at a young age. This kind of youth was enough to defeat many other female Transcendents. Furthermore, she underwent a physical rebirth when she became a Transcendent! If one was an absolute beauty before becoming a Transcendent, her base and fundamental look would be good. Thus, when she became a Transcendent... she would become a soul-moving beauty then! Even looking at her represented some sort of enjoyment! Right now, Yu Jing Qiu had



the hopes of becoming the top beauty compared to all the other female Transcendents who were pretty and had good temperaments in the entire Xia Clan.

Yu Jing Qiu entered the hall, sweeping her gaze across the room, before landing it upon Xue Ying. There was a smile inherent at the edge of her mouth.

*‘Finally... I’ve become a Transcendent too. I can finally stand by your side.’*

---

## Book 6: Chapter 11 – True Meaning of Light and Darkness

---

How keen was a Transcendent's senses? As a result, everyone could immediately affirm that right now, the mage Jing Qiu was looking directly at Xue Ying!

Xue Ying had a similar feeling when their eyes met.

Those memories...

Xue Ying felt his own heart beat faster.

"Sister Jing Qiu is staring at brother Xue Ying, wa, they are both from the Azure River County. Ze ze ze... it seems like there's some story behind their relationship." Peng Shan laughed as he teased.

"I also think that there's some story. Looking at the expression in sister Jing Qiu's eyes as she looks at little brother Xue Ying, *wu wu*... I was so moved that my tears are going to drop." Cheng Ling Shu added.

Xue Ying was teased to the point where he felt ashamed.

Yu Jing Qiu smiled, "Dong Bo Xue Ying saved me in the past."

"Hero saving the damsel in distress?" Peng Shan's eyes widened.

"There actually is some story behind them." Qiu Chi Bai shook his head.

"Jing Qiu, please take a seat first." Hai Ru Zhen said.

"Yes, teacher." Yu Jing Qiu replied as she obediently sat by the side.

Peng Shan shouted, "Brother Xue Ying, why aren't you speaking? Quickly tell us, what happened in the past, and how did the hero save the damsel in distress?"

"I once coincidentally picked up the same Black Iron mission as mage Yu Jing Qiu," Xue Ying said. "During the mission, we met some danger and trouble. In the end, only mage Yu Jing Qiu and I survived. It's only luck that I was able to

save mage Jing Qiu. Actually, since we were comrades taking the same mission, helping each other should be naturally something done. That's all."

"Only the two of you survived?" Light could be seen emitting from Cheng Ling Shu's eyes, "That sounds so romantic. Then what happened next? The hero saving the damsel in distress? Did the damsel repay the debt with her body?"

"What nonsense are you saying." Peng Shan stared, "Sister Jing Qiu isn't that sort of girl, right? It should be that they made a promise in their heart and waited until the moment is ripe, isn't that right, sister Jing Qiu, brother Xue Ying?"

The other Transcendents were fanning the flames.

"Alright, alright, don't tease my student anymore," Hai Ru Zhen said. "Ever since that mission, Jing Qiu has been at my Eternal Wind Academy. Later on, she heard that brother Xue Ying fell into the Black-Wind Abyss."

Everyone was just joking around.

After having some fun, the topic changed.

They ate and drank while chatting casually and soon the topic reached the upcoming Transcendent Battle of Life and Death. After all, regardless of whether it was Yuan Qing or Yu Jing Qiu, they would be having their Transcendent Battle of Life and Death soon.

"Little brother Yuan Qing, you stepped into the realm of Transcendent at such a young age, though you must set Xue Ying as your target. He has, after all, won nine matches." Cheng Ling Shu said, "I don't expect too much, just win at least six matches."

"Sister Ling Shu, it seems that ever since you've won a huge amount of money when wagering on brother Xue Ying during his battle of Life and Death, you want to continue winning again." Peng Shan laughed, "But Yuan Qing does not have any primordial bloodline, and winning six rounds will not be an easy task."

"Precisely because it isn't easy, the payout will be greater," Cheng Ling Shu replied.

"I knew it. The more you gamble, the more you will get lost into it." Zi Che Gu

Feng shook his head.

“You are just being envious and jealous of me. I’ll not wager too much this time, just 50 kilogrammes of Origin Stones. That time during little brother Xue Ying’s match, I actually won enough... for me to gamble a few times.” Cheng Ling Shu was delightedly boasting, “And if I win again, ze ze ze.” Cheng Ling Shu was a female mage, thus she was extremely intelligent. Even if she was to gamble, she would still have great control of herself.

Usually, it was the Transcendent knights who lost the most in the gambling house of Xia Capital.

“Little sister Jing Qiu, how many matches do you feel you can win?” Cheng Ling Shu asked.

Jing Qiu shook her head before smiling, “I don’t have any confidence. Who knows, I might not even win a single match.”

“You still have another year of time to prepare.” Qiu Chi Bai said, “During this year of time, you might even make some breakthrough. Thus, winning five or six matches might be possible. Like Xue Ying, he was able to have a breakthrough during the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, achieving the second level of comprehension in the Realms of Myriad Existences. Oh yes, Xue Ying, that time, you were at the second level in Realms of Myriad Existences, you should already be at the third level right now.”

“Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire are both at the third level.” Xue Ying nodded.

“I’ve estimated as much. You had just become a Transcendent and yet, you comprehended the second level in Realms of Myriad Existences. According to your talents, that should be as such.” Qiu Chi Bai nodded, “Water and Fire, these two Profound Mysteries are able to complement and build on each other. Using these two Profound Mysteries in assimilating your Transcendent Qi, I guess you will be able to step into the realm of Saint soon.”

“Don’t say that, all right! There’s still a huge group of us currently at the Sky realm!” Dong Yu helplessly replied.

“Really makes the others feel hopeless. For the sake of comprehending the

second level in Myriad Existences, I've spent 160 years. Even today, I have not been able to step into the third level of Myriad Existences." Zong Tu sighed.

"A genius is indeed a genius."

They were all sighing.

Indeed, usually, those who recently had become a Transcendent might only have a comprehension of being One with the World and not even reach the first level in Realms of Myriad Existences. Though there were a portion of them who reached the first level in Realms of Myriad Existences!

Wanting to reach the second level... was quite difficult. Some might spend up to 100 years.

As for the third level, it was even more difficult, and spending up to 600 years was considered ordinary.

During that period of time, their Transcendent Qi would have a hope of breakthrough after it had been assimilated. However, if it was just an ordinary third level of Profound Mystery, the time taken to assimilate the Transcendent Qi would be extremely long, with some dying before even breaking through. As for Xue Ying, he had water and fire, these two Profound Mysteries complementing each other in assimilating his Transcendent Qi, allowing the efficiency to increase by ten times. At the very least, he would become a Saint in 20-30 years.

However, everyone could not really compare themselves with him! After all, Xue Ying had already reached the second level in Realms of Myriad Existences during the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, so how could they compare?

"Saint realm?" Xue Ying was extremely calm.

After spending a long period of time at the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World, and having been preached at by Gong Yu and Si Kong Yang, these two Demigods, he had long felt that becoming a Saint realm meant nothing at all.

.....

Two months later.

At the Infernal Palace, Hall of Life and Death.

An extremely bustling Transcendent Battle of Life and Death was currently being held here. The main character was a young and new Transcendent called Yuan Qing. He was currently too young, and was of similar age with Xue Ying during that previous battle. Thus, many Transcendents had been attracted to watch, with even Demigods attending! As for the mortals of Xia Capital, there were mountains and seas of them, filling the entire Hall of Life and Death.

“Beautiful.”

Qiu Chi Bai, Peng Shan, Xue Ying, Yu Jing Qiu, Hai Ru Zhen and the other Tranquil Sun Province Transcendents were seated together. They viewed the match from the eastern side.

Yuan Qing’s combat power was indeed amazing!

“Terrific.” Qiu Chi Bai praised.

As Xue Ying looked downwards, he had an understanding in his heart, *‘It seems like the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World is going to have another disciple.’*

Yuan Qing actually fused the Profound Mysteries of Light and Darkness Together. Even though it was rusty and was not so perfect as what he did that year with his ‘Water and Fire Twin Dragon Attack’, it was without question that he had indeed started fusing them together.

*‘The True Meaning of Light and Darkness is a grade three True Meaning, and of a higher grade as compared to my True Meaning of Water and Fire.’* Xue Ying smiled, *‘But it’s definitely a good thing that the Scarlet Cloud Mountain has another disciple like Yuan Qing.’*

‘Uh...’

Xue Ying suddenly recognised a problem.

If Yuan Qing entered the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World, did that not mean that he would be ranked tenth?

*‘Whatever. I’m still the first from the bottom.’* Xue Ying mocked at himself, and watched Yuan Qing’s battle below with a smile.

---

## Book 6: Chapter 12 – Absolutely Different Indeed

---

The power of the Profound Mysteries of Light and Darkness was very frightening. Even though it was just a very crude start in fusing them together... it was enough to let Yuan Qing win six matches of the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death!

Even though he was not as bright a star as Xue Ying from that year, under the condition of not having any primordial bloodlines, he could still win six matches at such a young age. Indeed, it was something amazing and many Transcendents praised him.

“It seems the Tranquil Sun Province has had an eruption of talents.”

“That’s right. Not to mention the Eternal Wind Knight, as he is the first in the Saint rankings! Even Dong Bo Xue Ying from the previous Transcendent Life and Death Battle has shown himself to be extremely talented. This Yuan Qing is someone quite capable too.”

“Does everyone realise this fact about the Tranquil Sun Province? The youngest three Transcendents in the past 1000 years are Dong Bo Xue Ying, Yuan Qing and Qiu Chi Bai?”

“That’s right!”

“As they all hail from the same province, it seem that at this time, it’s the Tranquil Sun Province’s turn to explode.”

The Transcendents were talking amongst each other, treating this information as a form of entertainment.

After all, the entire Xia Clan was still quite united as one. The competition between the six big Transcendent Organisations was also relatively peaceful.

“Little brother Yuan Qing, you’re too fierce and formidable, come, let’s this sister give you a kiss!” Cheng Ling Shu was so excited that she hugged Yuan Qing, causing him to dodge and hide behind Peng Shan.

Peng Shan looked at her shyly, “Sister Ling Shu, come, kiss here.”

“Looking at you and your old face made me lose all my desire.” Cheng Ling Shu tilted her mouth, though she smiled while looking at Yuan Qing, “Little brother Yuan Qing, you and Xue Ying are my lucky stars.”

“How much did you win during these two Transcendent Battles of Life and Death?” Qiu Chi Bai smiled.

Xue Ying and the others were similarly curious.

Cheng Ling Shu’s squinted, showing the delight she had, “Not much not much, adding up the two battles, I’ve won about 500 kilograms of Origin Stones, haha, hahaha...” Finishing that, she could not help but laugh.

The others by her side felt envious.

Five hundred kilograms of Origin Stones.

That time when Xue Ying won nine matches, he earned a mere 2500 kilograms of Origin Stones.

But even if they were envious, it was useless. Gambling... was something these Transcendents avoided as there had been many cases of examples of people falling into the trap!

\*\*\*\*\*

Everything went according to his expectations, during the second day, in the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World.

“Our Scarlet Cloud Mountain will have a new Transcendent from today onwards. He is called Yuan Qing.” Si Kong Yang stood there, his unseen pressure suppressing the rest, just like the brightest sun during afternoon, making others feel awe, “Yuan Qing will be the youngest disciple brother of yours. Hopefully, you will be able to treasure this friendship between everyone. Of course, what I hope for more is for one or two Demigods to be awakened amongst you all.”

“I’ve regarded highly upon Dong Bo Xue Ying in the past.”

Si Kong Yang swept his gaze.

Within the group of Sky realm Transcendents, Xue Ying was standing at the corner, being as low-key as ever. He had been acting in this fashion for a while



and was used to it. Ever since the Faction Head Si Kong Yang and the others had been disappointed in him, Xue Ying did not care less about performing any longer. That was because he knew that even if he performed splendidly — he would forever be scolded and ranked the first from the bottom!

As such, he had long stopped caring about his own performances.

“Mn?” Yuan Qing stole a look at Xue Ying who was standing by the side. When he was selected to be a Substitute Elder, he was actually quite excited. Seeing Xue Ying made him even more joyful. After all, even though the period of time they were acquainted with each other was short, their personalities matched well together.

“However, Dong Bo Xue Ying relied on his own high innate talent, and decided to randomly cultivate,” Si Kong Yang coldly said. “Originally, his path towards the True Meaning of Water and Fire was all good, yet he destroyed it himself! Even until today, he is not repenting his actions.”

Everyone was quiet.

Hearing that, Zhuo Yi gave Xue Ying a look from the corner of her eyes. Initially, she was moved by Xue Ying, thinking that he was young and had an extraordinary innate talent with a certainty of becoming a Demigod. Even though he was not that handsome, it was something bearable. The more she looked at him, the more she got used to his appearance. After all, youth was always a weapon! Situ Hong, Zhang Peng and the others gave off a feeling of being middle-aged men, while Xue Ying appeared extremely young.

It was a pity that he destroyed his own future and had no combat power. Thus, everything appealing about him disappeared.

The more Situ Hong heard these words, the happier he got inwardly. He loved hearing Xue Ying being scolding by Faction Head Si Kong Yang.

The person who was most calm amongst the many scolding words was Xue Ying. After all, six years had passed, and today, his beliefs had long become firm. He understood in his heart... Faction Head Si Kong Yang was still reprimanding even today was because he wished Xue Ying would repent and listen to his advice about repeating all Xue Ying’s training all over again. After all, Xue Ying was still young and had the time to restart from scratch.

“Yuan Qing, your innate talent is high, though you are still weaker than Dong Bo Xue Ying.” Si Kong Yang said indifferently, “Thus, don’t be so presumptuous in doing things your own way and destroying your own future.”

“Yes,” Yuan Qing answered.

Right now, his mind was filled with fog — he had no idea what had happened before! Why would Xue Ying destroy his path of True Meaning of Water and Fire? He had no understanding of what was happening.

Yet with Si Kong Yang and his immense aura and overbearing attitude, Yuan Qing did not dare to ask more and could only reply with a ‘yes’.

.....

A moment later, when Si Kong Yang left, Gong Yu said a few sentences before leaving as well.

Yuan Qing was the newest here, and thus, he would be given the center position – ranked fifth. Xue Ying naturally reached the new lowest position number – the tenth position!

This group of disciple brothers and sisters also introduced themselves briefly so as to break the ice between them.

“I am called Situ Hong, the oldest amongst this group of disciples. You can just call me disciple brother Situ.” Situ Hong was the first to stand out with a smile as if he was a good senior.

The others all briefly said a few words.

“Yuan Qing, I’ll be leaving first.” Xue Ying gave a pat on his shoulder, before flying through the skies. He could not care less in staying any longer and was going to continue reading his books!

“Mn.” Yuan Qing nodded. Previously, he had been drinking and eating supper with the Transcendents from the Tranquil Sun Province. Thus, in this Scarlet Cloud Mountain, he was the closest with Xue Ying.

“Disciple brother Yuan Qing, let me tell you.” Situ Hong walked over and said softly, “You should keep your distance with this Dong Bo Xue Ying.”

“Keep my distance?” Yuan Qing was stunned.

Situ Hong explained, "You see how arrogant and foolish he is? Did you not hear what the Faction Head Si Kong said previously? He was originally walking down the path of the True Meaning of Water and Fire... and many people regarded him highly. But guess what? He decided to comprehend another Profound Mystery of Wind, fusing the three Profound Mysteries of Wind, Fire and Water together, throwing it into chaos, thus destroying his own cultivation path."

"Ah." Yuan Qing was shocked, he had not known of this beforehand, "Disciple brother Xue Ying dared to do that?"

"That's why he is the most arrogant and foolish person!" Situ Hong jeered, "Even after the Faction Head reprimanded him so many times, he still continues with his wayward ways. Hmph, hmph, Right now, he is still young and has the time to restart all over again... wait until the future when his combat power becomes small and weak, he will get bullied easily, and get killed by some Transcendent native. That time, he will understand what is called regret."

"Situ Hong, enough with your cursing of others behind their back." Pu Yang Bo sneered from the side.

"I'm just telling disciple brother Yuan Qing some of the matters that happened." Situ Hong coldly glanced at Pu Yang Bo.

Yuan Qing watched all of this quietly.

Arrogant?

No!

Today was the first day he met Si Kong Yang. Standing in front of him, that pressure was really extremely powerful, and yet, disciple brother Xue Ying dared to go against the Faction Head Si Kong Yang. Furthermore, even after such a long period of time... he still looked after me! That was not an easy task that can be accomplished just by being arrogant. Instead, it would require an absolute firm determination. Usually, Transcendents would have no courage in going against this kind of suppression.

Yuan Qing looked towards the Situ Hong by his side. He understood that disciple brother Xue Ying and this disciple brother Situ Hong were two absolutely different people!

---

## Book 6: Chapter 13 – A Clan Protection Deity Weapon

---

Worse comes to worse, knowing that he would only get chased out of the Scarlet Cloud Mountain, he had set his heart to prepare for the worst case scenario. Xue Ying would be the most carefree disciple brother amongst them. He would frequently be within the Summer Pavilion drinking and reading those books by himself... as if he was back in the past experiencing all the different stories related to the past eras of the Xia Clan. There were many milestones within the Xia Clan history; large scale demon invasions; clans facing disasters; the Beast Clan's slaughtering...

Compared to some of the disasters that occurred in the past, the current era was relatively peaceful.

Furthermore, as time passes, the details of history for the Xia Clan became deeper and deeper.

*'Compared to some of the heroes in the past, I, Dong Bo Xue Ying, am still extremely green.'* The more Xue Ying read, the more he realised just how shallow his knowledge really was. Even though not all the heroes in the past became Deities, that did not mean that they were weak. When they were Demigods... some of them had the combat power to match that of a Deity! Some of them died during the battles with other Clans, and some of them died when fighting against the demons.

If given enough time, some of them might have become Deities in the end if they had not died.

.....

Half a year later, Yu Jing Qiu began her Transcendent Battle of Life and Death.

As for Jing Qiu, she was garbed in green robes and stood there with her green hair let loose emitting out a faint ice-cold aura... preventing others from getting close to her.

"So beautiful."

Many Transcendents were shocked.

The mortals were dumbfounded. Ever since she became a Transcendent, her hair, the luster of her skin, her eyes, and many other areas underwent a transformation. As a result, she became such a soul-stunning beauty! Transcendent mages... as long as they were young and their original looks were good, with the temperament of a Transcendent mage, these women would usually be chased after by many.

*‘Hmph.’* As Zhuo Yi watched the battle. Her heart gave a cold snort, *‘It’s merely a beautiful face, that’s all!’*

And it was not just Zhuo Yi. Many beautiful female Transcendents felt unhappy! That was because they felt a huge threat.

But the majority of the female Transcendents were jealous of her, that’s all.

The battle started.

During the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, Transcendent mages would certainly lose out as they could not use any magic equipment at all. They could only use the most ordinary of staffs.

*‘No wonder beauties are all loved by many. Looking at her battling is an enjoyment itself.’* Xue Ying smiled. He always tried to be indifferent, yet in his inner heart... he had some special feelings towards Yu Jing Qiu ever since that year when he met her the first time at the Azure River County Dragon Mountain Manor.

“Mn?”

“Not good!”

There were five Demigods at the eastern platform viewing the battle. Currently, one of them who wore red robes stood up.

*Hu.*

His figure disappeared from the Hall of Life and Death.

.....

Very quickly, this red-robed Demigod entered a secret space within the Infernal Palace.

A long floating bridge was seen cutting through the void.

On top of the bridge stood three figures. The one leading them was a black-haired old man. Beside him were two powerful Demigods.

“Palace Head.” The red-robed Demigod greeted respectfully.

The black-haired old man nodded, “Brother Xi Yun, you felt that too?”

“I’m in charge of some areas in Infernal Palace, so I’ll definitely be able to feel that vast and powerful ripple.” The red-robed Demigod nodded, “Palace Head, where exactly did such a huge movement come from this time round?”

“That’s right, Palace Head, where did it originate from?” The other two Demigods asked.

This was the most secretive location of the Infernal Palace.

Many secrets of the Xia Clan were hidden within it, with only the Infernal Palace Palace Head being able to control them. That was because the Infernal Palace Palace Head was absolutely loyal to the Xia Clan, and furthermore, many methods left behind by the ancestors of the Xia Clan ensured that for one to become a Palace Head... he would not have any chances of betraying the clan.

“Come with me,” The black-haired old man said.

The four Demigods rapidly followed down the long floating bridge towards the void.

As they went further inwards, there were occasionally some huge and powerful ripples.

And at times, they viewed gigantic human figurines lying in the void below.

“It’s here, in front of us,” The black-haired old man said. Soon, he stopped. A ripple appeared from the void in front of them, before dissipating and revealing a scene behind it.

*Hu~*

It was a world filled with fluttering snow.

Amidst the countless snowflakes, a white-haired old granny walked out. Her hair was entirely silvery-white and was combed very neatly. Her face had a light smile on it as if she was a kind person. It was just that as she walked within the

world of snow, these four Demigods who were watching that scene felt a suffocating oppression.

“I’m finally awake after sleeping for so long.” This white-haired old granny smiled.

“Greetings, Ancestor Snow.” The black-haired old man greeted.

“Ancestor Snow?” The other three Demigods looked confused.

“Unless-”

The three of them knew many secrets, and thus, they could find from their memories the person to match this figure. Immediately, their expressions changed.

This white-haired old granny was the strongest Deity Weapon amongst all of the Xia Capital’s clan protection treasures. Also, the difficulty of controlling it was the hardest. Usually, ordinary Deity weapons... could be controlled by any ordinary Demigod! It was just that this Ancestor Snow represented a clan protection Deity Weapon that no ordinary Demigod could ever utilise, or in other words, no Demigod in this current era could use her.

Ancestor Snow was that clan protection Deity Weapon’s spirit.

For Ancestor Snow to wake up, one of two scenarios could have possibly happened.

First... it was that the clan protection Deity Weapon felt a frightening menace coming that might threaten the existence of the Xia Clan! Thus, the weapon spirit would wake up to alert the rest.

And the second... was that she had met an appropriate master!

“Don’t be so anxious.” The white-haired old woman laughed, “It’s good news, not bad news.”

The black-haired old man and the other three Demigods each heaved a sigh of relief.

“Bring me out first,” The white-haired granny said.

“Ancestor Snow, please.” The black-haired old man immediately led her out of

the secret space.

.....

Following her own senses, the white-haired old woman soon reached the Hall of Life and Death.

The black-haired old man and the other three Demigods stood beside her. At the same time, a ripple in space enveloped them. The Infernal Palace Head was invincible in the Infernal World and acknowledged as the master of Infernal Palace! He could easily separate the space, preventing others from seeing these four Demigods. Of course, they would not be able to see the existence of that white-haired old woman.

“Ancestor Snow, how is it?” The black-haired old man asked.

“I found it.” The white-haired old woman smiled before nodding. Looking down at the battle, she saw Yu Jing Qiu who was currently trying to delay the battle.

“Such a pure soul. Furthermore, she became a Transcendent by borrowing the power of ice to transcend her body and spirit?” The white-haired old woman nodded, “That’s right. It’s her.”

The black-haired old man revealed an expression of joy.

“But right now, she’s still too weak. Wait until she becomes a Demigod. Only then can she reveal the true strength of the clan protection Deity Weapon.” The white-haired old woman said, “Your Xia Clan should groom her well.”

Actually, the clan protection Deity Weapon had many conditions that must be met.

Each of them had their own mystical uses.

For instance, the Infernal Palace was by nature, an extremely important clan protection Deity Weapon. It was a space-related Deity Weapon that controlled the entire Infernal World.

Ancestor Snow represented a Deity Weapon that was extremely difficult to control, and she was also the strongest weapon of all! If a Demigod could utilise its strength, she would have the capability to match against the might of Deities.



“We’ll definitely put our best efforts into grooming her. Tomorrow, we’ll send her to the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World.” The black-haired old man nodded.

“Mn, sending her to the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World is good. But remember to keep it a low key. I don’t want others to realise how special she is.” The white-haired old woman said before asking, “Oh yes, what is she called?”

“Yu Jing Qiu.” The black-haired old man replied. Actually, he was feeling a headache.

He could see that Yu Jing Qiu would barely be able to win the third round of her Transcendent Battle of Life and Death. Of course, as a young female mage, it was considered a good result. But wanting to become a Demigod based on this? Too difficult!

Certainly, he would still groom her.

Because the moment Yu Jing Qiu becomes a Demigod, she would be able to fight against a group of other Demigods.

---